



KILLING GROUNDS OF GODS AND DEVILS

BOOK 1

Black Eyed King

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Killing Grounds of Gods and Devils

(神魔养殖场)

by

Black Eyed King

(黑瞳王)

Synopsis

Su Yu was in a third rate university when the “Sky Holes” appeared, his school fell through the “Sky Hole” and appeared in the middle of a forest that was teeming with terrifying creatures.

Witness a fearsome transformation that originates from his hand...

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: November 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Maxellsg @ [faktranslations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: Cataclysmic Changes Within The School

Su Yu lay listlessly on his desk, through his earphones he could hear the current news being reported from the small radio in the drawer under his desk.

Su Yu had been influenced by his grandfather and if he was bored his greatest love was to listen to the fresh news on the radio.

Teacher Ma was currently animatedly giving a lecture, spittle was flying everywhere as he constantly gestured however no one was really paying close attention to what he said.

This made teacher Ma secretly sigh about how rotten wood cannot be carved.

The time was 2:45pm and this was the first class of the afternoon. The location was AJ metropolis college of technology and trade, a university that was not even third tier and could be considered as either a fourth tier or fifth tier school.

The current class was “Computer system class number two” and there were a total of twenty seven people in the class.

Su Yu changed his sleeping posture, laid down in a more comfortable position as he swept his gaze casually across the class

Zhang Zhong Mou his best friend and table mate was already making light snoring noises, his open mouth was making strange noises and the whites of his eyes could be seen rolling around, this person certainly had many sleeping shortcomings.

In the leftmost column third seat from the front, the goddess of his dreams Ning Yan quietly sat there as she earnestly listened to the lesson.

Ning Yan was the undisputed belle within the computer system class and was the crush and fantasy of most of the guys.

From Su Yu's current position, he could see Ning Yan's snow white nape and jade-like skin, her soft flowing black hair that was filled with unspeakable charm.

Su Yu swallowed his saliva as even his lethargy seemed to lessen.

The female student sitting at the same table as Ning Yan suddenly turned and caught sight of Su Yu as their eyes met.

This female student seemed to know what Su Yu was looking at as she glared at him with an obvious killing intent.

Su Yu hastily retracted his gaze as he seemed to have a guilty conscience.

The female student who sat at the same table as Ning Yan had the same surname as Su Yu(Feather) and was called Su Yu(Jade)*, both families were neighbours and not only were did they have the same

surnames, even their names were very similar and only pronounced slightly differently.

[T/N* The MC and his childhood friend have similar names in English, in future we will refer to her as Jade]

It was with much coincidence that the two ended up in the same kindergarten, then primary school and secondary school and finally also came to the same university in the same class.

The two should have been childhood sweethearts with relationships as close as brothers and sisters however the truth was contrary to expectations and the two viewed each other adversely.

Jade's character was tomboyish and she could be even more rough than boys, when Su Yu ran into her in university, he almost cried out and lamented on why he had to meet this jinx.

Being glared at by Jade, Su Yu once again laid down on his table and closed his eyes to sleep while listening to the news that was being reported on the radio.

Su Yu was not really sleepy but could not focus his attention on the dreary lesson teacher Ma was currently speaking about, rather, the news he was listening to was that much more interesting.

“..... In the recent weeks, ‘sky holes’ have been appearing that we need to pay close attention to..... based on our latest information, this morning at around 10:35am, three ‘sky holes’

appeared in the north sector of the people's road, the largest of these exceeded fifteen metres and half of a 'Jin Hua supermarket' was swallowed by it. Three people are reported missing and rescue works are underway, experts speculate that.....”

News regarding the 'sky holes' was currently being reported and over these few days, all over the world was news regarding these 'sky holes'

These 'sky holes' did not have any warning signs before they appeared and the most fearsome of the lot appeared overseas in a small city centre where a 'sky hole' that exceeded a mile swallowed nearly half the city.

The issue regarding these sky holes has generated quite a bit of panic among the populace. Some people have speculated that 2012 was the year that the world comes to an end. Although experts and professors have come out to deny these rumours by attributing them to natural geological phenomena, this was not enough to suppress the hysteria.

Su Yu was listening to the news report from the radio, although the sky holes were dreadful, this issue was simply too distant for him. Instead the things he thought about many other things. Such as how to get into the good books of Ning Yan, what to eat for dinner, the continuation of a certain fantasy novel and the latest chapter update, when will Diablo 3 be coming out....

Suddenly, there was a loud 'Boom!' and thereafter sounds of rumbling transmitted from below the school as the surroundings began to violently tremble.

Those that were sleeping, reading comics, sending messages through MM, using QQ messenger to chit chat..... all looked up as their expressions were shocked and even more looked perplexed.

Teacher Ma who was at the front of the class had his mouth wide open and seemed to recall something as he rushed out of the classroom without a word. The speed with which he did so could be said to not be slower than the world champion at sprinting.

Su Yu hurriedly took off his earphones as he lifted his head.

His best buddy Zhang Zhong Mou was in a deep sleep and had been rudely awakened by the sudden trembling and rumbling noises. He woke up confused as he wiped the saliva by his mouth and said: “I had almost touched her thighs, why was there thunder..... eh, the sky is already dark?”

The oppressive rumbling noises and trembling continued for a few seconds before finally stopping as everything returned to normal, only the sky outside had suddenly become dark.

“What was that? An earthquake?”

“It must have been an earthquake. But why has the sky suddenly turned dark? Is it going to rain soon?”

The students in the class awoke from their daze after two seconds as they stood up one by one. Many had curious expressions as they

viewed out of the window, soon there were more who had trembling faces.

Outside, the hubbub and buzz of voices could be heard, it was clear that the few sounds of trembling and rumbling had caused the entire school to be in an uproar.

“Cough, cough.” Sounds of coughing could be heard from the door as teacher Ma who had been the first to run away upon feeling that things were amiss had returned, his face was unnatural as he said: “It could have been an earthquake, as a precaution, please leave the university and head to the field. Do not stop within any buildings or stand beside them.”

Once done teacher Ma was once again the first to go, earlier the university had held on through the few seconds of earthquake and that was already very fortunate, if it came again who knew what would happen.

At this moment the entire university was abuzz as everyone exited their classrooms and squeezed as they attempted to go outside, wanting to leave the university as soon as possible.

“What’s going on?” Su Yu had managed to squeeze his way into the corridor outside and as he looked at the sky he saw that the sky was gloomy and filled with dark clouds, there was also an unspeakable pressure in the air.

It was clear skies for thousands of miles earlier, how could the trembling and rumbling of the university result in such a drastic

change to the sky?

Looking down, endless streams of people could be seen running out of the university forming waves of humans that were headed to the empty field.

The school was being cautious as they made everyone evacuate the university to gather at the field.

Boisterous crowds that were squeezing about were all over the place. Su Yu was currently stuck at the corridor of the third level, he could neither move forward or back. Within his heart, he thought about his best friend Zhang Zhong Mou and his dream goddess Ning Yan.

“These dangerous circumstances are the best to showcase a man’s spirit, it’s a pity..... Where is Ning Yan?” Su Yu thought of a beautiful outcome as he looked around however Ning Yan was nowhere to be seen.

As more and more people began to run out of the university building, the waves of humans were less packed and Su Yu was secretly regretful that he had not seen Ning Yan and had missed the opportunity to perform in front of her.

While he was feeling regretful, a miserable shriek could suddenly be heard from a distance.

Having lived to twenty one years of age, this was the first time

that Su Yu had actually encountered such a mournful sounding miserable shriek, the sound was like sharp nails that pierced into one's mind and soul, making one's hair stand on end.

Not only Su Yu, all those heard it immediately had their faces change as they looked towards the origin of the blood-curdling screech.

Su Yu could remember clearly, that it was the school's gate.

This was not a mainstream university and the area it encompassed was not very wide. There were only three teaching blocks, two accommodation blocks, a library, food hall, snack counter, field and others. The facilities were lacklustre and the school gate was not far from the teaching block.

Having just recalled where that place was, a second frightening shriek followed.

Su Yu instinctively thought of the guards that were standing by the school gate and from the corridor of the third floor he looked down. What he saw was something that was such an impossibility that he found himself doubtful of his eyes.

A pack of green-skinned naked monsters that resembled kids that were the ages of about thirteen and fourteen, charged through the school gate.

Su Yu's vision was decent and he could clearly see these pack of

monsters. They had large eyes and a nose that sunk in, a large ferocious mouth of a predator as their entire body was dark green. In each of their hands was a club that seemed to be like a baseball bat.

Su Yu simply could not believe his eyes as everyone around him all had the same expressions of eyes wide open. In a split second, everyone's eyes revealed a dazed look as though their brains had short circuited.

First the entire university was trembling and rumbling noises were everywhere, a few seconds later the sky turned completely dark and then there were miserable shrieks. Now a group of monsters had appeared?

All these simply seemed like a dream. Many people seemed to come to this realised as they pinched themselves to see if they were dreaming.

This group of green monsters that numbered slightly over ten were extremely fast as they rushed towards the large numbers of students gathered in the field.

Many people were in a daze as only a few people reacted and screamed in fear, causing a frenzy as everyone ran off in all directions.

“Chi!”

From the third storey, Su Yu could see things clearly. He saw the green-skinned monster who was the first to charged forth while wielding a large club. With formidable speed and force, the club struck a bespectacled student's head as he stood there dumbstruck.

Thereafter, the skull was smashed and fresh blood splashed out like cherry blossoms, white brain matter could also be seen mixed within.

The skull was the hardest part of the human body, how could it be so easily smashed?

At this moment, a strange thought floated into the mind of Su Yu. He suddenly thought of these green monsters and they really seemed like the goblins within most games.

Those goblins within the games were exactly like these green monsters.

Following the death of the first person, this group of green monsters had already rushed into the midst of the people and with the swing of each club those stunned and dazed students who had not run away had their skulls smashed in.

The gorey scenes of bloodiness made several of the students who were still in the teaching block retch.

The field was a state of panic as students were like headless houseflies as they ran haphazardly in all directions while

shrieking.

“Quick, quick call 110!”

Finally some people reacted as they frantically shouted while running away and dialing the police number.

At this moment, Su Yu finally woke up. Fortunately for him, he had often seen his mother slaughter chickens, cutting up fishes and so during her housework. Perhaps he was accustomed to bloody scenes and unexpectedly the bloody situation below did not make him vomit. Like the majority here, the first thing that came to his mind was to call the police for help.

Taking out his cellphone, he found that there was no signal. Others who could not believe this began to frantically dial but there was simply no way to connect.

“Ahhhh! They’re rushing over, they’re rushing up!” Suddenly, someone up ahead screamed in fear and Su Yu looked down in apprehension as he saw one of the green monsters rush into the teaching block before miserable shrieks could be heard from within the block.

The people in the surroundings began to panic as many people began to run to the higher floors while some were so frightened that they simply did not care what floor they were on and leapt out of the building.

“Quick, everyone let’s hide in the classroom!” Suddenly a female’s hoarse voice could be heard.

Su Yu looked over pensively and saw that the person who spoke was a female student wearing a dress and glasses, he immediately recognised her as the class monitor Lei Rui.

Everyone was panicking but upon hearing Lei Rui’s shout, they came to their senses as they all ran back into the classroom. Su Yu also hurried back and without anyone’s instructions began to close the windows and doors of the class.

“Hurry, use the tables to barricade the door.”

Although Lei Rui seemed gentle, when the time came for it she could certainly command.

Su Yu and a few of the other male classmates began to move the tables to barricade the door. The students in the class were mostly students from their class mixed with students from other classes, Su Yu looked at the group and saw that Jade and Ning Yan were both present however his best buddy Zhang Zhong Mou was not here.

In the blink of an eye, the people from the third level had all made clean their escape. There were some who ran into their own classrooms like Su Yu, some who escaped to a higher level and even others who had rashly jumped down as the ground floor had many avenues of escape unlike this level where they were blocked in.

Su Yu and the few male classmates began to stack up the few tables as they barricaded the front door, they could heard the miserable shrieks coming from the outside as it the sounds gradually grew closer. These males and females were barely past twenty and many had expressions of fear on their faces as this was the first time they had come so close to death.

Amongst them a few girls were huddled together and softly crying, their legs were weak as they fell to the ground and could not find the strength to stand up.

“Su..... Su Yu, will we die?” Suddenly, Su Yu felt that someone was grabbing the corner of his clothes.

Looking back, he found that it was Jade.

Usually, Su Yu and Jade would argue once they met however neither of them had the mood to do so now.

This was the first time that Su Yu saw such fear within Jade’s eyes and he felt something strange well up within him as he turned his head and gruffly said: “I don’t know, there’s so many of us..... no..... no problem.....”

His words had barely left his mouth when suddenly a loud there was a loud ‘Boom!’ that came from the front door of the class, as though large object had smashed the door and Su Yu as well as four to five other male students were almost sent flying with the tables.

“HURRY! Block it!” Class monitor Lei Rui was shrieking from the back as she charged towards the front.

Su Yu felt something squeezing his back, regardless of everything, Lei Rui pressed her body on to him as she spared no efforts to push forward.

Such an action that was originally erotic in nature. Although in such circumstances, nobody could care less as Su Yu gritted his teeth as he held on and pushed the door. Suddenly he turned his head as he shouted loudly: “NOT GOOD”

“Crack!” A distinct brittle sound could be heard as a wooden club smashed into the window by the side, causing the window to shatter into countless pieces.

A hideous green face that seemed like the devil from legends had appeared outside the window.

From a close proximity, the features of the green monster’s face could clearly be seen and that fearsome appearance was enough to let anyone’s hair stand on end.

“There are also students in other classes, hurry and find them. Why must you come and bother us!” A female student that was panicking began to madly shout.

“I don’t want! I don’t want my brain to be smashed in!” Another

person screamed in fear as the green monster that was wielding the wooden club began to hammer against the window and it seemed that it would be able to enter in no time at all. In his fear, he opened a window by the side and jumped out.

The window on the other side was not facing the corridor and by jumping out, one would immediately plummet towards the ground from the third storey.

Following this jump, Su Yu could clearly hear a miserable shriek.

“Monster!” Amongst the male students someone suddenly shouted as he lifted a table and smashed towards the window.

The green monster had barely stuck half its head in before being struck.

This fourth tier university that they were in had bad facilities and even the desks and chairs in the classes were not properly secured. In this very moment, it was actually a boon.

Su Yu looked back and recognised that this male student was Qin Jia Gui, the fittest student in the class and his basketball skills were superb. He was tall and handsome and had many fans within the school.

His girlfriend was in the neighbouring class ‘Computer system class one’ and she was the class belle.

It was rumoured that he had once pursued Ning Yan but did not

succeed and had thus went for the belle of another class. The two had ended up living together and many of the male students including Su Yu were green with envy.

It was apt to call Qin Jia Gui the fittest as he showcased his strength by lifting the entire table and flinging it at the green monster. It was a pity that the green monster only had half its head in and upon seeing the table had retracted his head and avoided it.

Seeing this, Su Yu was quick on the uptake as he hurriedly grabbed a chair and exclaimed: “Use the chairs!”

Qin Jia Gui came to his senses as he grabbed a chair and was waiting for the head of the green monster to come in before swinging down again.

The green monster’s body was small and could go through the metal windows that were split into three sections, however, each time it had half its head in Qin Jia Gui would smash and each of its attempts failed.

The spirits of the others lifted after seeing Qin Jia Gui hold the line and the male classmates each grabbed hold of a chair.

The green monster had failed all of its three attempts in getting in and had his scalp grazed as a trickle of green blood could be seen.

The monster was enraged as it retreated before suddenly emitting a shrill noise, thereafter it stood there in the corridor looking through the window as it stared at the group with a cruel and frightening expression.

“What is it doing? Why isn’t it moving anymore?” A female student by the side was unsettled as she asked Qin Jia Gui.

Qin Jia Gui shook his head as he was also confused.

Su Yu muttered lightly to himself and suddenly came to a realisation as the expression on his face changed: “He’s calling for help, crap!”

His words had just been said when several shrill noises could be heard that seemed like ancient devil beasts. Shortly after, the door of the class was continually knocked on and there were loud sounds of “Boom, Boom!”.

The green monsters seemed to have endless strength as the door was being pummeled and continued to shudder, the people within the class were all terrified, if the monsters rushed in, everyone would perish here.

Chapter 2: The Strange Energy For Evolving

“Quick, quick block the door!” Lei Rui shouted as she rushed forward.

In the blink of an eye, everyone had crowded before the doors and blocked them.

Besides the two that were pummeling the doors, the group saw two others by the corridor and together with the initial goblin, the three smashed the windows and attempted to squirm their way in.

“One person to one window!” Qin Jia Gui shouted as he tightly held a chair, if the green monster decided to stick its head in, he would ruthlessly swing down on it.

Su Yu also held a chair as he stood by a window, he had already struck twice and his hands were starting to feel numb. He turned and looked over at Qin Jia Gui as well as another male student, their faces were covered in sweat and it was clear that they would not be able to hold on for much longer.

The two sliding doors was being heavily bombarded with attacks, causing the doors to shake incessantly. A thin crack line started to gradually appear at the top of the door as the state of affairs seemed to be getting more dire.

“This won’t do, we can’t hold on any longer. There are five of those monsters outside, finished, we are all finished....” Su Yu started to contemplate inwardly. In total, there were about a dozen

or more of these freaks that had charged in yet there were five of them outside their classroom. They were not sure if this was their honour or their life was merely being abruptly cut short.

Looking at these green monsters constantly popping half their head in, the students merely striking down and forcing the monsters to withdraw was clearly not working out. Within Su Yu's mind, he thought of a crazy idea as he actually retreated a step backwards.

The green monster's large club landed heavy blows one after another on the window with an iron grating, causing the window to slowly change its shape. It decided to try entering through the metal lattice again.

This time, Su Yu did not attempt to attack it, instead he appeared tired and was leaning by side, taking a rest.

With great haste, the green monster managed to get his entire head into the classroom.

"Su Yu!" Qin Jia Gui happened to turn his head and saw what was happening and shouted with severity: "Hurry up and attack, it is about climb in."

"No worries." Su Yu was heaving as he took two breaths. In the blink of an eye, the monster in front of him was halfway through. Qin Jia Gui was so scared that his limbs started to go soft. In the event that this monster with extraordinary strength managed to enter, everyone would be done for.

After drawing in a large breath, Qin Jia Gui had already swung his body and was prepared to help Su Yu by attacking the monster that had just recently climbed in. Suddenly, Su Yu had a grin on his face and laughed: "This is the moment!"

Grasping a chair tightly with both hands, he gathered all his strength to land a heavy blow on the monster that had crawled midway through the window with an iron grating.

A loud rumbling sounded out, Su Yu's hands were numb from the vibration, he could vaguely feel the split webbing of his thumb and forefinger. However, in this life and death situation, he could not be bothered about it. Su Yu appeared to have gone insane as he continued to smash down on the monster like a crazed person.

Qin Jia Gui had a silly look in his eyes but he soon recovered and saw the light.

Previously the monsters had only stuck in a small portion of their heads before the students started to pummel down with great urgency as they were afraid. This resulted in them wasting their strength for no reason as the monsters were not affected at all by their attacks. Su Yu waited for the monster to crawl through midway before striking down. As the monster was only slightly smaller than the iron lattice, the attack happened to pin the monster to the grills, not allowing it to retreat or advance. It could only continue to receive beatings from the students.

Like a madman, Su Yu continued to pummel the monster as green liquids spurted out, the monster let out a terrible howl as the wooden club within it's hand finally dropped.

Although it had extraordinary strength, it's flesh was like a human's body. Being beaten down by Su Yu's frantic attacks with a chair, its breath became faint as it tried to crawl feebly through the window while it gradually lost the strength to keep struggling.

“Die, you monster!”

Su Yu held on, trying not to let his body collapse as he made one final swing with the chair. Upon hearing the breaking sound of a brittle object, the chair broke into pieces. As for the monster, its head was smashed open into little bits.

After Su Yu saw with his very own eyes that the monster's skull had been smashed open, there was a flickering and dazzling ball that was emitted out from the monster. It seemed to be some sort of dark crystal.

After this item was sent out, with a “Poof” sound, it flew to the nearest hand of Su Yu and assimilated with his left hand from the topside as it slowly disappeared.

Su Yu who witnessed the entire incident felt shock, he could not help but take a step back as he looked at his left hand again but there was nothing there. Could it be that his eyes was blurry?

Upon raising his head, he saw that Qin Jia Gui had understood Su Yu's idea, like Su Yu, Qin Jia Gui was waiting for the green monster to crawl through midway before unleashing a torrent of attacks.

Unexpectedly, this green monster released the wooden club in its hand and used both hands to tear apart the iron grating. It continued to take the blows from Qin Jia Gui as it used both hands to tug at the iron grating and made a jump with both legs. It actually managed to charge through the window and into the classroom.

In a split second, Su Yu realized that he was not that smart after all and it was not his intelligence that slayed the monster but rather, the green monster had been unlucky because the iron grating was twisted and its shape warped due to the repeated attacks by the goblin. Thus, the top half of its body could enter but its bottom half was caught by the iron grating, unable able to move. This allowed Su Yu to get a good opportunity.

When the green monster managed to enter, sounds of screaming filled the classroom. There were a few female students who were huddling together in a corner, both legs bursting into fits of trembling as they wet themselves.

Qin Jia Gui was so frightened that he tumbled while moving back and fell onto the floor.

The green monster was vengeful and hated Qin Jia Gui, it did not even pick up the wooden club on the floor as it stretched out both claws towards Qin Jia Gui's face and chest in a grasping motion.

With its frightful strength, the monster's swipe would smash apart Qin Jia Gui's skull, tear open his chest and abdomen.

At this moment, after Su Yu had beaten the green monster to death, he turned his head around and saw that Qin Jia Gui was in danger, without any thought, he lifted up a chair by the side and hurled it through the air.

Upon taking action, Su Yu felt that there was something unusual with his body.

After a bout of frantic attacks, he should have been dog-tired and struggling to prevent himself from collapsing. He should not have had the strength to even lift up a finger yet in this desperate situation, he was able to effortlessly carry a chair and toss it out.

What was more shocking was that it made a “Woo” sound as it flew through the air, the speed and force of it was difficult to imagine.

“This....” Su Yu was astonished, thereafter he turned his head and he could sense that the strength earlier had come from his left hand. This was definitely not strength that originally belonged to him.

Upon turning his head, he could clearly see the back of his left palm, for some unknown reason, there was a black scale the size of half a fingernail that had formed on his hand.

“Peng!” upon hitting the ground a loud noise was made. The chair that flew up high in the air, landed heavily on the green monster that was upon Qin Jia Gui as he stumbled onto the floor.

Green juices squirted out as the chair itself fell apart. The green monster let out a shriek as it was struck and was forcefully flung in the air.

In a split second, Su Yu recalled the events earlier of him killing the green monster. He had smashed the skull in and a small and dark coloured crystal had flown out of its head. Upon flying out and reaching his left hand, it had soon disappeared.

Could this all be related to that crystal?

As Su Yu unconsciously loosened his left hand, the strange energy slowly faded away. On the back of the palm of his left hand, the small black scale had disappeared and his left hand resumed its original appearance. He felt his limbs weaken as if his strength was being released from his body.

All of this appeared to be real yet seemed like a fantasy. The only thing he could be certain of was that the monster he had sent flying away recently was now flipping its body as it tried to get up, a hoarse howl came out of its mouth. A pair of eyes that contained a profound hatred were now staring at Su Yu. It scrambled about on the floor, picking up the wooden club it had dropped earlier and charged towards Su Yu.

A thought flashed through his mind, Su Yu quickly extended his left hand and grabbed a wooden table by his side, lifting it.

The energy within his left arm appeared again as the wooden

table flew through the air. The green monster was wrecked by the force of the wooden table, a “ka cha” sound could be heard as the wooden table shattered and the fragments scattered about.

Su Yu groaned as he felt an acute pain within his chest and abdomen as he let out a miserable shriek before collapsing onto the floor.

The entire classroom was in a complete disarray as Lei Rui and a few others blocked the doors while a few female students huddled together and cried. Two male students were standing by the windows guarding them as they madly beat down on any heads that stuck themselves in. Qin Jia Gui had fallen to the ground and another green monster carried a wooden club as it howled and rushed at Su Yu who had just fallen to the ground.

“Su Yu!” Suddenly, Jade’s face was filled with terror as she loudly screamed and rushed over, her face was covered in tears like most of the girls in the class.

Jade was clearly terrified and frightened but upon seeing Su Yu being jumped on by the green monster and could possibly die, she had lost all reason as she madly screamed and rushed in.

Su Yu who had fallen to the ground felt an intense pain in his chest and his hands that were clasping it were stained in blood. He immediately understood that one of the wooden pieces from the wooden table that was smashed into pieces by the green monster had flown and pierced his chest region.

“Will I die?” Su Yu had a weird thought as he lay there, able to clearly see the green monster that was rushing at him with his wooden club raised.

Thereafter, he saw Jade’s face filled with tears as she charged out from the back like a crazed person.

“No.... Don’t!” Su Yu saw the green monster use its other hand to retaliate against Jade’s fanatical charge and this blow would surely be able to tear apart Jade’s chest.

Chapter 3: The Black Scale

“Monster!” Su Yu madly shouted as he gathered strength that he did not know existed as he kicked out with his two legs and managed to hit the green monster squarely on its body. His hands then reached out and grabbed the wooden club that was being swung down, upon contact he let out a painful scream.

Besides his left hand, the other parts of his body did not have any strange energy and although his two-legged kick had landed on the green monster, he did not expect the inertia to be so strong that it caused both his legs to tremble and they felt as though they could break at any moment.

The injury to his right hand was even more severe and although it had grabbed the wooden club at the same time as his left hand, Su Yu had clearly heard the sound of bones breaking within his right hand.

As a safe estimate, at least two of his fingers were broken.

The ten fingers were connected to the heart and with the breaking of bones in the fingers, the amount of pain could only be imagined as Su Yu continued to miserably shriek. He managed to hold onto the wooden club in a death grasp as the black scale once again appeared on his left hand, the strange energy exploded out and Su Yu instinctively threw a fist out.

“Peng!”

Green juice and fresh blood mixed together with a green bead exploded out, one of the green monster's eyeballs had been smashed out by the frightening strength.

Su Yu wildly shouted as he grabbed the wooden club and viciously began to smash down on the green monster's head.

The entire class of students were stunned as they looked at Su Yu.

Qin Jia Gui had just gotten half his body up when he saw Su Yu who was currently like a devil, covered in blood and grasping the wooden club that was initially the green monster's as he smashed down towards its head.

“Ka cha!”

The green monster's head exploded like a watermelon as green juices stained Su Yu's hands and face.

From this shattered skull, a small black crystal flew out and rushed into Su Yu's left hand with a speed that the human eye could not follow as it entered and disappeared.

Su Yu relaxed his hand as he let go of the wooden club before swaying and falling back to the ground.

Jade cried as she ran forward and shook Su Yu while loudly shouting: “Su Yu! Su Yu! Wake up!”

“Wow I never thought that Jade cared that much about me.....”
Su Yu was currently delirious as his mind was filled with such a thought.

“Boom!”

A loud sound could be heard as male and female students alike made startled cries. Su Yu felt the shivers as he once again forced himself awake.

Lei Rui and the others had all fallen to the ground and the stack of tables had also fallen apart, the front door of the class had caved in.

Finally, the front door of the class could withstand it no longer and fell apart. The other two green monsters stopped smashing the window and back door as they turned and ran to the front door to join their companion as the three slowly walked in.

There were two bloody corpses of the green monsters within the class and it seemed like this was why the three had slowed down as their eyes flashed with consternation, then they all looked towards Su Yu.

It was Su Yu who had killed two of the green monsters.

At this moment, the outside was absolutely silent and the ten odd people who were still in the classroom felt shrouded in darkness as

the three green monsters walked in and fear had consumed their hearts.

A female student climbed to a window by the side with a face filled with fear. If the green monster leapt at her, she would grit her teeth and jump. Although this was the third storey, she might live even if she broke her hands and legs, this was certainly a better option than getting her head smashed in.

There were even some people who began to frantically press their cellphones, continually dialing the number for the police but getting no response.

A few of the male students were trembling as they stood together, holding onto chairs and tables as they prepared to fight for their lives, they were filled with such fear that they had become courageous.

There were also some who looked towards the backdoor and considered removing the blockade and escaping, however, they were afraid that their actions would attract the attention of the green monsters and cause them to be attacked first.

“Back away.” Su Yu grit his teeth. His right hand, chest and both legs were in agony as his face was contorted from the pain and he pulled Jade behind him.

Jade frantically stepped backwards and fell. She felt that Su Yu’s left hand was abnormally strong and it was only a tug but it had sent her falling to the ground.

“Ai!”

Jade fell to the ground painfully as the three monsters attacked simultaneously, splitting up as they charged at Su Yu.

“Quick, run!” The other students saw this and many people shouted loudly as they did not have time to care about Su Yu and rushed to escape.

Amongst them, only Qin Jia Gui shouted angrily as he lifted a chair by the side and flung it towards the three green monsters.

A struggle could be seen on the class monitor Lei Rui’s face as she looked nervously at Su Yu then the door, she was frightened and also wanted to run but instinctively felt that she could not throw Su Yu behind.

The reason for them having a route to escape was because Su Yu had created such a chance for them.

Seeing the three green monsters attacking at the same time, Su Yu’s mind was filled with frantic fear that bubbled up as his left hand stretched forward and grabbed tightly onto the wooden club which he had previously obtained from one of the green monsters.

With the swipe of his left hand, a strong energy was immediately released and this time the strange energy was even greater than before.

On the back of Su Yu's hand, two black scales that were as big as half a fingernail each had appeared. Could this be because of the two crystals that were absorbed when he killed the two green monsters?

Su Yu realised this possibility as he turned his body to dodge to the side while wielding the wooden club in his hand and smashing it heavily towards the legs of a table by the side.

The strange energy exploded out and the entire table was sent flying with a "swoosh"

Two of the green monsters stopped and wielded their wooden clubs to forcefully block while one of the green monsters dodged and continued to attack Su Yu.

Suddenly, Su Yu had a feeling that these green monsters were not that smart.

It could be that his left hand now had an unbelievable power or that he had already killed two of these green monsters or he was naturally talented at battle and that this was all instinctive. Whatever it was, at this moment, his mind was thinking unbelievably fast and even he found it difficult to believe that he was once a person who usually failed exams, cheated during exams and had been designated as a wastrel by the teacher.

The three green monsters rushed forward and Su Yu could only retreat. He did not expect that after throwing the wooden table,

two would actually stop to forcefully block it while another would attack on its own. At this moment, an opportunity presented itself and it became a chance for Su Yu to face a green monster alone.

One had to strike while the iron was hot and Su Yu strode forward to meet it, the strength in his left arm surged as he could faintly sense that the strength within seemed to exceed that of the green monster.

“Bang!”

Two wooden clubs collided as his left arm felt an intense pain as though it had been sprained. The green monster was in a worse shape as the web between its thumb and forefinger tore and the wooden club flew away, its ugly face had a shocked expression on it.

Su Yu would not let go of this opportunity and bore with the intense pain in his left arm as he was flailing madly with the wooden club.

“Poosh!”

A low-pitched wail could be heard from the green monsters mouth as its head was smashed upwards into the air, a black crystal then flew out and once again flew like lightning into Su Yu’s left hand.

The strange energy that was originally surging was once again

renewed with a new energy, causing the energy to grow and looking at the back of his hand there was another black scale that appeared but it was only a small piece, much smaller than the two black scales earlier.

“What’s going on? Could this green monster be weaker? Or could it be that absorbing too much of these black crystals would cause the effects to lessen?”

Su Yu was contemplating when the other two green monsters howled crazily and sprung forward to attack.

This time, Su Yu’s response was slower and although his wooden club managed to send one of the green monsters flying backwards, the other green monster’s club managed to hit him.

Under such a dangerous circumstance, Su Yu instinctively raised his right arm.

“Poosh!”

The club smashed onto Su Yu’s right arm as he shouted in pain. His arm was broken and this was already considered fortunate because his exchange of blows using the wooden club with the other green monster had not only sent it flying away but also sent him reeling backwards and thus the impact had been lessened.

Otherwise, this strike would have turned his right arm into a meat pulp and it was really fortunate that only bones were broken.

Su Yu shouted miserably and the green monster saw a chance as it madly attacked, both hands lifting the wooden club as it struck to kill.

With a swing of his left arm, Su Yu shouted crazily from the intense pain coming from his right arm as he threw the wooden club.

This explosive force was extremely frightening and the wooden club knocked away the green monster's wooden club. Su Yu then pounced and forced the green monster to the ground.

An intense pain could be felt in his chest region as the green monster tore a piece of flesh away while Su Yu was also smashing down with his left fist.

A gurgling noise came from the green monster as its face was smashed inwards by Su Yu's fist, the fourth crystal was then absorbed into his left hand.

Chapter 4: The Skies Have Changed?

Having killed four green monsters, Su Yu's entire body was at the brink of collapsing. Besides his left arm that had the strange energy surging within it, the other parts of his body were so painful to the point of losing all feeling.

Besides his left arm, Su Yu could no longer feel the other parts of his body.

Lying on the ground, he could hear heavy breathing as he barely managed to lift his head up and saw Qin Jia Gui holding a wooden club with his two hands, his face dripping with sweat as he stood in front of him, a green monster with its head smashed in, laid on the ground.

This was the final green monster which had been knocked away earlier by Su Yu's wooden club. Qin Jia Lin had picked up a wooden club and seeing the chance, he had madly rushed at the green monster as he smashed viciously at its head finally killing it.

At this moment, Qin Jia Gui was staring dazedly at his right hand. Something strange was occurring on the back of his right hand however it was different from the black scales that appeared on Su Yu. A small, dusky, thin and stiff flake that seemed like a mole at first glance. But upon feeling it, it was cold like metal and as he relaxed his right hand the strange phenomenon disappeared.

Su Yu looked gratefully over at Qin Jia Lin, if it were not for him killing the final green monster, he would likely had died to the

fifth green monster after killing the other four.

In the entire classroom, there was only Su Yu who was sprawled on the ground, Qin Jia Gui who stood there, Jade who had just gotten back up as well as the class monitor Lei Rui who stood in a daze by the door.

The other parts of the room were in a complete disarray.

“Su Yu!” Jade climbed back up and rushed over to check on Su Yu’s condition, her heart was gripped with cold fear as she said in a trembling voice: “Su..... Su Yu, how are you feeling?”

Su Yu lifted up half his head as he looked at the corpses of the five green monsters and suddenly felt as though he had just woken from a long dream and bitterly laughed: “I can’t move..... it’s so pain that..... I could faint at any time. Jade..... I never thought that..... you cared that much about me. Do you like me, if so just tell me straight to my face.....”

Jade was stunned as she instinctively reacted and viciously slapped the back of Su Yu’s head and angrily said: “Nonsen.....” She was shocked to find that her slap had caused Su Yu to thoroughly faint.

Qin Jia Gui continually tensed and relaxed his right hand as he felt the strange energy fluctuations within and mumbled: “I understand now..... It’s no wonder that Su Yu suddenly became so ferocious. After killing these monsters, there’s actually an energy that exceeds our imaginations.....”

On his face, there was a natural smile that arose from the relief that came after an intense situation.

When Su Yu finally woke up, he was lying on the sickbed within the infirmary.

The surroundings were filled with the noises of human chatter. Initially there were insufficient beds here and many beds had been added, many injured personnel could be seen and all of them were wrapped up like white dumplings.

Thinking of his own injuries, Su Yu looked down and immediately realised that amongst the people being wrapped he was probably the one wrapped most tightly.

Besides his left arm, all other areas were injured and it was simply impossible to move.

“Su Yu has woken up.”

A sound of glee could be heard as the familiar faces of Jade and Lei Rui appeared.

“Su Yu.” A sweet voice could be heard as Su Yu gently lifted his face. He saw a lady whose skin was clear and fair and her face seemed to be covered in a thick layer of cosmetic products.

This lady seemed to be around twenty six to twenty seven years old with long shoulder length hair. She wore a black dress and had a belt around her waist, causing her alluring and well-developed body to be accentuated, especially her long legs that were especially mesmerizing.

“Teacher Meng.” Su Yu called out and felt that his voice was rather hoarse, scaring himself in the process.

This mature woman who had an ample body was Meng Bo and happened to be their computer systems class two teacher. She taught them english and although she already had a partner, she was not married. As the fantasy of many male students, quite a few had spent their nights drawing maps on the floor with her image in mind*.

[*Guys doing their stuff, i’m sure most of you can figure this out]

“You’re very brave, teacher did not expect that you would be able to kill four of those green monsters on your own.” When speaking about the green monsters, Teacher Meng Bo’s face changed as her expression seemed to show lingering fear.

Su Yu suddenly recalled that back then there were at least fifteen to sixteen of the green monsters and hurriedly asked: “What about the other monsters? What’s the current situation? Where is Zhang Zhong Mou?”

He actually considered asking about the situation of Ning Yan however upon seeing Jade who was by his side, he somehow did not dare to ask the question.

“Young master Yu, where have your eyes gone. I’m lying right beside you. Are there only pretty girls in your eyes? Can’t even see your best buddy?” Suddenly someone by the side groaned.

Su Yu turned his head in amazement and found that the person lying on the bed beside him was also an injured person and half his face was wrapped by white bandage. On closer inspection, was this not his best buddy Zhang Zhong Mou?

Su Yu let out a sigh of relief and although it seemed that the injuries Zhang Zhong Mou suffered were not light, at least he had not died.

Meng Bo then said: “There were seventeen of them and they were all beaten to death. Su Yu, you had better rest up. Everyone let’s go out, don’t disturb them anymore.”

“Okay.” Lei Rui answered as she looked over with a concerned expression at Su Yu before suddenly saying: “Su Yu, thank you.”

Su Yu was startled, when he thought about the class monitor that was usually high and mighty and never put him in her eyes, who knew that she would actually say her thanks.

“What’s wrong? Class monitor?” Su Yu was feeling somewhat amazed.

“I’m thanking you on behalf of the entire class. Back then, if it weren’t for you..... all of us would have died. You..... saved us.”

Lei Rui was embarrassed at his addressing her of “Class Monitor”. She thought back to how she had previously treated Su Yu and was rather embarrassed as she dragged Jade out.

Jade looked back at Su Yu and seemed to want to say something but finally looked away and said to Zhang Zhong Mou who was by the side: “Take care of your injuries.”

Zhang Zhong Mou said in puzzlement: “Jade seems to have changed, she actually knows how to care for people now. Young master Yu, don’t you think this is a little strange?”

Su Yu groaned as his entire body was writhing in pain, he thought for awhile before saying: “I’ve fainted for quite a long period of time, upon waking up I’m already here. What’s the current situation outside? Have the police arrived? Have they found out what those green monsters were? It couldn’t be some strange mutation of an animal from the zoo right? Or could it be that some demented scientist used something to create it?”

“Police?” Zhang Zhong Mou’s face became gloomy as he said: “Nope, nobody has signals on their cellphones and even the landline phone within the school could not call out. This time, over hundred people have died and their corpses are currently stacked outside. It seems that on the school’s side, there were disputes on how to handle the corpses.”

Su Yu heart trembled as he angrily said: “If the phone can’t work why can’t we personally go out to search for help? The local police station isn’t that far from our school. Now that such a serious incident has occurred here, there’s actually nobody who cares?

This.....”

In his agitation his wounds opened up and the pain made him take a sharp intake of breath.

Based on logic, with so many people injured they should have long been sent to a large hospital. Now they were all squeezed into the school infirmary, the facilities here were very basic and could only bandage and alleviate some pain. At this moment the sounds of the moaning of heavily injured patients could be heard.

Su Yu was initially already incensed as he thought to himself of the possibility that the school wanted to hide this news. He then thought with the deaths of so many people, was it even possible to hide this news?

“No, It’s not that they don’t care..... It’s..... It’s that we’re currently.....” Zhang Zhong Mou had a weird expression on his face as he said: “Nobody knows where we are currently at.”

Su Yu was stunned.

“What’s that supposed to mean? Old trickster*, What do you mean nobody knows where we are? Aren’t we in the school and isn’t this the school infirmary?”

[T/N*: Nickname of Zhang Zhong Mou that involves Mou 谋 which means plot/scheme]

Zhang Zhong Mou bitterly laughed: “Let me finish speaking first. This matter..... without personally seeing it I would actually

thought that I was dreaming. The surroundings of our school has totally changed and trees are everywhere. Damn, it's simply too mysterious, our school actually ended up in the middle of a forest."

"Eh?" Su Yu had a blank expression as he said: "Forest? What forest?"

"The surroundings of our school..... is no longer the familiar scene that we usually see. There are no roads or the neighbouring living district nor the internet cafe that we frequent or the table tennis room..... The surroundings are covered with endless forest and they are all big and tall trees."

Zhang Zhong Mou's voice was weird and when he spoke to the end, even his accent had changed.

Such an event, anyone would feel that this was inconceivable and Su Yu was left speechless as he felt that he had heard wrongly. He then turned his head to look at the other injured personnel as he asked a girl by the side: "Is what he's saying all true?"

The face of this girl was filled with fear as she nodded without speaking.

The surroundings of the school had become a forest? What was this? A sci-fi movie? Or a Hollywood blockbuster? Su Yu wanted to laugh and thought that this was certainly a scheme hatched by Zhang Zhong Mou to trick him.

Suddenly, Su Yu thought of the events that had transpired earlier and the rumbling noises as well as the intense trembling. The sky

had suddenly turned dark and at that time he had a weird feeling as though the sky had suddenly changed.

“The sky has changed?” Su Yu took in a cold breath as he felt his entire body become ice-cold.

Chapter 5: Advance Party

Turned his back and staring at Zhang Zhong Mou, Su Yu said through gritted teeth: “For real?”

Zhang Zhong Mou nodded as his eyes seemed to contain fear.

“Hoooh”

Su Yu calmly lay down. At this moment, he felt as though he mind was about to explode. The events that transpired were simply too shocking and inconceivable and what was most astounding was that the surroundings of their school had changed and was no longer the world they were familiar with and it seemed as though they had arrived at a strange unknown world.

Having laid down for a while, the door was pushed open and a few people walked in, amongst them were the class monitor Lei Rui and Jade.

The two people carried food containers in their hands as they walked to the bedsides of Su Yu and Zhang Zhong Mou.

“I’m already starving to death, the sky outside should be dark already.” Zhang Zhong Mou said this while climbing up from his bed.

Although Su Yu’s left hand could still move, his body was immobile and he required someone to feed him.

“Jade, you do it.” Lei Rui handed over this duty to Jade.

Jade’s face was red as she grit her teeth and grunted as she sat by the side with a seemingly reluctant look.

Su Yu was incensed as he thought of how he had fought tooth and nail to keep them alive but she was actually reluctant to feed him and said: “Not hungry.” as he turned his head away.

Jade was stunned and Lei Rui seemed to understand something as she took the food container from Jade’s hand as smiled: “Let me do it. Su Yu, you should give some face to me, the class monitor. You’re the hero of the class, if you starve, everyone would blame me. Everyone wanted to come visit you but I blocked them because you are injured and require rest.”

Lei Rui no longer had any airs of a class monitor as she spoke to Su Yu, her face was full of smiles and appeared cute and amiable.

A gleeful expression appeared on Su Yu’s face as he said: “My appetite has suddenly gotten better. Ai! It suddenly feels as though I’m starving.” As he opened his mouth to eat a mouthful of food.

Seeing this, Jade grit her teeth as she harrumphed and turned away.

Lei Rui fed a few mouthfuls to Su Yu as the expression on her face gradually became gloomier.

“What’s wrong? Class monitor?” Su Yu saw this and felt puzzled.

Lei Rui looked at the food within the food container and gently sighed: “If there still isn’t anyone who comes to save us, after two days, we would have run out of food. Also, the electricity.....” Looking up at the lights within the class, there was nervousness in her expression.

It was lucky that the school had a generator and the electricity was alright for now.

Su Yu said in puzzlement: “Even if the outside has turned into a forest, hasn’t the school formed a group to go out and explore?”

“Outside.....” Lei Rei shivered as she softly said: “It’s filled with those green monsters and it’s fortunate that the outer walls of our school are high enough and the steel gate is closed shut, temporarily stopping them. However..... we won’t be able to hold on for much longer.”

Su Yu’s heart shivered as he heard this, in the forest outside the school it was actually filled with the green monsters?

Looking at the people all around, they had gloomy faces filled with trepidation. There was no longer the jovial smiles and laughter of youths in their twenties, rather, the atmosphere in the infirmary was filled with fear and despair.

During this night, most of the people slept in fear as the frightening sounds could be heard from the outside. Su Yu could hear that most of the noises came from the green monsters but occasionally there were the roars of a fearsome beast that made one's hair stand on end.

Lying on the bed, Su Yu could clearly feel the strange energy circulating within his left arm, flowing through his entire body as it continually changed his physique causing his body to sweat.

Su Yu's injuries were very severe; three broken fingers, a broken right arm, a deep wound on his chest that nearly injured his organs. With such injuries, a person would usually have to recuperate for at least half a month.

In a single night, it seemed that the strange energy had a mysterious use as Su Yu discovered that his injuries were much better. Besides his right arm which was recovering slower due to the broken bone, the superficial injuries and the wound on his chest had mostly healed, he could now get off the bed without too much trouble.

This was a new discovery for him. The strange energy not only made the strength within his left arm frightening, but also had the miraculous effect of causing his entire body to recuperate at a much faster rate.

What exactly was this strange energy? And what were the black scales that appeared on the back of his left hand?

Su Yu could not understand, most of the events that transpired simply could not be explained with common logic.

Zhang Zhong Mou's injuries were much lighter than his, besides his head region that still required bandaging, the other areas were merely superficial injuries and after a day of resting he was already fine.

Under the request of Su Yu, Zhang Zhong Mou supported Su Yu and slowly walked out of the infirmary.

Outside, the sky was dark and in the distance big and tall trees could be seen.

Zhang Zhong Mou did not lie to him, currently the surroundings of the school had become a forest, an unfamiliar forest that was filled with frightening monsters.

As far as the eye could see were male and female students with stupefied expressions. After experiencing such a traumatic event, classes were naturally stopped and although they were studying in a fourth tier university, there were still close to two thousand students who were currently trapped here and food and water would immediately become a problem.

As Lei Rui had mentioned, if the situation did not change. In two days time they would no longer have any food to eat.

Outside, the forest that was filled with green monsters had

trapped them here and after a few days without food they would all die here as hopelessness filled the hearts of each person.

“No way, we must get out of here.” Su Yu suddenly muttered to himself.

“That’s right!” Someone from the back agreed.

Su Yu looked back, Teacher Meng Bo walked over, her body was tall and slender, skin white like snow and face mellow and full.

“We certainly can’t just wait for death here. If your injuries are better, follow me. The school authorities are looking for you.”

When Su Yu and Zhang Zhong Mou followed Meng Bo into the food hall, there were already plenty of people gathered within consisting primarily of males. Amongst them, Su Yu saw the familiar faces of Qin Jia Gui and Ning Yan.

“Su Yu, Zhang Zhong Mou.” Qin Jia Gui greeted them and the two nodded in response.

Su Yu swept his gaze as he secretly glanced at Ning Yan, she looked calm on the outside as she quietly stood there, her gaze was reserved and she did not look around much.

It was weird that everyone was standing within the food hall. Even weirder was that outside the hall, there were a large number of students gathered as they looked about but did not enter.

“Everyone please sit.” A few middle aged people were standing in front and Su Yu recognised that the one currently speaking was the Chairman Zheng of the university while the others were various authorities of the school.

Su Yu had a confused expression as he sat down on a chair with Zhang Zhong Mou by his side. To his surprise, Qin Jia Gui also walked over and sat by his side.

Although they were in the same class, Su Yu and Zhang Zhong Mou did not really have a close relationship with Qin Jia Gui. He had not expected that Qin Jia Gui would suddenly act so warmly towards them. The others began to find seats as they all sat down.

“Qin Jia Gui, do you know what’s this about?” Su Yu softly questioned.

Qin Jia Gui clenched his right fist as he softly replied: “Didn’t teacher Meng tell you? The few of us have been gathered here and will have a heavy responsibility thrust upon us.”

Su Yu shook his head and the deputy chair of the board began to speak.

Su Yu remembered that Chairman Zheng was usually very long-winded but he was concise and succinct this time and his few words made Su Yu and Zhang Zhong Mou understand the reason why they were gathered here.

The reason was to create an advance party that would enter the unknown forest to explore. The best outcome would be getting in touch with the police to save them, otherwise finding food would also be an acceptable outcome.

Amongst the people gathered here, there were ten odd students who were like Su Yu, they had managed to kill green monsters, thus gaining the strange energy. Su Yu was the only one who had managed to kill four of them and this made him especially evident in the eyes of everyone, as even Chairman Zheng looked at him as he spoke.

There had been a total of seventeen green monsters, of which four had been killed by Su Yu. A female student from the department of foreign languages had killed two, while the other eleven were killed by eleven different people. This meant that there were thirteen people here who had the strange energy.

What was surprising to Su Yu was that the calm and gentle looking Ning Yan. She actually killed a green monster and was one of the two girls within the thirteen that had the strange energy.

Su Yu knew that in those messy situations, killing a green monster largely depended on luck, which was the case for himself and Qin Jia Gui.

Without taking in the strange energy, when comparing physical strength Qin Jia Gui was certainly much superior to himself. He had merely gotten lucky and the first green monster had gotten

itself stuck in the metal grating, allowing him to kill the first monster. This led to acquiring the strange energy which then allowed him to kill the other three green monsters.

Thinking of this, Su Yu felt a sense of relief.

Chapter 6: A Small Group Of Thirty One People

Killing monsters and obtaining the strange energy, at this moment everyone already understood this fact. Besides the thirteen of them, another ten odd people who did not have the strange energy were gathered, they were all people with superior physiques, like the sports teacher, school guard, members of the school team as well as people who were brave and volunteered themselves. In total, there were thirty one people.

As for females, there were only Ning Yan as well as the female from the department of foreign languages who had killed two green monsters.

Su Yu discreetly questioned Qin Jia Gui, this fellow knew a little about the other party. The female was called Ma Zi Ye and had made quite a name for herself in the department of foreign languages because her family had opened a martial arts dojo. Thinking of the influence of her family, it was likely that she had some basics for martial arts.

Chairman Zheng was done talking and the workers of the food hall came and gave the group a bountiful amount food.

As the saying goes ‘The emperor did not have hungry troops*’, they were going deep into the forest to explore and find food and life. It could be said that they were going to gamble their lives. Before leaving, the school had thus prepared for them a bountiful breakfast.

[Phrase: When you ask someone to complete something, you should fulfill some of their most basic needs]

Meng Bo walked beside Su Yu and softly said: “How are your injuries? Initially I informed the chairman that you were heavily injured and did not include you in the group. However, when I saw that you could get out of bed, I asked you to tag along. How are you feeling right now?”

Although the magnificent feat that Su Yu had achieved of killing four green monsters in a row made the school in awe of him, he was heavily injured and was originally excluded from the group. Right now, they had great expectations for him.

Su Yu gently shook his body, although his right hand was still immobile, the other areas were alright as he nodded: “I should be okay. The injuries yesterday weren’t light but I’m already much better today. It seems..... killing those monsters doesn’t only cause our strength to increase, even our regenerative abilities also become frightening. Based on my current rate of regeneration, in another day my injuries would have mostly healed.”

Meng Bo let out a sigh of relief as a smile floated on her face as she acknowledged.

With such an ‘expert’ like Su Yu who had killed four green monsters in the group, Meng Bo’s confidence was greatly boosted.

Before moving out, everyone was given a backpack that

contained two to three days worth of food and water, some simple gauze, cotton swabs, blood clotting agents as well as some other medical supplies. There was also torchlight, lighters, small knives and other essentials. With a two-day time limit, the school's request was that they do their best to find help or food within the two days and if they failed to obtain anything, they would be required to return.

In reality, the food that the school had in storage was only barely enough for two days. If Su Yu and the group did not find any rescue team or food within the two days, the school would have to evacuate the premises and face the danger outside rather than wait for death.

Everything hung on these two days and the results of Su Yu and the group's exploration.

These were the only plans that the school had at the moment, if they were to give up the safety of the school right from the start and enter the forest, it could only be imagined how many lives would be lost.

"I hope that we can find the rescue parties within two days, if we can leave the forest that would be even better." Zhang Zhong Mou touched his bandaged face as he spoke.

It was only recently that Su Yu found out, Zhang Zhong Mou had also killed a green monster and was one of the thirteen who had the strange energy within them.

Seventeen green monsters had died and left behind seventeen wooden clubs. These clubs were extremely sturdy and they were harder than metal clubs, about a metre long and when wielded, its might was terrifying and normal boulders would be easily smashed apart.

Su Yu was allocated one such wooden club as a weapon, there were also a few electric batons and other weapons that the guards used which were divided among the group. Finally, the remainder received baseball bats, metal pipes, choppers and other assorted weapons so that each of the thirty odd people at least had something to fend for themselves.

When comparing the weapons, the wooden clubs of the green monsters stood out as the most fearsome. With such limited time, the school had not managed to find many good items for killing and although the chopper was sharp, it was too short and if they met the green monsters that wielded wooden clubs, its use would be limited.

Everything was prepared and the group of thirty odd people walked towards the school gate as the remaining students of the university looked at them with reverence and fear within their eyes.

The metal gate of the school was currently firmly shut as the group of people wielded different weapons and grimly looked on at the gate.

Outside the metal gate, there were a few green monsters moving about as they continually shrieked at the people within. It was only

that the metal gate was simply too tall and although they tried multiple times to scale it, they could not do so and the metal gate was too tough for them to break through. Only then did they finally give up and began patrolling outside the gate, giving one a feeling of despair and fear.

Chairman Zheng as well as the authorities of the school together with the teachers and students of the university gathered before the metal gate to send the party off. The few green monsters that were patrolling outside seemed to sense something as they let out shrill shrieks and wielded their wooden clubs as they began to smash the metal gate.

“Boom! Boom!”

Sounds of the metal gate being hammered could be heard and everyone had expressions of hatred and fear.

Class monitor Lei Rui and Jade were also part of the group that was sending them off, Su Yu saw Jade looking at him as though she had something to say but was hesitant and he could not help but laugh: “Jade, I think you’re quite concerned about me. If you have anything to say you’d better grab the chance to say it.”

Jade harrumphed as she seemed to consider not saying anything but could not help it as she said: “You..... you better take care of yourself. Don’t blindly push ahead.”

“I know, just relax. Actually Jade, we’ve already known each other for so long but this is the first time that I realise you seem to

care quite a lot about me.”

Jade responded: “I..... that’s not true..... it was your mother that begged me to watch out for you. Otherwise, why would I care whether you lived or died. Anyways, for your mother, you better make it back safely.”

Thereafter she said in an even softer voice: “There are so many other awesome people, you better not act capable and do too much. Actually, you’re already hurt. You shouldn’t even be going out. There are already so many people, if you don’t go no one will complain. How about we speak to teacher Meng and.....”

Jade was still speaking but Su Yu had lifted his hand to stop her as his face had an ugly expression and he looked into Jade’s eyes and said: “Actually, I’m more concerned about you. The few of you will be staying here and it may not be entirely safe. Two days..... We only have two days and if we do not find a safe way out or find a rescue team.....”

Su Yu stopped talking because the outcome was something that caused their hearts to shiver.

“Let’s not talk about it. You just stay here and wait for a few days, after that I’ll definitely come back here. It’s a deal, understand little girl?” Having said this, Su Yu’s face returned to his indifferent expression.

“Okay, Su Yu you better remember what you said. I won’t allow you to break your promise.” Jade was very serious and seemed as

though she spoke through gritted teeth.

Su Yu laughed as he turned, his left hand waving behind his head as he said: “I know, Jade you’re so long-winded. Be careful if no guy wants to marry you.”

Jade was once again red in anger.

“You..... must be careful.” Suddenly, a gentle voice could be heard from the side.

Su Yu’s gaze swept over and saw Qin Jia Gui with a beautiful big eyed girl clasping their hands tightly. The girl’s face had concern written all over it as she softly spoke to Qin Jia Gui.

Su Yu recognised this beautiful big eyed girl, she was Qin Jia Gui’s girlfriend and was the belle of the computer system class one. Su Yu recalled that her name was Yuan Ni Ping.

Outside the large metal gate, there were already six of the green monsters gathered. They continually wielded the wooden clubs in their hands as they pummeled the metal gate causing loud rumbling noises. It was fortunate that the metal pillars which supported the gate were as thick as arms and very hard, making it difficult to break through with brute force.

Seeing the group of humans gathered before the metal gate, the few green monsters began to make shrill cries that seemed filled with excitement.

“Are you guys ready?” A teacher was very nervous as he grabbed the handle of the small door by the side of the gate with one hand while his other held a key to the giant metal lock that was locking the door shut. His hand was currently trembling intensely.

The crowd quietened down as those ten odd people who had the strange energy squeezed forward. Of the ten odd people, one had a crew cut hair and was roughly 1.8 metres tall, although he was of a similar age to Su Yu, he had a stern and calm face that exceeded his years as he said: “Teacher, give me the key.”

The teacher nodded as he handed the key over and backed away.

Once the metal door was opened, those green monsters would rush in. If they failed to kill these green monsters they would simply be unable to leave the place.

This student with a crew cut hair took the keys with his left hand while his right hand held onto the wooden club left by the green monsters. Without any hesitation, he lifted his left hand and with a “Clank” the lock was open.

Behind him were Qin Jia Gui, Zhang Zhong Mou and another student that Su Yu did not recognise. This was followed by Su Yu, Ning Yan, Ma Zi Ye and the others.

The thirteen people that were squeezing in front were all special energy users, following them were teachers, guards and the rest of the students who formed a normal eighteen person group. In total,

there were thirty one people and together, they are the small advance party.

Chairman Zheng, the leaders of the school, Meng Bo and other teachers, Jade, Lei Rui and the other students felt that their hands were covered in cold sweat as they watched on.

The first time the green monsters attacked, everyone had frantically run for their lives. At this moment, the group could calm themselves down as they looked at the group of people who were about to engage in a life and death struggle with the monsters. They were experiencing a myriad of emotions ranging from nervousness, fear, excitement and other complicated feelings.

“Rumble! Rumble!”

The green monsters outside continued to pummel the metal gate and the youth with the crew cut hair hurriedly removed the lock as he pushed the door outwards.

“Bang!”

The small door by the side of the large metal gate had opened.

Chapter 7: Towards The Forest

Everyone felt their hearts instinctively tightened, even Su Yu who had killed four of the green monsters was also experiencing this as his left hand involuntarily clenched down hard on the wooden club and on the back of his left hand, three small black scales appeared.

Qin Jia Gui grit his teeth as he took the lead and rushed forward, he was closely followed by Zhang Zhong Mou and another student who also had the strange energy, thereafter Su Yu followed closely behind.....

The six green monsters saw that there were humans rushing over and stopped hammering the metal gate as they tightly gripped their wooden clubs and headed for the group, charging out as they wielded their clubs while making shrill cries.

“Bang!”

Qin Jia Gui raised the wooden club in his right hand as an iron-like speck appeared on the back of his hand and his wooden club smashed into one of the green monsters wooden clubs. Both sides made a grunting noise as they retreated.

“Bang!”

Zhang Zhong Mou grunted as he wielded his club, his face changed as both his arms violently trembled before the wooden club was knocked flying from his hands and his body was sent

tumbling to the ground.

Su Yu who was following closely behind was stunned, previously Zhang Zhong Mou had already killed a green monster before and should not be weaker than the green monster, why would it turn out like this.....

There was no time to think as the other green monsters rushed up, the other student who was with Zhang Zhong Mou had been affected by his fall and was flustered, although he had the strange energy and managed to block one of the green monster's wooden clubs, he was smashed in the chest by another green monster.

Immediately blood was spat from his mouth as the onlookers from behind the metal gate gasped in shock.

One of the female students seemed to be frenzied as she rushed forward while shouting: "Ye Xuan!"

A few people reacted and managed to hold the girl back as someone shouting: "Lin Xiao, don't be rash! Nothing will happen to Ye Xuan!" The scene immediately became chaotic.

"Attack! Don't be afraid!" Someone madly shouted from the back.

Su Yu's right arm was immobile and initially he did not plan to rush forward. Based on his conjecture, six green monsters versus the thirteen of them who had strange energy, it should have been

easy for them to deal with and the majority of the people had similar thoughts as him.

However, the situation now was clearly contrary to their expectations. The speed of the green monsters was slightly faster than them and the small door by the side of the metal gate was too small, a single person could easily walk out but two people had to squeeze to get out. As everyone was urgently rushing out, three people were stuck at the door and this delayed the group by a few seconds.

In these short seconds, the people at the back did not manage to rush out in time while Zhang Zhong Mou had fallen to the ground and the student called Ye Xuan had been smashed on the chest and also fallen on the ground. Because of this, only Qin Jia Gui and Su Yu were left to face against six of these green monsters.

“Jia Gui!”

“Su Yu!”

From behind the metal gate the indistinct shouts of people could be heard as the situation became very critical. Su Yu let out a low growl as he saw a green monster attempting to smash the fallen Zhang Zhong Mou, he had no time to think as he smashed heavily.

They did not undergo professional training and only knew a few ways to strike and attack, the basics such as the simplest wielding then clobbering. It was fortunate that these green monsters were not experienced hunters and were just as clumsy as them.

Both sides were of similar calibre and this enabled Su Yu to make use of the frightening strange energy.

Having absorbed the crystals from four green monsters, the back of his left hand now had three black scales. Su Yu did not know what these black scales were for but he knew that currently the strength in his left arm was insanely strong and with a smack of his club, he managed to send the green monster that was planning to attack Zhang Zhong Mou flying into the air.

“Bang!”

The green monster shrieked as it tumbled away, people in the distance gasped in shock as Su Yu rushed into the pack of green monsters and continued his onslaught with his club.

This time his wooden club was met with one of the green monster’s wooden clubs, the green monster’s club was unable to block Su Yu’s club and was knocked backwards by the frightening impact as it rebounded and came smashing towards its own head.

“Booosh!”

The green monster’s brain was squashed as it swayed before falling to the ground, a black crystal flew out from its head and turned into a streak of black light which disappeared into Su Yu’s left* hand.

[T/N*: The raws put right instead, should be a typo]

By the side, Qin Jia Gui grunted and Su Yu looked over to see him tumbling to the ground, thereafter an intense pain could be felt in his right shoulder as he let out a miserable scream, this moment of distraction caused his right shoulder to suffer a club as blood and flesh flew and it seemed to be thoroughly broken.

“Aaahhh!”

Su Yu madly shouted as he reversed his left arm, throwing the wooden club which heavily slammed into the chest of the green monster which had just attacked him.

The crisp sound of breaking bone could be heard as the explosive force from Su Yu’s throw caused the green monster to retreat tens of steps before falling to the ground. Another flash of black light came from the body as it disappeared into Su Yu’s left hand.

Although he had consecutively absorbed two crystals, the fourth scale did not appear and the strength of his strange energy did not seem to increase by much. It seemed that the more one killed, the less effective it would be.

Even with the consecutive kills of two green monsters, Su Yu was still in a very dangerous situation. Three green monsters were surrounding him and he was currently without a weapon.

“Su Yu!” From behind the metal gate, Jade rushed forward and

grabbed the door post tightly. Anyone could see that Su Yu was in grave danger and could lose his life at any moment, half his body was already stained in red due to the wound on his right shoulder.

“Damn!” Su Yu grit his teeth as the energy within his left arm circulated, instinctively shooting out and blocking the strike from a wooden club. His left arm felt intense pain as though it was broken, but contrary to expectations, his left arm had managed to send the wooden club flying away and although there was an intense pain, his left arm was not hurt.

Su Yu’s left arm quickly snaked around the green monster’s neck as he squeezed, the frightening strength exploded and a crisp “Crack!” could be heard as blood spurted from the green monsters mouth, its neck had been broken.

Finally, the teachers and students who had the strange energy within them rushed forward one after the other as they surrounded the remaining green monsters.

Several sounds of shrieking and grunting could be heard as a student fell in retreat, while another green monster had been taken care of by someone.

When Su Yu finally pushed aside the green monster whose neck he had snapped, the other green monsters were already taken care of.

The people who were participating in the advance party including the eighteen normal people were all gathered and as they

saw the bloody scene before their eyes their hands broke out in cold sweat.

Six green monsters were killed but in their group one student with the strange energy had been killed. That student was Ye Xuan and at this moment the tragic cries of somebody could be heard. A female student collapsed onto the corpse as she cried bitterly, it was clear that this girl called Lin Xiao was the girlfriend of Ye Xuan.

Feelings of grief filled the atmosphere.

Su Yu's right shoulder was almost smashed to bits while Qin Jia Gui's left arm had been injured. Although Zhang Zhong Mou had fallen to the ground, he managed to avoid any injuries.

Amongst them, Su Yu's performance was eye-catching and although he had been injured, he had still managed to kill three of the green monsters all on his own. If it was not for the brave performance by Su Yu, it was likely that Qin Jia Gui and Zhang Zhong Mou who had rushed to the front would have lost their lives.

Su Yu looked at the back of his left hand as the fourth scale had finally emerged, an unspeakably satisfying feeling surged within his heart.

Because of the injuries, the group remained to bandage the areas that were affected. Thereafter, besides the student that died, the remaining thirty bore the hopes of the thousand over people as

they walked forward into the unknown forest.

The small door by the metal gate was once again tightly locked and they could only patiently wait for the return of the group two days later. Of the thirty one people, one person had already met with an unfortunate death upon exiting the school grounds, two days later, how many of the thirty would be left alive?

Everyone had gloomy expressions as their hearts were heavy like lead.

“Su Yu, you must come back safely.” Jade thought to herself as her hands tightly held onto the metal pillars of the metal gate as she gazed at Su Yu and the group of thirty leaving.

Although Su Yu’s right shoulder had been bandaged simply, it was hurting a lot and along the way his face was frowning as beads of perspiration could be seen.

Su Yu would have long fainted from the pain but thanks to the strange energy from his left arm that seemed to have a miraculous effect, it not only helped his injuries recover faster but also lessened the pain.

Outside the school was a forest thick with vegetation. This forest seemed endless and one could only decide on a direction and advance forward, hoping to either walk out of the forest, meet up with other rescue teams or groups or at worst find some necessary food.

The amount of food that all the people in the school required was a staggering amount.

Because of the injury to his right shoulder, Su Yu's right arm was firmly set in place and Zhang Zhong Mou helped to carry his backpack as he closely followed by Su Yu's side.

Su Yu thought of a few matters as he softly questioned: "Zhong Mou, didn't you also kill a green monster? You should have some strange energy within you as well. Earlier when you fought with the green monster why did it seem as though your strength was inferior to it?"

Logically speaking, after absorbing a black crystal from the green monster, one's strength should improve to the point where they could match the green monster.

Zhang Zhong Mou touched the side of his face that was bandaged as he said in a weird voice: "My..... my strange energy..... entered here."

Su Yu was stumped for words.

Shuffling sounds

At the same time, the thirty people were suddenly surrounded in the blink of an eye.

Chapter 8: The Strength Of Ma Zi Ye

Within the forest, tall trees reached to the sky, their branches and leaves were thick as they shrouded the sunlight, causing the entire area to seem very dark.

The sky was covered densely with clouds, a depressing atmosphere and an unspeakable oppressiveness overcame them. In the gaps of the trunks of each and every large tree were even taller weeds and shrubs of all sorts that were at least the height of humans.

Su Yu, Zhang Zhong Mou, Qin Jia Gui, Ning Yan, Ma Zi Ye and the other people held their weapons as they forced their way through the thick vegetation, painstakingly moving into the depths of the forest. They had only gone forward a few hundred metres when sounds of “shuffling” could be heard in their surroundings.

Su Yu and the group immediately halted their steps as from the surrounding weeds that were as tall as humans, appeared a group of green monsters that surrounded them in no time.

“Aaahh!” Someone lost their composure as they screamed, the thirty people felt their hearts palpitate. With so many of the green monsters, anyone would be frightened.

From a glance, Su Yu could tell that there were over ten of these green monsters and the monsters did not give them any time to formulate a plan as they let out shrill cries and attacked from all

sides.

“There are only fifteen of them, half our numbers. There’s nothing to be afraid of.” Suddenly, a girl’s indifferent voice could be heard. Thereafter, Su Yu saw Ma Zi Ye who was from the department of foreign languages rush forward first.

Of the twelve special energy users besides Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye had killed the most green monsters. It was said that her family had opened a martial arts dojo and her martial arts skills were quite considerable.

Su Yu saw her shooting forward like an arrow, her stance was very different from a normal person’s movements.

Without much time to consider, the green monsters were already upon them. Under the dire circumstances, Su Yu could only ignore the burning pain in his shoulder as he wielded his club and swung it towards one of the green monsters.

On the back of his hand, four black scales appeared and the strange energy within his left hand surged. Su Yu’s current strength was now close to four times that of a normal green monster and this club that struck forth immediately slammed into the attacking green monster for well over ten steps back before it fell on its butt to the ground.

Even the green monster which was rather dim witted with its ugly face currently showed an expression of astonishment.

“Aaahhh!”

From another side, two miserable shrieks could be heard and Su Yu could not resist to look over. Two people were planted on the ground, their bodies were being bashed by wooden clubs as flesh and blood flew about, it was unlikely that they would live.

Qin Jia Gui yelled loudly as his hands gripped the wooden club tightly as he swung it and smacked a green monster.

“Bang!”

Both sides flew back as their strengths were similarly matched.

Another tall bloke saw the opportunity and used a club to viciously bash the back of the green monsters head.

The green monster shrieked in pain as it retaliated by doing a backhand sweep as it smashed the club into the fellow.

This tall and big bloke was the school's sports teacher and he was fit but after suffering from the green creature's blow, his sternum broke as his chest caved inwards, blood could be seen flowing from his mouth, nose and ears.

He opened his mouth and backed away several steps as he seemed like he wanted to say something but before he could do so, another green monster slammed a wooden club to the back of his head as blood and brain matter flew everywhere, killing him instantly.

Su Yu had just taken care of one of the green monsters when he turned his head to see this gruesome scene. His heart felt miserable.

This was the sports teacher that had always taught them and he had a very charming personality and always joked with the guys without any airs of a teacher. Although the two could not be considered as having a close relationship, they were very familiar with each other.

Seeing him die such a gruesome death, Su Yu instinctively stepped forward and used his club to madly pummel at the green monster.

The green monster brandished his club to block but did not expect that its own club would actually be knocked out of its hands and thereafter Su Yu continued to rain down blows on its head and body as it died in a more gruesome manner than the sports teacher.

The other green monster that had been knocked into the air by Su Yu was struggling to get back up but had been surrounded by two students holding baseball bats and even though these two people did not have any strange energy within them, they madly swung their baseball bats at the fallen green monster as green juices sprayed and it was only a short while before one of the students looked at his right hand and saw a strange black speck appear on the back of his hand.

The green monster on the ground had already been smashed to death by the two of them and the final killing blow belonged to

this particular student. The black crystal from the green monster's body had then been absorbed by his right hand and this student had also become one of the special energy users.

Fresh blood was flying everywhere as miserable shrieks continued to resound, these sounds were from both students and teachers alike as well as the green monsters as they engaged in this bloody battle. People and green monsters continued to fall to the ground.

Qin Jia Gui suddenly shouted madly as the wooden club in his hand collided with that of a green monster and both clubs flew into the air as their two bodies met head-on.

“Die!” Qin Jia Gui exclaimed as his right arm wrapped around the green monster's neck in a stranglehold while the green monster's claws ripped into his chest causing fresh blood to flow as he loudly howled.

The strange energy in his right arm began to surge as his strength became greater and greater and finally with a “Crack!” the green monster's neck had finally been snapped.

Another green monster was smashed by Su Yu as it flew through the air like a withered grass. From the day before, till now, more than ten of these green monsters had been killed by Su Yu and he was slowly gaining experience on how to deal with these monsters.

He now had several times the strength of these green monsters and these fearsome group of green monsters suddenly seemed

weak to Su Yu.

On the back of his left hand, the fifth black scale had already appeared and half of the fifteen green monsters were already dead. Su Yu's wooden club continued to strike and collided with the club of another green monster, utilising his strength that was now several times that of the green monster, he easily caused the web between the thumb and forefinger of the green monster to tear resulting in the wooden club flying away as he rushed forward at the retreating enemy and struck again, causing the enemy's head to split apart as blood and brain matter burst out.

These series of actions took barely one to two seconds of work and a green monster had already been eliminated.

Unknowingly, the others stopped their actions as they all stared at Su Yu who had his right arm in a cast before his chest while he used a single left hand to rush into the pack of green monsters and seemed to be a tiger amongst sheep as he slaughtered.

A delicate shout roused the attention of the group as they saw Ma Zi Ye sweep her leg and kick towards the green monster's body. The strength behind this leg was extremely terrifying as the green monster shrieked and its body heavily tumbled away.

Qin Jia Gui had just snapped the neck of a green monster and felt the strange energy within his right arm grow even stronger. On the back of his right hand, the piece of scale that had an iron-like scale lustre became the size of a fingernail and after seeing Ma Zi Ye's performance he muttered: "So her strange energy gathers to her right leg....."

Chapter 9: Dispute

After Su Yu killed the final green monster with the wooden club in his hand dripping with green juice, he turned his head and saw the aftermath of all the slain monsters. On the other hand, the humans had lost four people and there were seven injured that were covered with cuts and wounds.

On his own, Su Yu had taken care of seven green monsters, he was the undisputed champion. The others had expressions of shock, even Ning Yan, who had never had any contact with Su Yu in the past, could not help but re-evaluate him and as she took a quick look at him.

“Poof” Zhang Zhong Mou sat on the ground as he took a cigarette out from his shirt pocket, using his hands that were stained with green juices to clamp it as he inhaled deeply.

Before him lay a green monster whose skull was cleanly smashed open like a watermelon, a wooden club was still stuck there and it was clear that this belonged to Zhang Zhong Mou, he had just killed another green monster.

“Brother, want a cigarette?” Zhang Zhong Mou exhaled smoke while shouting at Su Yu.

Su Yu shook his head as he slowly walked over.

Although he had just killed seven of the green monsters and the strange energy within him had become much stronger to the

extent that the injuries on his body were healing rapidly, Su Yu was not elated in the slightest.

Four more people had died and the gruesome death of the familiar sports teacher before his eyes made his heart quiver.

“What should we do with their bodies?” A tall stout student with a crew cut hair questioned as he took a bottle of mineral water out from his backpack to drink before wiping his mouth.

The battle earlier had not lasted long and although it could be considered a big victory, many people had been injured as they sat on the ground nursing their wounds as they took the opportunity to rest. A few of them had killed their first green monster and had become special energy users, at this moment their faces were filled with joy and excitement as they felt the strange energy fluctuations within their body.

A male of around thirty years of age who wore a guard uniform had a solemn expression on his face as he looked to the sky and said: “In this place, no one knows what may happen in the future. What’s most important for us is to find a supply of food as well as a rescue team. Time is of the essence and these bodies..... we can only leave them here.”

Qin Jia Gui had been injured quite heavily from the battle earlier as his chest was covered with his own blood, a student was helping him dress his wound when he heard the words spoken by the guard as he lifted his head and said: “How can we do that? If we leave them here they’ll be eaten by those green monsters. This..... This is not the way!” Suddenly clenching his fists he stood up.

This school guard frowned as he said: “Then do we have to dig holes to bury them? You must remember that we only have two days worth of rations and simply don’t have enough time to deal with these bodies.....”

Qin Jia Gui stared at him and replied: “Have you ever thought that maybe..... maybe if you or me were to die here..... Would you want your body to be eaten by these monsters?”

The school guard felt anger as he shouted: “What are you saying! Are you cursing me?” As he tightly clenched down on the police baton in his hand.

The two people had suddenly gotten into an argument as everyone’s gazes were attracted by the commotion. Zhang Zhong Mou hurried walked between them as he laughed and said: “Take a cigarette? Come, one stick per person. What’s there to quarrel about?”

The school guard coldly pushed aside Zhang Zhong Mou’s hand as he stared at Qin Jia Gui who had not cowered in the slightest: “Little kid, could it be that your parents didn’t teach you how to respect your elders? What I propose to do is for the benefit of everyone. You better remember that there are still over a thousand people waiting for our news. Don’t tell me that we have to waste our time on such matters?”

Qin Jia Gui said in a heavy voice: “You don’t even respect the dead, how can I respect you?”

“You!” The school guard was incensed as he shouted and wanted to get physical.

Su Yu who had been twirling his hair as though he were thinking about something noticed that things were started to go downhill as he hurriedly walked forward to block him.

With the appearance of Su Yu, the school guard instinctively took in a deep breath and did not continue with the whipping of his baton.

Since the beginning of these strange events, Su Yu’s performance had been too outstanding and unknowingly everyone revered him in their hearts, even the school guard was not an exception.

“I won’t speak about major principles, it’s only..... we’re all gathered here with the same goal. What both of you said does make sense. The ground here is simply too firm and we don’t have any tools. If we want to dig a big hole it would take up at least half a day and we really don’t have the time to tarry here. How about.....”

Su Yu softly muttered to himself while pinching his hair before continuing: “How about we place these bodies atop the tree branches? This would prevent the green monsters from desecrating their bodies and once we find the rescue team we can come back and give them a proper burial.”

“If it doesn’t waste too much time I don’t have any opinion.” The

school guard heard that it was only shifting the bodies onto the trees and agreed because the time needed for this was very minimal.

Qin Jia Gui heard Su Yu's words and knew that he was being very realistic. Under their current circumstances without any digging tools, wanting to dig a large hole that could fit a few people would certainly take up at least half a day. They only had two days and a large part of the morning was already gone. It could be said that time was really limited.

Su Yu meant what he said as Zhang Zhong Mou, Qin Jia Gui and a few others began to lift the bodies as they prepared to bring them atop the trees to prevent them from being desecrated.

"Let me help too." The tall and stout youth with the crew cut hair chimed.

Zhang Zhong Mou asked for his name and found out that he was one year their senior and was called Zhao Shi Chang.

"Once we handle the bodies let's get a move on." The school guard continued. The scent of blood here was very strong and he was not willing to tarry here any longer than necessary.

In no time at all the four bodies were placed on the branches of the tall trees and Zhang Zhong Mou leapt off a branch to land on the ground.

"Okay, everyone let's move out." This school guard saw that everyone was younger than him and subconsciously saw himself as

the leader as he wanted to properly lead the group.

Zhang Zhong Mou cast a sidelong glance at him and it was clear that he was not very convinced by his leadership as he lazily said: “Is everybody well rested?”

The school guard glared at him as though he wanted to say something but suddenly felt something as he looked to the side. Su Yu had realised that something was amiss earlier than him as his left hand clenched the wooden club and stood up.

“Rustling”

Soft sounds could be heard transmitting from the other side in the shrubs as the group furtively looked over. The shrubs were parted and green monster could be seen walked out.

Although it was also a green monster, the green monster before them was clearly different from the ones that they had met.

Chapter 10: The Fearsome Large Green Monster

Previously the green monsters they met were had short builds that were comparable to youths that were thirteen to fourteen years of age. The green monster before them was at least 1.8 metres tall and even compared to the average person it could be considered large. Its green muscles swelled and thick black fur could be seen, holding nothing in its hands instead it had two claws that were at least seven to eight centimetres long, flashing with a cold black light.

“Another monster has come.” The group were quick to react as they stood up hastily while the two nearest to the monster immediately attacked it from the left and right.

By now everybody knew that killing the green monsters would cause them to become stronger and although the green monster before them was big, it was alone and did not seem frightening. They had just each killed a green monster and gained the strength of the strange energy, they were now fighting to be the first to kill the green monster.

“Be careful.” Su Yu instinctively felt that something was not right as the big green monster before them gave him a totally different feeling and pressure.

“Die!” The person who attacked from the left used both hands as he wielded the wooden club and smashed it towards the big green monster’s head.

The person on the right was more quick witted as he bent down and aiming for the monster's leg. He estimated that going for the head first would simply be too difficult and if his club managed to hit, it would cause the monster to stumble to the ground and he would definitely be able to take the chance to end its life.

This big green monster stared at the corpses of the green monsters that littered the ground and its eyes seemed to glow with a faint red light as it slowly walked forward. In the blink of an eye, it had already clashed with the two people as both its hands flickered out.

“Sssiii”

This sounds was extremely strange as though someone were using brute force to rip a piece of cowhide or taking a knife to slice through thick meat.

The two people that attacked, shrieked as their bodies were sent flying through the air as gurgling sounds could be heard from their mouths yet no sound came out, only blood could be seen gushing from their necks.

In the short engage, the jet black claws on the hand of the big monster were like two small knives as it completely cut through the necks of the two people

Their windpipes were severed and fresh blood spurted out like a fountain, attempts to breathe created gurgling noises as their

bodies trembled uncontrollably. It was only a short while before the movements ceased, they were already dead.

Su Yu, Zhang Zhong Mou, Qin Jia Gui, Ma Zi Ye, Zhao Shi Chang and the others had a sharp intake of cold air.

This big green monster suddenly appeared and in the blink of an eye it had already killed two people, the group were dazed for half a second before they finally recovered.

“Aaahhhh!” Someone shouted as he retreated, his heart was filled with terror. Even more people began to rush forward as they thought to make use of the advantage of numbers to surround the monster and attack it.

A green flash could be seen as the monster disappeared from the vision of the group. Thereafter, another miserable shriek could be heard as the group looked over in horror, the school guard who had almost fought with Qin Jia Gui was currently lifted into the air as the monster clamped down onto his arm and leg with its hands.

This school guard was still confused as he felt everything go blurry as a pain shot through his arm and leg before the sky and ground seemed to spin and his body was lifted into the air by the monster.

When he realised what was going on, the school guard shouted frantically: “Save me! I can’t die! I have a kid that is barely three years old. He needs me, save me!” His face was contorted as madness and fear could be seen on it. He struggled violently but

felt as though his arm and leg were clamped by steel that weighed several thousand catty, simply immovable.

“Chiii”

Fresh blood spurted and the school guard’s crazy shouting turned into miserable shrieks as his arm was violently crushed by the green monster.

“Stop!” Su Yu exclaimed as his left hand wielded the wooden club. After a moment of daze, he was the first to recover as he rushed forward.

A figure flashed by him, Ma Zi Ye’s strange energy was gathered in her right leg and her speed was faster than his as she overtook him and hurled the wooden club towards the green monster.

Using the wooden club to distract the enemy, Ma Zi Ye’s body twisted as her leg kicked out and her body was oblique to the ground as her leg was like a whip as it shot forth.

This was precisely the side snap kick technique within Wushu, with the current strength of her leg, if the monster were to be kicked by her it would certainly fall to the ground.

At this point, Su Yu was only half a second behind her.

Close behind him were Lin Gui Jia, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and the others who had strange energies within their bodies

as they all rushed forward.

Although there were some conflicts between Qin Jia Gui and the school guard earlier, it was not the time for such petty grievances.

This monster was simply too strong and if the group did not work together, they would be defeated individually and everyone might eventually end up dead.

This big green monster stood at its original location as it held on to the broken arm of the school guard who was howling and suddenly used him like a weapon as he swung the school guard towards the sweeping kick of Ma Zi Ye.

Ma Zi Ye grunted, the strength and speed of the whipping leg was too great and she did not have the time to stop as the school guard was squarely hit. He moaned as blood flew from his mouth and two figures fell.

Another green flash could be seen as the green monster moved again, it followed the school guard which it had tossed and swept down with a single claw.

“Chiii”

This claw entered into the back of the school guard as fresh blood splashed out. The school guard let out a miserable cry as a hole was pierced through his body, without affecting the momentum in the slightest, the claw continued and pierced through Ma Zi Ye’s body

as well, causing the two people to be skewered on its arm.

Su Yu's heart was violently trembling as he grew frantic, he could not catch up and he howled as the black scales on the back of his left hand appeared as he flung the wooden club.

Using all his force, the wooden club made a "Sssiii" noise in the air as the frightening strength caused the wooden club to fly forward at an incredible speed.

Hearing the weird and piercing noises through the air, the first change in expression appeared as it turned its head but was too slow to dodge.

"Bang!"

The wooden club had heavily smashed into its back.

The force of the wooden club was simply too frightening and even the green monster which was so strong let out a howl as the sound of bones breaking within its body could be heard and its body was sent sprawling to the ground.

"Attack!" The others saw the chance and howled as they pounced.

Su Yu had used too much force in his previous attack and a tearing pain could be distinctly felt at his chest region. He paused at his initial position as he took in a big breath before recovering

and picking up his wooden club to attack.

The green monster had suffered a blow from Su Yu's club and heavily tumbled to the ground, the school guard's body fell to the ground as a horrifying large hole could be seen within where even the heart was exposed. It was clear that he would not live for much longer.

His eyes were showing their whites as his only arm trembled, he seemed to want to say something before he died as he muttered: "Hao..... Dearest Hao..... Daddy..... Daddy..... Will be coming home now..... to accompany you..... Daddy will get out of..... the forest..... Immediately..... get..... home....."

Finally his voice became silent as his hand tightly held onto a shrub as though he wanted to use it to stand but his life had already left him behind forever.

Chapter 11: Tragic

Although Ma Zi Ye escaped having her chest pierced, she had fallen heavily to the ground and a big portion of her clothes had been ripped. A half second later, she would have been skewered through the chest and stomach, it was certainly a very close shave.

When she saw the tear in her clothes, her charming face had already lost all colour and her legs felt weak. This was the first time that she had felt terror that seemed to enter her bones.

The big green monster fell heavily, the club that was tossed by Su Yu caused it to be injured and when it climbed back up, green blood could be seen trickling from its mouth.

Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Zhang Zhong Mou and others attacked from all directions. Zhang Zhong Mou followed Su Yu's example as he gripped his wooden club and hurled it.

The ground was littered with the corpses of green monsters and wooden clubs could be seen everywhere.

The lights within the eyes of the big green monster seemed to gradually grow brighter as the ugly green face frowned as though its face was twisted. It seemed to be angry now.

A low pitched growl could be heard from its mouth, totally different from the shrill voices of the smaller green monsters but made their hairs stand on end.

With a howl, its claws swept and the two wooden clubs that were sent flying towards it by Zhang Zhong Mou were knocked aside as its body pounced.

“Kaboom!”

Qin Jia Gui shouted madly as fresh blood spewed from his mouth, his body was like a broken kite as it flew away and the crisp sound of bone breaking could be heard.

A single blow from the green monster had sent Qin Jia Gui flying away, a wave of its hand and it grabbed the wooden club that was being smashed towards it, causing both party’s hands to tremble.

The green monster curled its lips, exposing its fanged teeth like an evil demon that was laughing as it swiped down with its claws, ripping the skull of a person as blood and brain matter oozed out.

At the same time, its back was heavily smashed by a wooden club that was wielded by Zhao Shi Chang.

The green monster howled as it stamped its feet, causing the ground to shake. It actually did not bother about Zhao Shi Chang who had backstabbed him but rather dashed to the other side as both its claw flew out “Chiii”, the claws entered into a person’s stomach as it lifted him into the air before heavily tossing it at Su Yu who was rushing over.

Amongst the group, the green monster paid closest attention to Su Yu.

The wooden club that Su Yu had tossed earlier made it feel the threat of death for the first time, amongst everyone, the one that made it feel trepidation and hatred was none other than Su Yu.

The strength of the green monster was extremely frightening and the sound created from tossing this person was astonishing. Su Yu knew that if this person were to smash on the ground, he would certainly die but Su Yu had no other choice as he prostrated himself on the ground to dodge.

“Xiuuuuuu”

This person flew past Su Yu’s head while he was prone on the ground, and fell heavily on the ground. He immediately became a mess of meat from the frightening impact, truly dying in a really gruesome way.

Su Yu who was prone on the ground, felt a cold wind assail his back as he immediately retaliated with his left hand, sending the wooden club within it madly forward. He knew that the green monster must have pounced as it threw the man, if he were slower by just half a second he would end up with the same grisly end.

“Bang!”

Su Yu felt his left hand tremble as the wooden club seemed to

have hit something. Looking up, he was astonished to see that the wooden club was actually held by the green monster's claws.

“ROAR!”

A terrifying hoarse howl could be heard from the green monster's mouth as its claws pulled as the wooden club was being forcefully taken away.

“Grrrrr!”

The green monster simply did not give Su Yu any chance to retaliate as it snatched the wooden club and used it to smash towards him.

With no way to dodge, Su Yu growled as his eyes widened and he lifted his left shoulder to forcefully block.

The frightening blow smashed against Su Yu's left shoulder causing him to shout miserably, “crack crack” sounds of bones fracturing could be heard as it was immediately broken.

“Su Yu!” From behind a crazed shout was heard as Zhang Zhong Mou pounced, he had seen Su Yu in danger as he selflessly rushed forward, his arms stretched out as he tightly hugged the green monster from behind.

“HURRY!” Zhang Zhong Mou shouted fiercely.

The green monster had been suddenly hugged from behind my Zhang Zhong Mou as its body shuddered. It then swept its hand backwards as it aimed for Zhang Zhong Mou's head.

"Zhong Mou!" Su Yu shouted as he attacked, ignoring the intense pain in his right shoulder as he used all his strength to heavily smash at the green monster.

"Bang!"

Su Yu's left fist heavily smashed against the green monster's chest as the green monster's hand clawed at Zhang Zhong Mou's face.

"Chiii"

The bandage covering Zhang Zhong Mou's face was ripped off and Su Yu felt cold, within his mind the images of Zhang Zhong Mou seemed to flash through.

Zhang Zhong Mou and him had been best buddies since primary school and their relationship could be said to be as close as brothers. How could he die? How could he die like this here?

"AAAHHH!" Su Yu suddenly shouted in rage as his fist heavily pummeled, fresh blood splashed everywhere but the green monster continued to grip Zhang Zhong Mou's head as it tossed him aside, its other hand swept as blood sprayed from Su Yu's

chest, its leg then kicked out and sent Su Yu tumbling away.

Within this time, Ma Zi Ye had managed to finally kick the green monster's leg with her side snap kick.

Ma Zi Ye's strange energy was gathered within this right leg and the force was immense, a "snap!" sound could be heard as the green monster howled, its left leg had been broken as its body fell forward.

Zhao Shi Chang crept forward and smashed his wooden club, hitting squarely on the back of the head of the green monster.

Blood splattered as the green monster howled in anger, his claws swept forward as Zhao Shi Chang and Ma Zi Ye were simultaneously sent flying, their bodies had two large wounds that were dripping large amounts of blood.

The green monster continually howled as it held its bent leg, its eyes were blood red as it actually climbed back up, seemingly insane as it attacked.

"Chiiii"

Another person screamed as he failed to dodge and was grabbed. The green monster had a vicious smile as it bit down on the person's neck while using both claws to tear, entering his abdomen and rending the body in two.

Seeing the bloody organs and large intestine sliding out, the

surrounding people screamed in fear as the cruelty of the green monster made them back away, losing their fighting spirit.

In terms of speed, how could they compare to this green monster? In the blink of an eye it had already killed three people and its fourth target was Ning Yan who was currently shocked into a daze as she stood not moving.

Ning Yan had killed a green monster before and thus contained some strange energy within her but she had never expected that the green monster was so vicious as she stood there stunned, staring as the green monster who rushed over, without any response.

“Dodge!” Suddenly, a mad shout could be heard as Ning Yan came to her senses, the person who frantically shouted was precisely Su Yu who had just stood back up.

Chapter 12: Evolution And Mutation

Su Yu's chest had a wound where he had previously been attacked by the green monster. It was fortunate that the wound was not too deep and when he climbed back up he saw the green monster rushing towards Ning Yan. He could not help but yelled as he hurled the wooden club in his hand in a bid to save Ning Yan.

“Siiiiii” The sound of a hissing wind could be heard as the green monster noticed Su Yu while it was howling. Seeing the wooden club flying over and the might and ferociousness of it, It quickly dodged as it feared to take it head on.

The wooden club flew by the green monster's body as Ning Yan suddenly screamed, the club had unfortunately smashed into her right shoulder.

The strength of this toss was immense and Ning Yan screamed in pain, her body was like a broken kite as it flew away.

Su Yu never expected that the club which missed the green monster would actually hit Ning Yan and he was stunned.

The green monster noticed that Su Yu had gotten back up as his body turned and like an evil ghost it once again leapt towards Su Yu.

The bodies of both parties heavily collided as Su Yu's left arm snaked around attempting to wrangle the green monster's neck. The green monster's left leg had been broken by Ma Zi Ye's kick

and in this critical situation it actually snapped with a “Crack!”, causing it to lose its balance as it tumbled together with Su Yu.

Su Yu took the chance to press down on the green monster’s body as he stretched his left arm from the back of the monster and clamped down hard around the green monster’s neck.

A howl continued to resound from the green monster’s mouth as it struggled and attempted to swing Su Yu off its back. Su Yu continued to clamp down tightly with a death grasp, it wanted to reach behind to retaliate and claw at Su Yu but could not find the strength to do so.

Black scales appeared on the back of Su Yu’s left arm as the strange energy within exploded, this was a strength that could match four to five of the smaller green goblins but compared to the bigger green monster, it was not inferior in the slightest.

This frightening strength erupted and barely two seconds passed before the green monster’s neck started making brittle sounds of “Pa Pa” like as if beans were exploding. Soon, green blood started to seep out of it’s mouth,nose and ears.

Su Yu seemed unhinged as he continued to press down on the green monster’s body, both his legs were propped on the ground as his left arm continued to grip the neck forcefully. Suddenly, a “Siii” could be heard as green juice splattered, Su Yu had used too much strength and held onto the head of the green monster as he fell to the ground.

The force from the strange energy was simply too frightening as the neck of the green monster, all flesh and bone had been shattered causing Su Yu to carry the head of the green monster as he fell.

“Huff.....Huff.....” Su Yu finally relaxed his left arm as he lay on the ground panting, his heart was beating like thunderous drums.

Everything that just transpired seemed like a bad dream.

A ball of black crystal that was as big as half a fist came floating out from the head of the green monster before transforming into a flash of black light and entered Su Yu’s left hand.

Su Yu who was lying on the floor and panting heavily suddenly felt a burning torrential force surging up his left arm. This torrential force was totally different from the times he had killed the green monster and absorbed the strange energy because it continually swelled within his left hand to the point where it seemed like it wanted to explode out.

Something seemed amiss as Su Yu shouted in agony, his left fist clenched and he heavily threw a punch towards the ground beside him.

“Bang!”

Su Yu suddenly felt as though the fist that he had struck towards the firm ground seemed to be going through mud as the once firm

ground seemed soft, he actually drove his fist in.

After a short stupor, Su Yu hurriedly sat back up as waves of mysterious strange energy flowed from his left hand to his entire body like ripples that expanded out, the pain that was all over his body immediately lessened and the deep wounds could be seen healing at a rapid rate.

Su Yu was in a daze as he felt the earth shattering changes that were occurring within his body. Slowly removing his hand out of the ground, his left hand had thoroughly become covered in black scales and looked like the hand of a monster. With a single thought, five claws that were five centimetres long emitted a faint white light and immediately extended forth, from Su Yu's perception he could tell that these five claws were exceptionally solid and sharp.

“This..... This is.....” Su Yu was shocked as he saw these black scaled claws, feeling the frightening destructive might that was contained within them, he felt that with a simple wave of his hand he could rip through the ground and shatter rocks.

A mysterious and unfathomable feeling filled his heart as he lifted his left hand and looked at the black scaled claws. Circulating the strange energy within, the scales on the back of his hand suddenly twisted and split apart as a jet black eyeball appeared there.

Su Yu was astonished, the eyeball seemed to emit a faint light as it shrouded him within, a string of information flashed through his mind.

Rating: Tier One Dark Iron Warrior

Comprehension: Eye of Perception

Abilities: Rending Claws.

Su Yu was stupefied, a tier one dark iron warrior? Eye of Perception? Rending Claws? What on earth was this?

It was only a short while before he gathered his senses and looked at the back of his hand where the eyeball was currently emitting a faint light. Could this be the Eye of Perception? The five sharp claws that had extended out were clearly the “Rending Claws”, what did the tier one dark iron warrior mean?

In his confusion and puzzlement, Su Yu glanced at the body that was currently beside him. The large green monster was already dead and its head had been torn asunder by Su Yu, dying a tragic death.

With a simple thought, the black eyeball on the back of his hand began to rotate as it seemed to stare at the headless corpse, thereafter a string of information floated through Su Yu’s mind.

Name: Greater Goblin

Information: Low tier beast race

Grade one beast soldier

Likes to use its sharp claws to tear apart its prey

“Greater Goblin? Could the name of that large green monster be Greater Goblin? This “Eye of Perception, could it be that it can reveal the information of other life forms?”

His heart palpitating, Su Yu stood up as the eyeball on the back of his hand rotated, locking onto the body of the smaller green monster as a new string of information entered his mind.

Name: Lesser Goblin

Weapon: Wooden Club

Information: Lowest tier within beast race

Tier zero beast soldier

Likes to use wooden clubs to smash the skulls of its enemies

As expected.....

Su Yu now understood as the “Eye of Perception” continually rotated, soon even the information of Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others had all flashed through his mind.

Without any exception they were all tier zero dark iron warriors with no other information available.

“I understand..... killing these monsters and gaining the strange energy, we will transform into something known as a black iron warrior. I’ve now promoted to Tier one dark iron warrior but they have not promoted and are thus still Tier zero dark iron warrior.”

When Su Yu relaxed his left hand, the strange energy stilled once again and the black scales which covered his left hand disappeared. That eyeball that seemed quite horrifying also disappeared as everything become normal again.

Qin Jia Gui coughed as he climbed back up, with every cough small amounts of blood spat forth. His injuries were not light and it was only the strange energy within his body that allowed him to barely stand himself back up.

Chapter 13: The Exceptional Strange Energy Of Zhang Zhong Mou

The casualties this time around were serious. The amount of casualties that a single 'Greater Goblin' caused actually exceeded that which fifteen of the 'Lesser Goblins' caused.

There were only eighteen people left alive and one amongst them was a normal student who had suffered severe injuries and lay on the ground panting with each breath as blood could be seen flowing from both his nose and mouth. From the looks of it, he would be hard pressed to continue living and certainly had no way to continue on with them.

The others like Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and Ma Zi Ye were also heavily injured but they were fortunate as the strange energy in their bodies reduced the pain and increased their regenerative abilities. Of them, Su Yu's regenerative abilities were the most frightening.

It may have been due to him promoting to a 'Tier one dark iron warrior', waves of strange energy continued to be released through his entire body as they gathered at the injured areas and healed with a speed that could be seen with the naked eye. In a short while, not only had the wound on his chest completely healed, even his initially broken right arm had also began to slowly become mobile again.

Su Yu finally came to his senses after feeling out all of the miraculous energy and immediately rushed to Zhang Zhong Mou's side.

Zhang Zhong Mou had been smashed in the head by the Greater Goblin and based on the strength of the Greater Goblin and the sharpness of its claws, his head would likely have been split open.

When Su Yu noticed him, he realised that the fellow was actually slowly sitting up and the white bandage that covered his face had been torn apart. On his face, there only remained a weird gash but otherwise there was absolutely no other injuries.

“You.....” Su Yu was stunned.

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed as he took out a cigarette and lit it, took a puff as if he knew why Su Yu was in such a daze and said: “I’ve already said, my strange energy is actually within this face..... The skin on my face has become impenetrable by gun or knife.” He had a tone of self ridicule and also helplessness.

Other people’s strange energy were located within their hands or feet, enabling them to wield powerful attacks during battles. With his strange energy located in his face, Zhang Zhong Mou felt very helpless.

Having a strange energy within his face..... The question was how to use this face to kill those green monsters?

Although he was shocked as to why Zhang Zhong Mou’s strange energy was located in his face, he was happy that Zhang Zhong Mou was alright as he breathed a sigh of relief. Su Yu’s left hand patted his shoulder before looked in another direction, hesitating

for a moment before finally walking over.

Ning Yan was currently clutching her right arm and slowly getting up.

Earlier the Greater Goblin had initiated an attack on Ning Yan and Su Yu had thrown him wooden club at it, he did not expect the Greater Goblin to dodge resulting in the club smashing into Ning Yan's right arm.

It was fortunate that Ning Yan's strange energy was located in her right arm, otherwise this club would have been sufficient to turn her arm into meat pulp.

Although it contained strange energy, the force of the club was simply too vicious and Ning Yan still felt that the bone within her right arm had fractured, an intense throbbing pain could be felt as she hugged it and slowly stood up, her face a pasty white.

"Sor..... Sorry, are you alright?" Su Yu finally mustered the courage to walk over and stuttered as he asked in concern.

Ning Yan had always been the goddess of his dreams, the person he had always secretly admired. It was only that Ning Yan was simply too beautiful and her studies were excellent. Within the school, she almost never spoke to Su Yu and he only dared to look at her from afar, a kind of indescribable feeling of inferiority made him frightened of going near her as he only dared to secretly admire from afar.

Ning Yan lightly grit her teeth as she looked at Su Yu without saying a word.

Su Yu never expected that Ning Yan would actually ignore him and the atmosphere became stiff and awkward. It was lucky that Qin Jia Gui and Zhao Shi Chang had walked over as Qin Jia Gui softly asked: “Su Yu, your left hand earlier, what’s going on?”

Earlier when Su Yu killed the Greater Goblin and absorbed the strange energy, his left hand had undergone a transformation and actually had strange claws on it. This was immediately noticed by many of the group and Qin Jia Gui could not contain his curiosity as he came and asked.

Su Yu looked over and even Ma Zi Ye had come over, their eyes filled with curiosity.

The group were not dim-witted and had guessed that with the Greater Goblins fearsome strength, killing it would result in the absorption of a frightening amount of strange energy. Thus they were all very curious about it.

Su Yu did not hide anything as he clenched his left hand, his entire fist was covered with jet black scales that seemed like the hand of a lizard.

Looking at this black scaled hand, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others all did a sharp intake of cold air as they could distinctly feel that there was a frightening strength contained within.

“If I didn’t guess wrongly, killing these monsters will cause us to go through some unfathomable changes. Human’s who have received the strange energy are referred to as ‘Dark iron warriors’ and this is a Greater Goblin while this is a Lesser Goblin.....”

Su Yu passed on the information that he had obtained as well as some conjectures that he had based on the information.

Qin Jia Gui clenched his right fist and on the back of his hand appeared a patch of jet black metal-like speckles as he said: “I understand, if we kill enough of these monsters and collect enough crystals within our bodies, we will continually evolve and gain even stronger abilities. It’s only that our transformations seem to be different, while scales appear on yours, these weird metallic like speckles appear on mine.”

“Not only are the changes that occur to each person different, even the areas which the transformations begin is also different. This dark iron warrior certainly seems interesting.....” Ma Zi Ye suddenly spoke: “This strange energy not only gives us exceptional strength that far exceeds normal humans, it also gives us a shocking regenerative speed..... The wounds that I have suffered have already mostly healed in such a short period of time. This energy is simply too inconceivable. Everyone, what world are we on? Do you think we are still living on earth?”

No one continued speaking, if one admitted that this was not earth, then how would they find the rescue teams, would that not become an impossibility? Everyone wanted to be back home with their families, some people even reminisced about their friends.

The area suddenly became deathly silent.

Su Yu rubbed his hair as he looked at the seven to eight corpses that littered the floor. The sports teacher had died first, causing Su Yu to feel shock and anger. However, upon seeing the floor that was currently full of corpses, he actually felt numb.

A group of thirty one of them had left the school and barely half a day had passed but only eighteen of them remained. Amongst them was one who was severely injured and whether he would be able to live on was still in question.

The sky was still dark as cumulonimbus clouds covered the sky, Zhang Zhong Mou took out his handphone and suddenly said: "It's already 12pm."

The group felt a shudder as they understood the meaning behind his words.

It was already twelve in the afternoon, they had two days worth of time and half a day had officially passed.

Most people in the group had been injured and Ma Zi Ye suggested to rest for a while, and having lunch before moving off. No one had any objections.

Qin Jia Gui looked over at the student with heavy injuries and said: "What should we do about him?" Everyone looked over, he

did not have any strange energy within him and with this severe injury, it was simply impossible for him to continue following them. Would they really have to leave him behind?

Chapter 14: The Knot Within Qin Jia Gui's Heart

The group was solemn as a male in his twenties suddenly chimed: “I’ll send him back to the school.”

This person was a teacher in the school but had only taught there for one year. The group consisted mostly of students and most of the teachers in the school were much older. Currently there were only two teachers surviving in the group and he was one of them.

“Send him back to school?” The people who heard his words stared blankly at him.

The teacher nodded: “It’s good that this area isn’t too far from the school. He has suffered heavy injuries and can no longer carry on, however, we can’t throw him here alone, so I’ll do the job of sending him back.”

Ma Zi Ye suddenly spoke: “Teacher, I think you’re actually scared. Sending him back is but an excuse so you can go back.”

Ma Zi Ye’s question was very direct and this teacher’s face turned red as he had an embarrassed expression. It was clear that Ma Zi Ye had hit the mark with her words.

Su Yu twirled his hair and nodded, showing his approval.

Ma Zi Ye lightly harrumphed as she said: “Who else wants to leave, I think you should all go together. If you are really afraid, staying within the group would do more harm than good.”

The group looked at each other and finally, besides the teacher, another two people stood up as they embarrassingly walked away with their heads down.

The teacher carried the injured student as the four of them left the group and headed back in the direction of the school

In only a short period of time, the remaining people in the group were only fourteen.

Amongst these fourteen people, thirteen were students while one teacher remained. This last teacher was called Lin Shi and taught foreign language, Su Yu and the others had not come into contact with him previously.

Lin Shi looked to be around twenty seven years of age, he wore glasses and appeared cultured. He did not like to talk much but the number of Lesser Goblins that had died to his hands were three, it was only that he did not talk much and was often silent, thus even though he was a teacher no one paid much attention to him.

The fourteen people that had remained were all dark iron warriors who had killed Lesser Goblins before, the group sat down eating and took the chance to rest.

Their time was currently ticking down.

In the group, besides Su Yu, Zhang Zhong Mou, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Ning Yan, Ma Zi Ye and Lin Shi, the others were Hu Ge, Zhang Run Sheng, Wei Zhang Ming, Zhuang Xiao Hua, Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang and Wen Rui.

Sitting down and resting, everyone shared idle gossip as they got to know one another and also tried to forget the earlier events of goriness and oppressiveness.

Qin Jia Gui ate a simple meal of two pieces of bread, after drinking a mouthful of water and recovering some of his strength, he put down his backpack as he began to carry the corpses on the ground.

The gazes of the group all rested on Qin Jia Gui.

Qin Jia Gui seemed to have an extreme respect for bodies, he did not request for anyone to help and using the time where everyone was resting, he wanted to carry the corpses of his comrades atop the trees in the surrounding area to prevent them from being eaten or desecrated by monsters.

Su Yu tousled his hair and did not think further as he stood up to help.

Seeing that Su Yu had moved, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and even Ma Zi Ye as well as Lin Shi the teacher who did not

talk much all stood up to help.

Many of the people had eyes filled with curiosity as they felt that Qin Jia Gui's actions were superfluous, the road ahead was filled with danger and they themselves did not know when they would die. Under such circumstances, if one had time it would be best spent resting to recover the body's energy. Using this precious time to take care of these bodies was simply not worth it.

Qin Jia Gui lifted the corpse of the school guard, seeing the wild grass firmly clasped within his only hand, the scene just before he died floated through Qin Jia Gui's mind as he suddenly said: "He has a three year old kid."

Su Yu who was by his side heard this and nodded: "That's right, I think he's called Hao Er."

Everyone had heard the mad shouting of the school guard before he died but no one had the ability to save him in time.

Su Yu was watching when Qin Jia Gui lifted the corpse of the school guard, thinking back to when Qin Jia Gui had gotten into an argument with the school guard over the burying of bodies due to his vehement objections. Now it was actually the school guard's turn to have his body carried onto the treetops by Qin Jia Gui, this made Su Yu feel a weird feeling swell in his heart.

Seeing the respectful and solemn attitude with which Qin Jia Gui handled the corpses, Su Yu was curious as he scratched his head, feeling that something was unnatural.

Qin Jia Gui looked Su Yu in the eye as though he knew what Su Yu was thinking as he softly said: “Su Yu, do you feel that I’m making mountain out of a molehill?”

Su Yu shook his head as he thought for a moment before replying: “Your methods aren’t wrong, it’s just that right now..... it’s a very critical juncture.....”

“I understand your meaning.” Qin Jia Gui softly sighed before faintly continuing: “You should know that my dad died very early right.”

Su Yu was stunned before he grunted in response. Although they were not very close back in university days, he had known that Qin Jia Gui lived with a single parent and had heard that his father had passed away very young.

Qin Jia Gui’s face became darker as he slowly said in a low voice: “When I was young and living in the village, my father was a farmer and although the family was very poor, he treated me very well. During that period, my father would plant crops in the day and go out secretly at night into the forest to fell trees for money. Although this was against the law..... many people in our village also did this sort of thing.”

Having said this, there was a bitter smile that appeared on Qin Jia Gui’s face as he continued: “Finally one day something happened. When my mother and I received the news and rushed over, my father..... my father’s corpses had already been

desecrated.....”

Qin Jia Gui’s fists were tightly clenched and on the back of his right hand the metal speckles emerged.

Su Yu stared blankly as he said: “Your father.....”

“He met with a wolf pack, by the time we realised, his body was already mostly eaten by the wolves..... I simply couldn’t believe..... That..... That pile of messed up meat..... was actually my father who had always treated me with such kindness!”

Qin Jia Gui grit his teeth as he gave a low howl: “Su Yu do you understand, these corpses..... if we do not handle them properly, they may..... they may end up being desecrated to the point of being unrecognisable. Have you thought of the heart of the dead? Although they are already dead, but..... but once people die, they will still have their spirits and will watch what we do from up above.”

Su Yu was stunned, he had never expected that Qin Jia Gui would have experienced something so traumatic. So that was the reason why Qin Jia Gui had such a solemn respect for corpses, he was afraid that the monsters would eat or desecrate them and all this stemmed from the experience of his father meeting such an outcome.

“Maybe..... Maybe I can’t do anything..... even myself, I don’t know when I will.....” Qin Jia Gui lifted his head to look at the tops of the trees that currently had corpses as a distressed

expression appeared on his face.

Chapter 15: The Might Of The Black Scaled Hand

Su Yu did not know what to say as he raised his hand and patted Qin Jia Gui's shoulder, thereafter, he rubbed the hair on the back of his head before saying: "I believe that if you don't despair you will definitely find a way through. We will definitely be alright, everyone's sacrifice will not be in vain. We will definitely find food and rescue team. Don't forget, your girlfriend is still waiting for you back in the school."

Hearing Su Yu mention his girlfriend, Qin Jia Gui's despondent mood seemed to uplift as he said: "You're right, I've already made a promise with Ni Ping that I would safely make it back to the school, I'll definitely be alright."

Hearing him mention a promise, Su Yu could not help but think back to a similar arrangement between him and Jade. Thinking of Jade, a smile floated onto Su Yu's face as he muttered while seeming to speak to Qin Jia Gui: "That's right, we will go back. The words that I've promised to that little girl, I can't go back on them. Otherwise..... she will scold me again....."

Suddenly, a miserable shriek could be heard from a distance.

Everyone had a shocked expression as they looked over in the direction of the noise, that was precisely where the teacher who was carrying the injured student as well as the other two people were walking in.

Thereafter, more miserable shrieks could be heard as the group stood up, after the round of miserable shrieks everything became silent once again.

Everyone looked at each other in dismay.

Half a minute later, the third year student Hu Ge shouted: “It’s over, those four people must have been intercepted by monsters and killed.” The tone of his voice seemed to carry schadenfreude as well as an indescribable fear.

Su Yu glanced at him before slowly sitting down, his heart was currently feeling heavy.

The group’s emotions were heavy as they knew that Hu Ge’s guess was likely correct. The four people who had left the group to return the school must have encountered danger or met with a life-threatening mishap.

No one suggested to head back and check out the situation, so many people had died and everyone’s mental state was somewhat numb to people dying.

Even Qin Jia Gui did not suggest to head back and deal with the bodies, time was of the essence and they did not have time to tarry any longer, nor did they have time to head back.

It seemed that the group came to the same conclusion as everyone had a tacit understanding and stood up one after the other, carrying their backpacks and picking up their weapons.

It was time to move out.

No one spoke as they naturally headed off in the direction they had decided upon earlier. The two people leading the group were Hu Ge and Zhang Run Sheng, they were year three students and members of the school's soccer team. Their bodies were very sturdy and since yesterday, they had each killed two Lesser Goblins. Although this was not as impressive as the amount that Su Yu killed, it was still quite decent.

Hu Ge and Zhang Run Sheng each held wooden clubs as they continually brushed aside the wild grass and leaves in their way, as for Lin Shi and Li Dong Ze who were in the rear of the party, they had to continually look back in fear of any sneak attacks by the monsters.

In this frightening forest, they were advancing gradually as they paid close attention to each step, extremely wary of their surroundings.

Time flew by minute after minute and half an hour later, the group finally confronted a group of Lesser Goblins.

The group of Lesser Goblins numbered around fifteen to sixteen and when the group discovered them, they were roaming at an area hundred metres away from them but had not discovered them.

Hu Ge, Zhang Run Sheng, Qin Jia Gui and Zhao Shi Chang did

not speak as they spontaneously rushed forward.

If they were to secretly skirt around, they would be able to avoid this group of Lesser Goblins however this was not what Hu Ge, Zhao Shi Chang and the rest were thinking about.

Hu Ge, Zhang Run Sheng and Zhao Shi Chang had each killed two Lesser Goblins, the strength of the strange energy within their bodies had exceeded that of a Lesser Goblin and they all knew that killing these monsters would cause them to become stronger like Su Yu.

It was difficult to get such a chance and the group was not shocked but rather happy as they wanted to kill more of the Lesser Goblins to become stronger.

Within the forest, only becoming strong would the chances of one living on become greater.

Su Yu saw that they had not spoken a word before suddenly rushing forward and was stunned before understanding what they were thinking as he also rushed forward, the strange energy within his left hand began to circulate as he felt an itch to test out the power of the black scaled hand.

Of these people, only Zhang Zhong Mou bitterly smiled. His strange energy was located within his face and during combat his attacking strength was insufficient, seeing a Lesser Goblin made his scalp numb.

As for Ning Yan, a look of loathing flashed on her face. Since the beginning she had not initiated an attack on the Lesser Goblins and although she was a member of the group, the expression on her face seemed to be disassociated with that of the group.

Up ahead, the group of startled group of Lesser Goblins had spotted them and were rushing forward to meet them.

“Haaaah!”

Zhao Shi Chang shouted as he wielded the club within his right arm, “Bang!”, the wooden club within a Lesser Goblins hand was knocked flying before he heavily smashed towards its chest.

By the side, Hu Ge was not any weaker than him as he continued to smash “Bang! Bang! Bang!” causing a Lesser Goblin to sway in retreat as though it were drunk. The final strike landed on the Lesser Goblin’s shoulder as green juice splattered causing a shrill cry from the Lesser Goblin.

Su Yu wordlessly appeared behind them and his silhouette disappeared as he suddenly overtook them and clenched his fist, the fist that was covered in black scales strangely transformed into a lizard-like palm as five claws that were several centimetres in length extended out.

Because he had rushed to the forefront, two Lesser Goblins were simultaneously smashing wooden clubs towards him.

Looking at his black scale covered left hand, Su Yu was unnaturally calm and even the actions of the Lesser Goblins and the swinging of their clubs seemed to become slow in his eyes.

His body flashed as he nimbly dodged the two Lesser Goblins' attacks and with a swipe of his left hand, "Chiiii", the claws on his left hand actually pierced straight through the Lesser Goblin's chest, its sharpness far exceeding his expectations.

The strange energy surged as Su Yu's left arm swept, large amounts of green juice sprayed forth as the Lesser Goblin that had been pierced by Su Yu screamed, it's body had been sliced in half, starting from it's chest as its upper body fell to the ground.

Su Yu was dazed, he had never imaged that his left arm together with the five sharp claws would have such a frightening killing potential. Just a simple sweep of his hand had cleanly sliced a Lesser Goblin in two.

This scene not only made Su Yu dazed but also Qin Jia Gui, Ma Zi Ye and the others who were following closely behind.

This was the new strength that Su Yu had obtained after killing a Greater Goblin? This was simply too frightening.

Su Yu quickly came to his senses, after promoting to a tier one dark iron warrior, killing these Lesser Goblins barely increased his strange energy and he looked back at Zhang Zhong Mou who had a bitter expression on his face as he suddenly had a thought.

Chapter 16: The Weird House Within The Forest

A low growl could be heard as his left hand stretched forth grabbing onto a club that was swung towards him by a Lesser Goblin. With a toss of his hand, Su Yu sent the Lesser Goblin involuntarily flying through the air.

“Old Mou!” Su Yu suddenly shouted as the Lesser Goblin landed heavily before Zhang Zhong Mou.

Zhang Zhong Mou stared blankly and quickly understood Su Yu’s intentions as he laughed: “Young master Yu, thanks!” Wielding the club with both hands, he swung the club towards the head of the Lesser Goblin that had fallen to the ground and was currently in a daze.

Killing this Lesser Goblin did not help Su Yu gain much strange energy while Zhang Zhong Mou who had killed only two, this would be a great boon.

After Su Yu’s promotion to tier one dark iron warrior, not only did his left hand have a frightening killing potential, the strange energy flowed throughout his entire body from his left hand, causing his speed and nimbleness to greatly increase. A stark improvement could also be felt in his vision and hearing.

Rushing into the pack of Lesser Goblins, Su Yu’s left hand swept forward and easily pierced the chest of a Lesser Goblin, with another wave of his hand, he sent it flying towards Zhang Zhong

Mou who was waiting in the back.

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed wildly as he closely followed behind Su Yu and received all the benefits.

The other's were envious as the number of Lesser Goblins that fell to Zhang Zhong Mou quickly passed five.

The others like Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and Ma Zi Ye had gains as the fifteen Lesser Goblins were quickly taken care of. Not one person in the group lost their lives and nobody had suffered any injury.

Looking at the floor littered with monster corpses, the group looked at each other as a thought surfaced. Unknowingly, the group had grown strong and their small group now contained a frightening strength that could easily take care of a pack of fifteen Lesser Goblins.

Amongst them Su Yu's performance was the most eye-catching and the left hand that seemed to be a lizard's hand contained a frightening strength that could easily kill. Zhang Zhong Mou touched his face and excitedly said: "Young master Yu, if I also promote to tier one, what transformations would occur? I wonder what special abilities I will obtain."

Qin Jia Gui looked at the back of his left hand as the lustrous metal speckle seemed to become bigger and bigger, touching it one could feel that it was hard like metal but could not predict how it would transform in the future.

Suddenly, he was very expectant and wondered how the killing potential of his right hand would compare to the current Su Yu once he promoted to tier one dark iron warrior..

Easily handling the pack of fifteen Lesser Goblins, the group did not stop as they continued down the path.

Because of the delightful massacre earlier, everyone was currently experiencing a high.

Hu Ge who was walking in the front brushed aside the thick vegetation that was covering his view as a soft gasp emitted from his mouth, filled with amazement.

“What’s wrong?” Zhang Run Sheng who was following closely behind softly asked as he lifted his head to look.

“It’s..... It’s a house?” Zhang Run Sheng could not control himself as he exclaimed.

At the back, Su Yu, Zhang Zhong Mou, Qin Jia Gui and the other’s felt their bodies tremble as they all squeezed forward, brushing away the vegetation that was block the group’s view as they looked on.

There was a small slope in front and below the slope, there were an abundance of tall trees. Within this patch of towering trees, there was actually a house erected there. Upon looking past the

thick vegetation and seeing the house, Su Yu and the others felt excited.

Having walked for half a day within this forest, this was the first time that they saw a house, a place with a house would certainly have traces of people and with traces of people, they would be able to find out what was exactly was going on in this forest. Suddenly, the group's morale was boosted as they each felt that hope was in front of them.

“Let's go.” Hu Ge was elated as he hurriedly opened a path through the vegetation and rushed forward.

Qin Jia Gui who was behind Hu Ge, pulled him as he softly said: “Wait.”

Hu Ge was startled as he frowned, turning to look him in the eye.

Qin Jia Gui's face was pensive as he softly said: “Seeing this house is certainly a good thing, however..... don't you guys think it's strange that within such a forest, there would actually be a house..... isn't this peculiar? I'm only afraid that it isn't such a good thing like we thought.”

Zhang Run Sheng replied: “Qin Jia Gui, you're too cautious and likely over thinking things. With the group of us together, even if there's danger it would not be difficult for us to handle. Your considerations are valid however it may be too cowardly.”

Having just easily dealt with a pack of the Lesser Goblins, Zhang Run Sheng and a few others were brimming with confidence as they seemed to not put the monsters in their eyes.

Zhang Zhong Mou snorted: “I feel that what Qin Jia Gui said isn’t wrong, finding a house is certainly good however we shouldn’t be too rash. Young master Yu, what do you think?”

His final words were directed to Su Yu who was by his side.

Su Yu lifted his hands as he casually tousled his hair, hearing Zhang Zhong Mou’s words he agreed: “One can never go wrong by being more careful, Old Mou has finally said something constructive.”

He said this while brushing away the vegetation before him and slowly advanced forward.

Hearing the words of Qin Jia Gui and Zhang Zhong Mou, Hu Ge and Zhang Run Sheng became calm as they thought about it and realised that they did make a point. This forest was simply too strange and a house that suddenly appeared before them did seem to have a mysterious aura around it. Being careful never hurt anyone and with this thought in mind, the group gripped their weapons as they quietly made their way down the slope towards the house to investigate.

As they neared, the group quickly found that the house seemed to be half collapsed, from the gap at the front, they could vaguely see many different items strewn on the floor. Su Yu who had become a

tier one dark iron warrior had superior vision and although it was very far away, he could clearly see what the items were as an excited expression floated onto his face, thereafter, he looked up at the top of the door of this house and saw that there was actually a plaque there.

Printed on the plaque were four words: “Jin Hua Supermarket”

Su Yu’s body trembled as he felt a moment of epiphany, in this moment he seemed to recall something.

“Shuffle shuffle”

At the same time, sounds of footsteps could be heard all around as their surroundings were suddenly filled with little green monsters, clearly they were Lesser Goblins.

“Everyone be careful!” Hu Ge who was leading in front loudly shouted as the group formed a defensive circle.

From behind the house and all around, Lesser Goblins streamed out from the tall wild grass and there were at least twenty to thirty of them as they brandished their clubs and rushed towards them.

What really stunned the group was by the door of the house, there was a corpse lying there, a human corpse.

Why was there a human corpse by the door of the house? Why was this house here?

Chapter 17: Rending Claw

The group was both puzzled and shocked, as they also felt a dread for the unknown. However, they currently had no time to think about this as the group of twenty to thirty Lesser Goblins had surrounded them and began their offense. The situation seemed grim.

“Young master Yu, don’t pull your punches.” Zhang Zhong Mou held a wooden club within his hands as he brandished it while shouting.

Su Yu’s body shuddered as he recovered from his shock and looked at the Lesser Goblins that had surrounded them. Without a word, he was the first to rush forward to meet them.

His left hand swept forward as black scales appeared on it, “Chi Chi” sounds were made as sharp claws extended out and immediately grabbed the head of a Lesser Goblin. With a clench of his fist, the five claws immediately squashed the head into pulp.

By the side, two other Lesser Goblins also attacked.

Su Yu swept his hand to meet them as he continued to hold onto the Lesser Goblin, using its body as a weapon to toss it at the two incoming Lesser Goblins.

“Bang!”

The corpse and the two Lesser Goblins collided as the intense force caused the corpse to break apart and sent the two Lesser Goblins hurtling backwards as they shrieked.

Every action of the current Su Yu contained frightening power that the Lesser Goblins simply could not contend with.

Ma Zi Ye who was by the side also had an impressive performance as her legs moved and kicked, right leg sweeping with a “Sha” noise as it moved in a clear distinct arc immediately sending a Lesser Goblin flying backwards. Her legs then stretched forth again and clamped on, giving a good wring, the crisp sound of bone breaking could be heard and the Lesser Goblin shrieked as its two legs had been broken.

Ma Zi Ye had then quickly stood back up as she wielded the wooden club in her right hand, smashing it down onto the head of the Lesser Goblin.

In no time at all, a black crystal floated from the Lesser Goblin’s corpse and entered Ma Zi Ye’s right leg.

Feeling the increase of the strange energy fluctuations within her right leg, Ma Zi Ye sprang forward as her right leg swept towards a second Lesser Goblin.

Zhao Shi Chang, Qin Jia Gui, Hu Ge, Zhang Run Sheng and Lin Shi all had strong displays of their strength. They had each killed a number of the Lesser goblins and although their strange energy could not be compared to Su Yu, it was more than sufficient to

handle a Lesser Goblin, making it all seem easy.

When Su Yu killed multiple Lesser Goblins in rapid succession, the strange energy within his left hand seemed to have an abnormal fluctuation as it swelled, seemingly due to his growing killing intent.

“Chii”

As Su Yu’s left claw once again pierced into the chest of a Lesser Goblin, the strange energy fluctuations and swelling seemed to reach a peak as Su Yu suddenly shouted: “Rending Claw!”

“Chii chii chii”

Sounds were continually emitted as Su Yu was astounded to see that after utilising the ‘Rending Claw’, blood and flesh were flying from the chest of the Lesser Goblin as pieces of meat and broken bone seemed to have been put through a meat grinder, turning into a pile of meat pulp and bone fragments.

“This is.....” Su Yu took a sharp intake of cold air as he pulled out his left hand, the black scales on his lizard-like hand were all raised and the raised black scales had rotated, creating a frightening penetrative power and the five claws were even more fearsome as they seemed to gel together as they rotated, seemingly like an electric drill with a might that seemed to be able to surmount all obstacles.

“So incredible..... So this is an ability..... Rending Claw?”

Su Yu looked at the large gaping hole in the chest of the Lesser Goblin as he breathed in deeply, after killing a Greater Goblin and absorbing its crystal, he was promoted to tier one and had comprehended of two abilities namely the ‘Eye of Perception’ as well as ‘Rending Claw’.

The “Eye of Perception” enabled the user to find out the target’s data and information while the first usage of the ‘Rending Claw’ had shown such overwhelming power that left even Su Yu speechless.

While Su Yu was being blown away by the might of the ‘Rending Claw’, a “sha sha” sound could be heard as branches were pushed aside, a green figure could be seen hurtling through the air as it landed within the defensive circle they made.

“Aaaahh!” Zhang Run Sheng suddenly shouted intensely as he received a vicious blow by this green figure.

Zhang Run Sheng had quite a number of Lesser Goblins under his belt, his strength was not weak and in this critical situation, he managed to barely react as both his hands grabbed and managed to hug the green figure, causing him and the green figure to tumble heavily on to the ground.

“Greater Goblin?” Su Yu had keen vision as he immediately recognised the green figure. It was a mature Greater Goblin, something that was far more powerful than the Lesser Goblins.

Earlier it was precisely one such Greater Goblin that almost caused the death of this entire group, he had never expected that in the surroundings of this house a Greater Goblin would actually appear.

Zhang Run Sheng was caught unawares and his chest had already been pierced by the claws of the Greater Goblin, the intense pain made him feel the looming threat of death as he tightly held onto the Greater Goblin in his madness, continually rolling on the ground as he struggled.

The events had transpired so rapidly that the group was mostly in a daze, Su Yu growled as he was the first to react, he kicked off from the ground with his two feet as he pounced with spread claws and slashed towards the Greater Goblin that was currently entangled with Zhang Run Sheng.

Amongst the people present, he was the only one with the strength to fight against this Greater Goblin.

At this time there were still over ten Lesser Goblins and the group was flustered because of the appearance of the Greater Goblin and their formation was in a mess as Ning Yan, Zhuang Xiao Hua and Li Dong each met with danger.

Seeing that Ning Yan was in danger, Zhang Zhong Mou dashed forward as both his hands brandished the wooden club, viciously swinging it towards the Lesser Goblin which was attacking Ning Yan.

Ning Yan was not only Su Yu's dream girl, but also someone whom Zhang Zhong Mou secretly admired.

Zhang Zhong Mou's strange energy was located within his head and the strength of his two arms were similar to that of a normal human, as two clubs collided together, his club was sent flying away.

Zhang Zhong Mou's shoulders were aching as though they had fractured, seeing a wooden club smashing towards him, he suddenly laughed hysterically as he actually hugged the Lesser Goblin and used his head to smash towards the Lesser Goblin.

This was a desperate move by Zhang Zhong Mou under dire circumstances, against all expectations, this strike of his was frighteningly strong and a "Bang!" resounded as the face of the Lesser Goblin was smashed inwards, its nose bone shattered and eye sockets exploded such that even the left eyeball fell out from the socket.

The Lesser Goblin shrieked miserably as Zhang Zhong Mou held it tightly while frantically slamming his head down, in the blink of an eye, green juice covered his entire face.

Ning Yan saw the crazed look on Zhang Zhong Mou's face as she seemed awed, slowly lifting her hands to cover her mouth as her beautiful eyes widened.

Chapter 18: The Guilt Of Killing A Comrade

When Zhang Zhong Mou finally stopped slamming his head and looked up, his head was already dyed in green juice. Under his mad banging, the Lesser Goblin's head had long been shattered like a watermelon and was irrevocably dead.

Zhang Zhong Mou was stunned for a while before madly laughing, elation evident in his laughter.

He finally understood that since his strange energy was located within his head, he could use his head to bash and kill the monsters.

“Ha Ha!” Zhang Zhong Mou was laughing wildly in his elation when suddenly an intense pain could be felt from his back, a Lesser Goblin had rushed up and whacked a wooden club into his back.

“Damn!” Zhang Zhong Mou collapsed on to the ground, the pain made his face scrunch up as he shouted, it was fortunate that Qin Jia Gui had already reached and gave a heavy blow with his club.

“Bang!”

Similar to striking a balloon, the might of the strike was so frightening that the head of the Lesser Goblin simply exploded, as green juice and meat splattered in all directions.

“Pa! Pa!”

Ning Yan's face could not avoid being splattered by some of the green juice and meat as her face turned pale, suddenly screaming as she frantically wiped at her face which was covered in goblin remnants.

At this moment, everyone was fighting for their lives of which Zhang Run Sheng's shrieks made one's soul tremble.

The sudden appearance of the Greater Goblin had already been noticed by the group, the fearsomeness as well as viciousness of the Greater Goblin flashed through the mind of each person, an ineffable feeling of fear, nervousness and elation surged.

There were those who felt fear, then there were those like Hu Ge who felt elation, Su Yu had killed a Greater Goblin and gained the endless power of the black scaled lizard claws. Hu Ge wanted to personally kill a Greater Goblin and become stronger through transformation.

As a result, he was only slightly slower than Su Yu as he abandoned the Lesser Goblin before him and rushed towards the Greater Goblin.

Su Yu extended his five claws and with a "Siii", the sound of claws slicing through the air could be heard as it swiftly clawed towards the Greater Goblin which was tumbling on the ground.

After promoting into a tier one dark iron warrior, regardless of strength, speed, vision or movement, all had increased up a notch

and claw was like a shooting star, fading within a split second as it descended.

“Chiii”

The greater goblin howled as he spun, even though it was very fast its back was still pierced by Su Yu’s claws as large pieces of meat chunks and blood were sent flying. The Greater Goblin’s reaction speed could be said to be godly as its left arm moved, wielding Zhang Run Shang which was currently skewered and tossing it towards Su Yu.

Zhang Run Sheng was crazed as he tried to hold onto the Greater Goblin in a death grasp, even if he died he wanted to drag this monster down with him. It was a pity that this was only his wishful thinking as the strength and reaction of the Greater Goblin simply exceeded his by far too much, this fling of it’s arm immediately sent him flying out.

Zhang Run Sheng was suddenly flung towards him as Su Yu was forced to stop and catch him.

“Chiii!”

The Greater Goblin’s movement was like a hurricane, while tossing out Zhang Run Sheng, at the same time it stood back up and extended out it’s right arm and pierced through Zhang Run Sheng’s body again. The Goblin’s claw continued forth and went right through, exposing Zhang Run Sheng’s chest and then clawing at Su Yu’s chest. This resulted in Su Yu’s body being penetrated as

well, both of them were skewered on the right arm of the Greater Goblin.

“Aaaahh!” Su Yu madly shouted, a fierce pain could be felt in his chest region and under the critical circumstances the strange energy within his left arm swelled and sounds of “Chi Chi Chi” could be heard as though there were beans being fried, in an instant the black scales stuck upwards.

Su Yu’s left hand clenched as he heavily smashed forward.

In this critical juncture between life and death, he did not have time to care about Zhang Run Sheng’s life and death, this fist went forward as the ‘Rending Claw’ activated like an electric drill, creating a fearsome force that pierced through Zhang Run Sheng’s chest and under the frightening force of the rotation, blood and minced meat flew from Zhang Run Sheng’s chest region.

Within Zhang Run Sheng’s body, the right arm of the Greater Goblin had pierced through it and clawed into Su Yu’s chest, at the same time, Su Yu’s ‘Rending Claw’ had entered half a second slower as it pierced through Zhang Run Sheng’s body and came before the Greater Goblin’s chest.

The frightening ability of the ‘Rending Claw’ had a rotational force that created a frightening wind pressure, although it had not reached the Greater Goblin, it felt suffocated by it.

The threat of death welled up within the Greater Goblin’s heart as it immediately understood that although it was slightly faster

than the human and could easily pierce his body, it would not be a guaranteed kill but this human's retaliation with the 'Rending Claw' would definitely kill itself.

The Greater Goblin which already had its claws an inch into Su Yu's chest understood this and immediately kicked with both feet as it retracted its claws and explosively retreated.

"Whoosh"

In the blink of an eye the Greater Goblin had already retreated three metres, Zhang Run Sheng let out a final miserable shriek as his eyes rolled up before immediately dying on the spot.

After being pierced by the Greater Goblin from the back and taking the blow of Su Yu's 'Rending Claw' from the front, the organs within his chest had all become meat pulp and naturally he could not live any longer. Of course, even without Su Yu's 'Rending Claw' he would have died regardless.

Su Yu had just come back from death's door as his heart was suffused with a feeling of strength leaving him, as he retracted his hand from Zhang Run Sheng's body and looked at the corpse with its wide eyes, slowly sliding to the ground, his heart trembled as he stared at his left hand which was currently stained with Zhang Run Sheng's fresh blood, he was simply overwhelmed.

Although he knew that Zhang Run Sheng was doomed to die after taking the Greater Goblin's blow through the chest, this did not reduce the guilt of him using the 'Rending Claw' to push his

way through Zhang Run Sheng's chest.

In his daze, Su Yu felt as though Zhang Run Sheng's wide eyes before his death were cursing him, as though he were accusing him of killing him and why had he used the 'Rending Claw' to kill him.

Su Yu was in a confounded state when Hu Ge who was by the side had already courageously pounced, taking the chance while the Greater Goblin was explosively retreating to wield the club within his hands, silently rushing forward as all the strength in his body gathered into his arms as it smashed towards the Greater Goblin's head.

If this strike landed, Hu Ge was confident that he could crush the Greater Goblin's head and kill it. At that time, he would be like Su Yu, transforming and attaining a greater power, receiving looks of envy from the group.

“Woosh”

Hu Ge who was currently experiencing mixed emotions of happiness and nervousness, actually missed his club that seemed like it would definitely hit the Greater Goblin that was retreating before it suddenly disappeared.

Hu Ge was startled, he had used too much strength and lost his balance, falling to the ground. From his back a cold sensation could be felt as he suddenly felt something pierce through his back and exit out from his chest.

Chapter 19: Further Evolution

It was simply too weird, a strange feeling welled up within him as Hu Ge could clearly feel that a claw had pierced through his back and stopped within his body, destroying his organs before lifting his body and tossing it through the air.

Hu Ge's eyes were wide open as his mouth did not even have the chance to scream, by the time he came to his senses, the last scene in his eyes was the dazed and cowering face of Su Yu.

This claw that had pierced through his back and sent him flying had naturally been from the Greater Goblin.

This Greater Goblin was strong and formidable, exceeding expectations, to the extent that it seemed at least thirty percent stronger than the one that had almost killed the entire group earlier.

It had easily dodged Hu Ge's sneak attack as its claw pierced into Hu Ge's body before viciously tossing him towards Su Yu.

From the earlier exchange of blows, the Greater Goblin felt an immense fear towards Su Yu, at this moment Su Yu seemed to be distracted and it decided to test him by flinging Hu Ge's body towards Su Yu and closely followed behind it, preparing to do a sneak attack and kill Su Yu.

Su Yu had just attacked and because of Zhang Run Sheng's corpse that was wide eyed he stood there stunned, seeing that Hu Ge's

body was tossed towards him like Zhang Run Sheng's, in this instant an overwhelming fear and cowardice filled his heart as he imagined the possibility of him being forced to use the ability 'Rending Claw' to kill Hu Ge.

Zhang Run Sheng, Hu Ge, they were all his comrades and school mates.....

"No!" Su Yu suddenly howled as he retreated away.

Seeing Su Yu turn and dodge, the Greater Goblin immediately narrowed its eyes as it pounced, seeing the expression of fear of panic on Su Yu's face, it knew that this was its best chance to kill this human which had previously made it feel uneasy.

This blow was filled with all the strength of the Greater Goblin as both its legs kicked the ground leaving two small holes, its body became a green flash of lightning, astonishingly fast.

Su Yu was bound for death!

The group noticed the dire circumstances but they did not have the time to aid Su Yu as Zhang Zhong Mou who understood Su Yu the most howled: "F***! Jade is still waiting in the school for you!"

Su Yu who was currently panicking and retreating did not notice what Zhang Zhong Mou said in his howl but the name 'Jade' were especially clear, this seemed like instinct and the name which he had heard from young for twenty years seemed to reverberate

throughout his entire being, resulting in an instinctive response.

Suddenly, Su Yu inconceivably recovered from his panic as he woke up, calming down as he drooped his hands and stopped there, his entire being seeming exceptionally relaxed.

“Aaaahh!” the other’s screamed including Ma Zi Ye who could not help but to exclaim, in this instant, Su Yu who had suddenly stopped had his back facing towards the attack of the Greater Goblin. The Greater Goblin was swift like lightning as its two claws extended forward and seemed like it would definitely claw into his skull and back, to the extent that it already seemed to be in contact with his hair and clothes.

Seeing Su Yu who would likely die in a moment, the group’s chances of survival would drastically drop and the entire area seemed to be filled with a strange atmosphere as though time had stopped flowing.

Without any prior notice, like the wind yet also like lightning, his two drooping hands that were relaxed by his body suddenly shot backwards, without looking at the Greater Goblin as his left arm flung out.

Black scales gathered together as the five claws closed and assembled, the black lizard claws rotated as the strange energy surged, ‘Rending Claw’ suddenly explosively struck.

The pouncing body of the Greater Goblin suddenly halted as “Guk Guk” sounds could be heard from its mouth, an expression of

disbelief could be seen in its eyes before they exploded, thoroughly disintegrating.

Its claw was still behind Su Yu's head, the right claw touching his hair while the left one was grabbing his clothes. Its skull was already struck by the 'Rending Claw' and like the exploding of a bubble, it was turned into mincemeat by the rotating 'Rending Claw', creating meat pulp.

Seeing this miraculous scene before them, everyone was wide eyed and disbelief could be seen in their eyes. Even the remaining five to six Lesser Goblins seemed stunned as they held their wooden clubs and forgot to attack.

This scene was simply too shocking.

The frantic attack of the Greater Goblin with Su Yu's back against it had actually been thwarted by a fist that seemed to be nonchalantly thrown, immediately kill the Greater Goblin. It must be known that the two claws of the Greater Goblin had nearly clawed into Su Yu's skull and body, these dire circumstances simply could not be fully described through writing.

"Too..... Too damned handsome!" Suddenly Zhang Zhong Mou shouted as he raised his arms and continued: "This is simply too unbelievable! Su Yu! How did you do it!"

Su Yu retracted his left hand which had returned to normal as he secretly wiped his forehead. In that instant, his forehead had been drenched in cold sweat.

Upon hearing Jade's name, Su Yu had instinctively stopped and retaliated with the 'Rending Claw' exploding backwards, killing the Greater Goblin in a single strike. Thinking back, Su Yu could still feel the chills.

Although he had killed this Greater Goblin, even he himself did not know how he had done it. The strike earlier had merely been luck.

If there was even the slightest error, the person lying on the ground with his skull smashed in would have been him.

The Greater Goblin had died a gruesome death as its headless corpse fell to the ground, a black crystal floated from its body becoming a flash of light before disappearing into Su Yu's left hand.

Feeling the strange energy that was once again surging and swelling within his arm, Su Yu suddenly howled, the group looked over as many people wondered what transformations would occur to Su Yu after absorbing another crystal from a Greater Goblin.

The group saw that Su Yu's left hand was covered with a layer of black scales as the black scales actually followed his wrist and continued upwards, "Chii Chii Chii" sounds could be heard before finally stopping approximately ten centimetres above his wrist.

Seeing the transformation stop, Su Yu let out a sigh of relief. The arm with its strange transformation lightly lashed out in the air as

strange energy seemed to surge and a strength that was on a totally different level could be felt, even the other parts of his body seemed to have grown much stronger.

Chapter 20: Supermarket Food

Su Yu moved about his right hand, this very hand that had been injured several times including fractures had finally fully recovered under the nourishment of the strange energy. These light movements were filled with strength that was much stronger than the past, although it was far from that of the left arm, it had become at least two times stronger.

There was never a moment where Su Yu felt that his body was in as good a condition as it currently was, all his wounds had thoroughly disappeared and after absorbing the strange energy, his entire body seemed to be baptised with an indescribable comfort, making Su Yu feel easy and relaxed.

By the time Su Yu caught his breath and relaxed his left hand causing it to return to normal, he realised that Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui, Zhang Zhong Mou had already gathered around him as they gave him astonished looks.

The ground was littered with corpses of Lesser Goblins and the five to six remaining Lesser Goblins had actually fled after seeing the Greater Goblin being killed by Su Yu.

“Good fellow.....” Qin Jia Gui was envious as he licked his lips, stretching his hand as though he wished to pat Su Yu’s shoulder but slowly put it back down.

Unknowingly, Su Yu’s place and importance within his heart had steadily grown and he did not dare to place his hand on Su Yu’s

shoulder. In the past, Qin Jia Gui was a tall, handsome athlete and simply did not put Su Yu in his eyes.

Only Zhang Zhong Mou seemed completely naturally as he placed his hand around Su Yu's shoulders and laughed: "Young master Yu, how did you do it? I'm talking about just recently, damn, you were just standing there motionlessly as the monster attacked and it seemed as though you were a goner. Your nonchalant punch actually killed the monster! Holy sh**, that was simply like a hidden martial arts expert written in legends! I was still feeling concerned for you as I shouted Jade's name to spur you on."

He spoke while retrieving a packet of cigarettes from his bosom as he said regretfully: "There's only a few sticks left, it'll be no time at all before they are finished." Although he said this, he still took out two sticks and put one into his mouth while handing the other over to Su Yu.

Su Yu was a social smoker and only when he was moody would he take a puff with Zhang Zhong Mou and friends, he was not addicted to it and was prepared to reject before his gaze saw Zhang Run Sheng's corpse on the floor, his body shuddered as he decided to take the cigarette.

Zhang Zhong Mou took out a lighter and helped Su Yu light his cigarette before eyeing the group and saying: "Don't say that this fellow is petty, there aren't many sticks left but if you want one I'll share it with you."

Qin Jia Gui smiled as he shook his head: "I've never had the habit of smoking."

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: “I know, you’re a damned fine student.”

Su Yu took a puff, swallowing this first puff, he let it circulate through his body before slowly blowing it out. Cigarettes were a strange thing, after spitting out the smoke, he felt as though the pressure within his heart seemed to lessen a bit.

The group noticed that Ye Fan suddenly became solemn and could roughly guess the reason, actually Zhang Run Sheng’s death could not be blamed on Su Yu, it was only that his blow happened to land on Zhang Run Sheng and anyone would have a ghost lingering in their heart.

This time around, although Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others managed to kill quite a number of Lesser Goblins such that their strength rose immensely, Zhang Run Sheng and Hu Ge had died gruesome deaths and no one could bring themselves to feel happy.

After two more puffs, Su Yu felt as though his heart had become steady as he threw it to the ground and used his foot to extinguish it.

Zhang Zhong Mou felt the pain in his flesh as he saw this, hurriedly picking it back up to see if it could still be lit.

Su Yu walked before Zhang Run Sheng’s corpse as he crouched down, staring at Zhang Run Sheng’s wide open eyes which seemed to indicate that he died in regret as he said: “Zhang Run Sheng, I’m

sorry, but..... under the circumstances earlier, I simply didn't have a choice. All humans are selfish, I'm also the same. I'm..... I'm afraid of dying..... sorry. If we do get rescued out of this forest..... your family..... I will look after them for you, as long as it's within my ability..... hopefully..... hopefully you can go in peace.....”

Su Yu softly mumbled as his hand reached toward Zhang Run Sheng's face as he slowly moved his hand downwards, Zhang Run Sheng's wide open eyes were now closed.

After a long sigh, Su Yu felt a burden lifted off his shoulders. Seeing Zhang Run Sheng's closed eyes, his spirits immediately rose as he softly said: “What I said I will definitely fulfill.” Standing up, the ghost that was lingering in his heart had disappeared.

Seeing Su Yu's actions, the group did not speak as they thought about whether they would be this guilty and blame themselves.

Seeing Su Yu stand up, Zhao Shi Chang said: “Everyone let's go in and have a look. However, be careful, who knows what else may happen.”

Not far away between the trees, the building with only half a roof remaining had a mysterious aura and hearing Zhao Shi Chang's words, they carefully walked over to investigate.

Everyone's curiosity was riled again, this mysterious building within the dense woods, what exactly could it be?

Su Yu's gaze once again fell on the plaque which was currently slanted that had the words 'Jin Hua Supermarket'. Below this plaque, there was also a corpse.

Having experienced the previous sneak attack, the group walked slowly as their senses were heightened to their limits.

In no time at all, the group was already before this building and the corpse that was lying on the ground quickly caught their attention.

This corpse was wearing a light red uniform, on the back of the uniform were the printed words 'Jin Hua Supermarket', the skull was already smashed in and it seemed that he had fallen under the vicious hands of the Lesser Goblins.

"This is the working attire in the supermarket!" Zhang Zhong Mou shouted as he looked inside the building with wide eyes.

Half the building had caved in but the group was still able to clearly see as they exchanged glances before shouting in elation.

Like the plaque, this scene within this building was certainly a supermarket, various items were littered on the floor and this was the reason for the group's elation, they had seen plenty of food and supplies.

"Is this really a supermarket? Only..... Only how did it appear here?"

Suddenly Ma Zi Ye let out a strange shout, the group had already entered the supermarket and seen two corpses on the floor, dressed in the supermarket uniform but already died a gruesome death, no way of telling them of their experiences.

“It really is quite weird, however, there’s so much food..... this is simply great! At least, we’ve managed to find food.....” Zhang Zhong Mou had not been happy for long before Qin Jia Gui who was by the side said in a gloomy voice: “No use, all this food is simply useless!”

Zhang Zhong Mou was startled as he shouted: “What are you talking about? Is there some problem with your brain? Useless? Look at the expiry date on these instant noodles, it’s still within the time frame and edible.”

Chapter 21: Sky Hole

Qin Jia Gui's face was austere as he spoke in a heavy voice: "Have you forgotten how many people are within our school? How can this meagre amount of food do any good?"

Hearing this, the group was stunned. He was right, this amount of food may be plenty for their group and could feed twenty people for over ten days, however, when faced with the thousand plus people in the school, this food was simply too little for even a single meal.

Zhang Zhong Mou stared blankly before grunting, by the side in a glass cabinet, he saw a pile of cigarettes as he laughed in delight, hurriedly taking down his backpack to stuff all the cigarettes in.

This fellow's addiction to cigarettes was simply astounding.

Ma Zi Ye took an instant noodles and ripped it open as she sniffed: "The smell is normal, however..... however can we really eat it?"

A sudden appearance of the strange supermarket within this strange forest, the group simply was not sure if the food could be eaten, their hearts were suspicious as they thought what if it was poisoned.

"It can be eaten." Suddenly, Su Yu who had been silent spoke.

Ma Zi Ye questioned: “Su Yu, how do you know it’s definitely edible?”

Su Yu slowly lifted his head as he replied: “This supermarket, I’ve been here before.”

The group was startled as they all turned to look at him.

Qin Jia Gui was puzzled as he asked: “You’ve been here before? You’re talking about this supermarket?”

Su Yu’s expression calmed down as he slowly said: “When we were having our lesson yesterday, do you know what I was doing?”

The group was befuddled as Zhang Zhong Mou said: “Young master Yu, what are you talking about. Why have you brought up yesterday’s lesson? Oh, I know, you must definitely have been listening to the news on the radio.”

Qin Jia Gui said in a confused tone: “However..... what has that got to do with this supermarket?”

Su Yu bitterly smiled: “That’s right, I was listening to the news at the time and the news was actually talking about the continual appearance of ‘Sky Holes’ all over the world.”

Qin Jia Gui nodded: “I’ve heard of it before, the most frightening incident happened overseas where half of a city was swallowed by the ‘Sky Hole’..... Eh.....” he made a sound as though he

comprehended something.

The others still had puzzled looks on their faces as they looked at Su Yu, not understanding why he suddenly mentioned the ‘Sky Hole’ incident, what did that have to do with this strange supermarket?

Su Yu slowly continued: “Back then I heard a fresh piece of news regarding the city we lived in, the reporter mentioned that three ‘Sky Holes’ consecutively appeared along People’s Road, of which the largest one actually swallowed a large portion of a supermarket, the name of this supermarket was ‘Jin Hua Supermarket’.....”

“Aaaahh!” Some people in the ground could not help but scream because the strange supermarket before them was also called Jin Hua.

“Back then when I saw that this supermarket was also called Jin Hua Supermarket, i merely thought that it was a coincidence..... However, I’ve actually been to the Jin Hua Supermarket at People’s Road, I clearly remember the arrangement of items, this is the counter, that is where food is displayed..... When I entered, I was immediately certain that this Jia Hua Supermarket is the one that was by People’s Road in our city..... It is also the supermarket that had been swallowed by the ‘Sky Hole’.”

The group exchanged glances as they felt their goosebumps stand on end, Qin Jia Gui suddenly spoke: “Does everyone remember what happened to the school back then, that shaking like as if there was an earthquake and thereafter the entire sky changing.”

“Qin Jia Gui, what you’re saying is.....” Ma Zi Ye looked over at him.

Qin Jia Gui looked over at Su Yu: “Su Yu, why don’t you say it.”

Su Yu sighed as he continued: “There is only one explanation for the current circumstances. The supermarket was swallowed by the ‘Sky Hole’ and fell into these woods..... falling into the forest of a world that we have no understanding about. Our school..... has also encountered the same thing.”

Zhang Zhong Mou had a sharp intake of cold air as his entire body felt the chills: “Young master Yu, you’re saying that a ‘Sky Hole’ actually appeared above our school?”

“That’s right and it’s a massive Sky Hole, able to swallow our entire school. Thereafter it sent our school as well as all of us into this forest, similar to the fate of the supermarket.”

A dismayed expression was on the face of Zhao Shi Chang as he said dumbstruck: “If that’s really the case, wouldn’t this place no longer be the world where we lived in? Where are we going to find rescue teams? Where do we go to find help? No, this is simply impossible!”

Zhao Shi Chang suddenly shouted as he seemed to have broken down.

All along, everyone had believed that this world was still the world they had lived in, if they walked out of the forest, they would definitely be able to find the cops or government to help them. Now they fully understood that the world before them was no longer the world that they were familiar with.

“Because of the ‘Sky Hole’, we have been dropped into another world..... This matter, I simply cannot understand.” Ma Zi Ye suddenly shook her head, she simply could not believe that this incident was real.

Su Yu let out a sigh as he tousled his hair: “This is only my conjecture not necessarily the truth. What’s more important is to think about what we should do now?”

Although he said this, Su Yu was more than eighty percent confident of his conjecture, although it seemed inconceivable, whether it be the appearance of goblins or the school’s surroundings suddenly becoming a forest or the strange energy and transformation, did all this not seem inconceivable as well? Since this was the case, being dropped into another world because of a ‘Sky Hole’ was not too far-fetched after all.

“If it’s really as I hypothesized, what’s most important is to understand what is going on with this world. Finding the method to go back to our world and also.....” Su Yu pondered in his heart, suddenly recalling that there were ‘Sky Holes’ continually appearing and if it were like he had hypothesized, this world would have many people brought here due to the ‘Sky Holes’, furthermore it was definitely not a small amount. These people, where were they?

The biggest problem now was that they had to find a supply of food.

Finding this half of the supermarket made the group elated for a while however they quickly understood that this was insufficient, when faced with the thousand over people in the school, all this food was merely a cup of water on a burning cart of firewood.

Qin Jia Gui spoke in a heavy voice: “Where or not Su Yu’s conjecture is right, what we must do is to continue searching. Being able to find half a supermarket here is already a gain. At least it shows that there aren’t only monsters in this forest. Since this is the case, there must surely be other things here that will help us, maybe even bringing us the hope of escaping from this plight. What do you guys think? We still have one and a half days worth of time.”

Ma Zi Ye, Zhang Zhong Mou and the others nodded when suddenly someone by the side spoke: “Although this food is insufficient, if it’s only for the few of us, it’ll be enough to last us for over ten days. With ten days to search, our chances would increase exponentially.”

Chapter 22: Heavily Surrounded

The words had barely left his mouth before Qin Jia Gui angrily glanced over, he noticed that the student who spoke was a skinny person and recalled that he was a year two student by the name of Li Dong.

Li Dong's voice was very soft but it made their hearts go into a turmoil.

Whether it be the group of the thousand over people within the school, they all had barely two days worth of food. Now that they only had one and a half day's time, if they really did not manage to find anything, did they really have to go back without any gains?

There may be another better method, their group would take this food and ignore the lives and deaths of the thousand over people, in that way they would have over ten days to look for an exit. The meaning hidden in Li Dong's words were clear to everyone.

Qin Jia Gui angrily shouted: "Li Dong! What is the meaning of your words, have you forgotten that there are still over a thousand people in the school? Everyone is pining for our return!"

Seeing Qin Jia Gui become angry, Li Dong seemed to shrink back as Zhou Hua Kang who was by his side retorted: "What Li Dong said isn't wrong, under the current circumstances, everyone understands that in the limited time frame if we manage to find an exit or a rescue team everything would be fine. However, what if we don't find anything? Just like what happened this morning, we

only met with a few of those monster, then what? Go back? What use would going back do? Everyone simply starve together and wait for death?”

Hearing his words, Qin Jia Gui looked at him angrily before his anger slowly dissipated.

Seeing that no one else spoke, Zhou Hua Kang's voice grew louder as he said in a heavy tone: “I believe that if we really do fall into such a predicament, we can only carry these food and carry on by ourselves. The school has over one thousand people..... It's not that we don't want to save them, but, everyone must think clearly, why should we save them? We ourselves might die at any moment, if we can't even save ourselves, how do we even talk about saving others? Speaking about carrying all their hopes with us, that's simply too ridiculous.”

The group fell into a grim mood. After hearing Zhou Hua Kang's voice, Qin Jia Gui finally spoke up: “Su Yu, what do you think?”

Since the start, Su Yu's display had awed the others, unconsciously, everyone had regarded him as the leader.

Su Yu tousled his hair as he gave a faint smile: “Right now? Isn't there still time? At least we can wait till tomorrow night before deciding, it still won't be too late.” In his heart he was thinking about Jade who was still within the school compound, he may not be that bothered about the others dying, but how could he not care about that little girl who was left in school? He decided to temporarily put off the matter as there was still over a day's time.

Qin Jia Gui sighed: “That’s right, there’s still time. For now let’s just stick to our initial plan and try our luck. If we still don’t have any gains by tomorrow night, let’s carefully discuss what to do. What do you guys think?”

Zhang Zhong Mou had already filled his backpack with cigarettes, water as well as other food items. After closing the zipper, he added: “That is only natural, let’s just do it like that. Thinking about what will happen the day after tomorrow is simply fearing that the sky may fall at any time.”

Seeing that Su Yu and Qin Jia Gui had already made their decisions, the others did not have any objections as Ma Zi Ye spoke: “We are going to continue exploring, what do we do about all these food?”

Qin Jia Gui replied: “We’ll bring however much we can carry, it’ll probably be fine to leave the rest here. We’ve all seen that those monsters don’t seem interested in these food. We just need to remember the location of this place and in the event that we really don’t find anything, we can always come back here.”

The amount of food was substantial and it would be impossible for the group to bring everything at once. Hearing Qin Jia Gui’s words, the group nodded as they unzipped their bags and began stuffing it with food.

Ma Zi Ye ripped open the lid of an instant noodle as she began to gnaw, Zhang Zhong Mou stretched his head to look into her backpack as he exclaimed: “Good fellow! Besides drinking water, your backpack is stuffed with instant noodles. Beautiful lady Ma,

do you really love instant noodles that much?" He had an expression of inconceivability.

Ma Zi Ye harrumphed: "I won't speak to someone who doesn't know how to appreciate the deliciousness of instant noodles." Gnawing on the instant noodles, she seemed as though she was having a feast.

Su Yu found boxes of chocolate as he said: "Everyone let's bring more chocolates, these are high calorie foods and will be beneficial to us."

Qin Jia Gui nodded as he took a box, seeing the swift actions of everyone as they filled their backpacks to the brim. These backpacks brimming with food would conservatively last them four to five days, seeing the big pile of food that was still left within the supermarket, it would certainly be sufficient to last their group of ten odd people for a good period of time. However, when faced with the prospect of the thousand over people in the school, all these food simply seemed insufficient.

"Qin Jia Gui, how sure are you? I think that we should exhaust ourselves a bit more and bring all this food along with us. If we leave and the food gets destroyed by the monsters, what do we do?" Zhou Hua Kang's backpack was already filled and as he looked at the food that was littered over the aisles, he suddenly spoke up while looking at the big plastic bags that could be used within the supermarket. If the group worked hard, it was certainly not an impossibility to bring everything with them.

Qin Jia Gui lightly frowned: "To bring all this food with us.....

we won't need to think about hurrying anymore. Zhou Hua Kang, think about it, if the monster's wanted to destroy the food, they would have done so long ago, why wait till now? You should remember that before we arrived, there were already over ten of the goblins here."

Hearing Qin Jia Gui's words, Zhou Hua Kang looked reluctantly over at the food, suddenly a shrill cry could be heard from a distance as 'Sha Sha' sounds of footsteps could be heard from all around.

The sounds made the group look up as Su Yu rushed to the outside of the supermarket before hurrying back in as he shouted: "Everyone retreat back." His face had a very serious expression on it.

"What's going on?" Qin Jia Gui hurriedly asked.

"Back then we let a few of the Lesser Goblins run away, it seems they have brought reinforcements." Su Yu's face had a weird expression on it.

By now, Qin Jia Gui could also see that in the surroundings of the supermarket, approximately hundred metres away were a myriad of green figures, a rough estimate would be that there were at least fifty to sixty of these Lesser Goblins and amongst them, there were a few who had bright colours on them, possibly the one's that had escaped earlier.

"How can there be so many?" Zhang Zhong Mou's face seemed to pale as he shouted, at this moment the group could not be

concerned about the food as they placed their backpacks on the ground and prepared to engage in a massacre.

“Don’t panic, although their numbers are greater, we have all grown stronger. Let’s make use of the geography and we will still have a chance.” Qin Jia Gui looked at his surroundings before lifting a container.

Although half the supermarket had fallen, the other half of the remaining wall was a natural barrier and the strength of the Lesser Goblins was not sufficient to break through these sturdy walls.

Everyone had a tacit understanding as they blocked off all areas with exits, thereafter they stacked a few containers together before the fallen wall leaving only a two metre exit. This was the area that they had created to massacre the Lesser Goblins.

“Guys let’s work in groups and hold this position, once we’re tired we will switch out. If we hold this position and work in rotation, the numbers advantage that the goblins have on us will be unable to showcase its might. If we talk about fighting one on one, we are certainly much stronger than these monsters. As long as we don’t mess up the formation, we will definitely be able to kill all these monsters and become stronger.” Qin Jia Gui had a face full of confidence.

Chapter 23: Dire Circumstances

The group felt invigorated as they began to split up into groups.

Qin Jia Gui, Wei Zhang Ming and Zhuang Xiao Hua were in a group, Zhao Shi Chang, Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang were in a group, Ma Zi Ye, Lin Shi and Wen Rui were in a group. Only Ning Yan remained as she sat there unmoving, it seemed that she had no intentions of attacking.

It was fortunate that the group had already gotten used to her nonchalant attitude, amongst the group she was currently the weakest and had only killed a single Lesser Goblin. Seeing her beautiful countenance, everyone barely managed to control themselves but several people were already feeling resentful of her but merely had not spoken out.

As for Zhang Zhong Mou whose strange energy was located within his head, it was not that easy to utilise and thus they did not count him in. He would act as the situation required and if it was necessary, he could also go forward and help.

Su Yu was too strong and thus could freely move alone, supporting wherever help was necessary.

Seeing this group of Lesser Goblins slowly encroaching, a strange expression appeared on Su Yu's face as he mumbled: "Something seems amiss." He had actually spotted that at the back of this group of Lesser Goblins, there were actually three large green monsters.

Greater Goblins, there were actually three Greater Goblins that had united and appeared.

The three Greater Goblins were empty handed as they calmly walked behind the group of fifty to sixty Lesser Goblins. Suddenly, their eyes fell on the corpse of the Greater Goblin that had been killed by Su Yu as they stopped and crouched down around the corpse as though they were investigating something.

At this moment, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others had seen the three Greater Goblins as they took a sharp intake of cold air, chills filling their bodies.

A single Greater Goblin had almost caused the death of their entire group. There were actually three now? How would they fight?

Su Yu touched the wall by his side as he mumbled: “It’s over, although the Lesser Goblins don’t have the power to break through this wall, the strength of the Greater Goblins..... may be able to.....”

Qin Jia Gui’s heart was cold as he hoarsely spoke: “What?!” The expression on his face had thoroughly changed.

If the walls were really destroyed, they would fall into the encirclement of tens of the Lesser Goblins, even though they had become stronger and were many times stronger than the Lesser Goblins, they had no way to defend against attacks from all sides

and would only perish.

Zhang Zhong Mou nervously asked: “Su Yu, what do we do? They’re about to attack.”

The group of Lesser Goblins was already gathered not far away from the group, they had formed a circle and thoroughly surrounded them as they seemed to be waiting for the orders from the three Greater Goblins.

Su Yu looked at the gazes filled with hope that were on him, he knew that the group had grown much stronger and people like Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and Ma Zi Ye were all as strong as he had been when he killed his first Greater Goblin. However, when it came to raw strength, they simply did not have the ability to fight a Greater Goblin solo, when he had killed his first Greater Goblin it had mostly been luck, life and death had been a hair’s breadth away.

If they were rushed by the three Greater Goblins and fifty to sixty of the Lesser Goblins, the group was dead for sure.

Gritting his teeth, Su Yu clenched his left fist as black scales quickly appeared, covering his entire hand and moving upwards.....

“You people should stick to the plan and not mess up the formation. As for the three Greater Goblins..... leave them to me.” Having said this, Su Yu actually pushed his way out of the group as he walked out alone.

Qin Jia Gui and the others were stunned as Ma Zi Ye could not help herself but shout: “Su Yu?”

Although Su Yu had become stronger and they believed that he could take on a single Greater Goblin, but three of them.....

Zhang Zhong Mou licked his lips as he suddenly laughed: “Don’t forget that this fellow has already killed two of those big monsters, he’s already much stronger, it shouldn’t be a problem.”

Zhang Zhong Mou said conciliatory words however even he himself did not have even the slightest bit of confidence.

Su Yu suddenly walking out alone made the group of Lesser Goblins restless.

“Hei!” Su Yu suddenly smiled as he voluntarily rushed into the group of Lesser Goblins, swinging his hands, green juice splattered as a Lesser Goblins head was severed.

Behind him, three wooden clubs swung down at the same time, Su Yu swung his left hand to forcefully block as the black scales that were as hard as metal blocked the blows, preventing any injury and knocking the clubs away. Thereafter, his claws were revealed, “Chii”, he had killed another Lesser Goblin.

The group who were hiding within the supermarket saw this scene and Ma Zi Ye softly sighed: “How awesome.....”

Although she could also easily take care of a Lesser Goblin, she would not dare to rush in like that, nor would she dare to let three Lesser Goblins surround and attack her. As for Su Yu's seemingly nonchalant actions that killed the Lesser Goblins, she simply did not have the strength to replicate it.

Su Yu suddenly rushed forward, in the blink of an eye he had already killed several Lesser Goblins, the three Greater Goblins that were crouching down as they seemed to be inspecting something finally stood up as they let out hoarse roars.

Following their roars, the group of Lesser Goblins surged forward, not to attack Su Yu but towards the supermarket.

“Forward!” Qin Jia Gui commanded as he, Wei Zhang Ming and Zhuang Xiao Hua went to the front, blocking the two metre wide entrance as they prepared to meet the Lesser Goblins in battle.

Seeing the Lesser Goblins rush past him, Su Yu did not carry on attacking but rather looked at the three Greater Goblins as he raised his right hand and provoked them, showing a provocative attitude.

He was most afraid that the three Greater Goblins would split up, he would be unable to divide his attention and the situation would become grim. The tactics that Qin Jia Gui came up to deal with the Lesser Goblins was plausible but if they faced the stronger Greater Goblins, it would certainly fail miserably.

It was fortunate that the three Greater Goblins seemed very interested in Su Yu as they stared at him before rushing together like three streaking arrows.

The combined attack of three Greater Goblins, even if Su Yu was arrogant he did not feel that he could deal with it. It may be possible for him to kill one or two of them but he would surely perish in the process.

Su Yu did not think further as he backed away, contrary to the three Greater Goblins expectations and retreated into the group of Lesser Goblins once again.

The three monsters stared blankly for a moment before continuing as they pounced towards Su Yu.

Su Yu let loose a sigh of relief, monsters were monsters and when comparing intellect they simply could not compare to humans.

The surroundings were filled with Lesser Goblins and the situation seemed even more dangerous for Su Yu, but this was actually not the case. Although these Lesser Goblins created great danger for Su Yu, they also impeded the movements of the three Greater Goblins, causing them to be unable to act properly in unison.

Su Yu breathed deeply as he felt the strange energy in his left hand surge, after killing Lesser Goblins and two Greater Goblins, the strange energy within Su Yu's left hand was frightening and had reached an astonishing level, the black scales had already

reached his arm and the three Greater Goblins who were before him were clearly the best test subjects.

Chapter 24: Comprehension Of The Lizard Arm

Although he faced three Greater Goblins, the current Su Yu did not feel any fear as his mind was unbelievably calm, analyzing the situation as his footsteps become erratic, a single sway and he stuck to a Lesser Goblin that was retreating. A flying kick as he sent this Lesser Goblin hurtling towards one of the Greater Goblins.

The current Su Yu did not only have frightening strength within his left arm, the strength in all areas of his body had increased by two to three times. They were incomparable to the strength in his left arm but was sufficient to deal with the Lesser Goblins.

The Lesser Goblin screamed as it hurtled through the air, the Greater Goblin swayed its body as it dodged but because of this hinderance, it had fallen a metre behind the other two Greater Goblins.

The other two Greater Goblins seemed to fly through the air as they attacked Su Yu at the same time.

Seeing four claws stretching towards his body at the same time, Su Yu explosively retreated as his back knocked into a Lesser Goblin, sending it flying through the air as his momentum was halted.

Such a golden opportunity, the two Greater Goblins that were attacking certainly were not going to miss it as they explosively

attacked.

This time, Su Yu had no way to dodge as he grit his teeth and voluntarily rushed forward, ignoring the left one as he used all his strength to rush at the Greater Goblin on the right.

Su Yu had already been pushing the limits of his legs and his legs now kicked the ground with a “Peng!” as his body flew forward like an artillery shell, thereafter a second “Peng!” could be heard as his body collided violently with the Greater Goblin on the right.

Both sides were attacking with all their strength and this collision could be said to have injured both parties, Su Yu shouted as he spat out blood while the Greater Goblin howled as it tumbled, its left claw swiping towards Su Yu’s right shoulder.

Contrary to expectations, Su Yu did not dodge but rather chose to allow the enemy to claw at his right shoulder, the sharp claw immediately pierced through the flesh and fresh blood flowed, a howl of pain could be heard as Su Yu was pulled along and tumbled through the air with it.

The Greater Goblin by the side had missed as it hurriedly turned its body, however, it saw that Su Yu was howling as his left fist shot forth while tumbling, smashing into the chest of the Greater Goblin that had clawed his right shoulder.

Black scales coalesced together as the ‘Rending Claw’ activated, immediately rotating and creating a frightening vortex made of flesh, the Greater Goblin shrieked as Su Yu continued to swipe his

arm horizontally, causing his left arm which had immense destructive power to immediately grind its upper body into pieces, instantly killing it.

Su Yu had taken the hit from the Greater Goblin to create the chance for this attack, he had to kill a Greater Goblin as soon as possible, otherwise he simply would have no chance at all when facing three of them.

A single blow had killed a Greater Goblin and the two Greater Goblins were startled before recovering their senses and attacking again.

Although Su Yu had already killed one, the price he paid was not small. Five holes could be seen on his right shoulder where the claws had pierced and his organs had been affected, his entire body was numb and his from his throat the smell of blood continually surged upwards. If he were to suffer any further trauma, he would immediately spit out another mouthful of blood.

What he gained from this gambit far exceeded his expectations, he not only killed a Greater Goblin but his left arm had also absorbed the black crystal from the Greater Goblin causing more black scales to appear, in no time at all half his arm was already covered in black scales.

When he activated 'Rending Claw' once again, the black scales gathered together and faintly released white misty stuff that seemed to create a pushing momentum that caused the speed and destructive power of his 'Rending Claw' to increase further.

Su Yu let out a low growl as he went forward, his left hand activating the 'Rending Claw' as he swung it towards the remaining two Greater Goblins.

The two Greater Goblins had seen the fearsomeness of the 'Rending Claw' and did not dare to face it head on as they each dodged to the side.

By the door of the supermarket, groups of Lesser Goblins were engaged in intense combat with Qin Jia Gui and the others. As Qin Jia Gui had predicted, with the other areas blockaded off, the Lesser Goblins could only attack from the two metre opening and each time only three to four of them could attack. Their numbers advantage was gone and in a one to one battle, Qin Jia Gui and the other's clearly held the advantage.

In no time at all, seven to eight corpses of the Lesser Goblins were littered on the ground.

The current Su Yu had already absorbed the crystal energies of three Greater Goblins and half his arm was already covered in black scales, his strange energy, speed, reaction and strength had all risen to another level and at this moment when he fought against two of them, he actually held the advantage.

This was the first time that he felt that these Greater Goblins were quite weak as he kicked off and activated the 'Rending Claw', "Chiii", black scales gathered together and faint white mist was released, it seemed as though the 'Rending Claw' was moving his

body itself as he shot forth like an artillery shell.

“Peng!”

Although the Greater Goblin had dodged it did not manage to evade completely as its left chest region suffered a blow, flesh and blood splattered as a big circular hole was dug through its body by the ‘Rending Claw’.

Waving his hand as he dragged, “Chi Chi Chi” as flesh and blood splattered, the frightening ‘Rending Claw’ was like a meat grinder as it immediately went through the Greater Goblin, bone and flesh as it finally split it into two. A black crystal flew from its body and entered Su Yu’s left arm.

Seeing this, the final Greater Goblin seemed to be terrified as it contemplated escaping but Su Yu howled as he attacked like a demon, his left hand immediately smashing into its skull.

“Poof”, the Greater Goblin swayed as it back away before falling to the ground, its head already perforated.

Another black crystal was absorbed into Su Yu’s left arm.

Absorbing another two crystals from Greater Goblins, Su Yu groaned as the strange energy swelled, his left arm trembled as the black scales grew and thoroughly covered his entire left arm. A faint black light could be seen flashing on its surface and on the back of his hand the ‘Eye of Perception’ had appeared as new information flashed through Su Yu’s mind.

“Comprehension of ability: Lizard’s Arm.”

With but a single thought, Su Yu activated the ‘Lizard’s arm’, black scales seemed to converge as his left arm continued to swell and twist, when the transformation stopped Su Yu was stunned, his left arm had become as thick as a thigh and was roughly two Chinese foot long, it could really be compared to the forelimbs of a enormous lizard.

At the same time, another piece of information flashed through his mind, when he was using the ‘Lizard’s Arm’ he would be unable to use ‘Rending Claw”.

“Lizard’s arm level one state, destructive power increased by two times, speed decreased to 70% of the original speed.”

Thereafter came a concise explanation on the abilities of the ‘Lizard’s arm’.

Chapter 25: Police

Su Yu raised this strange and thick 'Lizard's Arm' as he suddenly smashed it towards the ground, 'Bang!', the ground was split apart as a giant crater was formed.

Su Yu got a big fright. He drew back the Lizard's Arm form and seeing the giant crater he thought to himself that the Lizard's Arm had terrifying attack power, it was definitely great for causing destruction. However, in terms of real combat it could not be compared to the Rending Claws, the Lizard's Arm may have higher attacking power but its speed was reduced by thirty percent.

His left hand returned to normal as he rubbed his right shoulder as he discovered that the bloody hole that had been clawed by the Greater Goblin had already stopped bleeding and the wound was currently healing, it would likely heal within half a day without a scar remaining. This recuperative speed was simply phenomenal.

Seeing the ground that was littered with Goblin corpses, Su Yu had a thought. In their eyes, Goblins were certainly monsters but could they still be considered normal humans? Were they not also monsters?

Ma Zi Ye's delicate shout could be heard from the front as Su Yu lifted his head to look, twenty to thirty of the Lesser Goblins had been killed and with the threat of the Greater Goblins gone, Qin Jia Gui and the group would be able to hold without any problems.

Su Yu thought of how the Lesser Goblins could help increase

their strength and since they could manage, he did not help but rather tousled his hair as he prepared to watch from the side.

“Bang!”

Suddenly, Su Yu’s heart trembled as he heard a gunshot.

Why were there sounds of gunfire within the forest?

Su Yu felt an indescribable shock as he turned his head to look, more gunshots could be heard as several of the Lesser Goblins within the pack had their skulls blown apart as they fell to the ground.

Following the gunshots, two figures could be seen brushing aside the underbrush as they slowly walked over from the distant forest.

The two people wore police uniforms and held pistols, one was roughly twenty six to twenty seven years of age while the other seemed to be in his thirties. Although there were several parts of their police uniform that were worn out and dyed with blood, the sight of two men wearing police uniforms made Su Yu feel hope surge through him.

Policemen, they were real policemen. Su Yu was immediately able to identify that the two people that had appeared were a part of the People’s Republic of China(PRC) police force.

Their group of thirty odd people had carried the hopes of over

one thousand people within the school as they ventured forth, encountering many dangerous life and death situations and finally they had managed to find the police.

An ineffable feeling of excitement welled up within Su Yu as he felt the impulse to loudly howl.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” Gunshots continually rang out as one of the cops pistols ran out of bullets as he quickly removed his magazine as he took a fresh one from his belt and reloaded it before continuing to fire at the group.

Being suddenly attacked from behind, the Lesser Goblins were perturbed as they looked back and noticed that the three Greater Goblins leading them were already dead. Immediately, fear filled their hearts.

“Police! It’s the police!” In the supermarket, Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui and the others finally noticed that the two had come were policemen and the group began to madly shout as courage welled up within them causing them to rush out of the supermarket.

The police were here and they were finally going to be rescued. The thousand over people in the school had the hope of being rescued and they would soon return to their normal lives in the past, no longer needing to live their lives in fear each day.

“Kill!” The elated crowd rushed out of the supermarket as they were like tigers amongst lambs and the thirty over Lesser Goblins were thoroughly confused as they quickly ran away in all

directions, in no time at all they had all disappeared. The group naturally could not be bothered to chase as Li Dong ran forward and excitedly shouted: “Police, police officer..... Eh, there’s only the two of you?”

In his wild elation Li Dong suddenly felt that something was strange, the police had walked out from one side of the forest but there were only two of them, and their faces were filled with expressions of fatigue, even their police uniforms were worn out and they cut sorry figures, not appearing to have fared much better than them.

Their initial feelings of elation died down as Su Yu suddenly recalled his own conjecture, if this place was really a different strange world which the ‘Sky Hole’ had brought them to, these two policemen were likely just like them and also brought to this world, meeting them would likewise bring no respite for them.

Seeing the Lesser Goblins run away, the two cops finally stopped shooting as they looked towards Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui and the few others who were running out of the supermarket with strange expressions as they measured them.

“Are the few of your students?” The policeman in his thirties suddenly asked.

“That’s right, we’re students from AJ metropolis college of technology and trade. We’re not sure what happened to our school but it suddenly appeared within this forest. Police officers, you..... you must save us!” Li Dong suddenly shouted.

Hearing his words, the policemen exchanged glances and did not comment as they actually headed towards the supermarket.

Qin Jia Gui and the others slowly felt that something was weird about the police but still followed behind them.

Ma Zi Ye slowed down as she reached the back of the group and whispered to Su Yu: “I’ve also broken through.”

“Oh?” Su Yu stared blankly as he did not understand what she meant.

Ma Zi Ye continued: “Look at my right leg.” Her voice was excited and seemed pleased with herself.

Su Yu looked over as he saw that her right leg had strands of black rope that were as thick as fingers as they continually writhed, tangling with each other like living things seemingly very mysterious.

“Web of Metal!” Ma Zi Ye suddenly stamped her right leg as she softly exclaimed, the pieces of black rope spread from her right leg in all directions as it formed a web on the ground, Su Yu who was standing beside her suddenly felt as though his feet were tight and looked down to find that the black rope had tangled his feet making him unable to move.

After his initial shock, Su Yu stretched forth his left hand as the

‘Eye of Perception’ appeared and immediately the information regarding Ma Zi Ye flashed through his mind.

Tier one dark iron warrior

Race: Indeterminate

Abilities: Indeterminate

Others: Indeterminate

Su Yu now understood that Ma Zi Ye has also promoted and had become a tier one dark iron warrior like himself. This ‘Web of Metal’ was likely an ability that she had comprehended in the process.

“Congratulation.” Su Yu tousled the hair on the back of his head as he smiled, another person within their group had promoted to tier one dark iron warrior and their overall strength had increased.

A smile appeared on Ma Zi Ye’s face as she rescinded her ‘Web of Metal’, the strands of black rope disappeared from her right leg and everything returned to normal.

Chapter 26: Conflict

The two policemen walked into the supermarket and saw the food strewn all over the floor as their eyes lit up as they rushed forward and placed a bread as well as as instant noodles greedily into their mouths before seeming to think of something as they stopped and turned to look at the group.

“Can they be eaten?” The policeman in his thirties asked, it was clear that he was suspicious of the origins of the food.

Qin Jia Gui nodded as an expression of befuddlement appeared on his face, the two men dressed in police uniforms did not seem like they were rescue personnel who could help them but rather seemed as though they were people like them who were fighting for their lives within the forest.

Seeing Qin Jia Gui’s nod, the cop took a sniff and felt that the bread seemed fresh before finally placing it into his mouth and began eating, thereafter he also took a bottle of water from the ground and gulped big mouthfuls from the bottle before sighing as his face recovered some of its vigor.

The other cop who seemed slightly younger cop found the cigarettes within the glass cabinet as he opened the lid of one and took a cigarette before tossing one over to the other cop.

The older cop caught the cigarette as he placed it into his mouth before receiving a lighter and lit it, taking a puff he looked at the group of people before him and spoke: “I’m Yu Guo Zhi, he’s Sun

Da. We're police officers from the local police station of Ji Xian, you're all students from that college? Only the few of you? No teachers?"

Qin Jia Gui looked back at Lin Shi as he said: "I'm called Qin Jia Gui, he is the only teacher within our group."

Yu Guo Zhi looked at Lin Shi as he said: "Teacher, what are your current circumstances, can you give an account of it?" It was clear that he was unwilling to engage in a conversation with Qin Jia Gui and these younger students and seemed to feel that only the teacher had the authority to represent this group and speak equally with him.

Lin Shi stared blankly before speaking: "Yesterday around two in the afternoon, our school suddenly appeared within this forest. There are now over a thousand teachers and students stuck there, unable to advance or retreat and the food within the school will only barely last two days. The situation is very dire....."

Lin Shi seemed as though he wanted to continue but Yu Guo Zhi was already waving his hand: "I understand, the few of you have been sent out of the school to investigate the surroundings right? Ha....."

Lin Shi made an affirmative noise in response but did not know how to carry on.

Zhao Shi Chang took over: "Officer Yu, are the two of you..... could the two of you..... be the same as us? What is the reason for

all that is going on?”

When Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da had first appeared, the group was wildly elated however after some interaction, their excitement died down. Seeing the sorry figures they cut and their actions as they went at the food like hungry ghosts, it seemed that they had fared even worse than them, and looking to depend on them seemed impossible.

Yu Guo Zhi took another puff before he replied: “It’s simple, we also don’t know the reason but we have indeed been brought to this area within the forest. All means to communicate with the outside world have been cut off and it is exactly as you see it, we are like stray dogs that have no where to return to, or it could be that some superpower created this practical joke or we could all just be dreaming.....”

Having said this, he suddenly fiercely threw away the cigarette in his hand as he continued: “Who the f*** can tell me exactly what is going on here? I also want to find someone to question about a reason.”

Yu Guo Zhi suddenly vented his anger at the group and Qin Jia Gui and the others became silent. At the back, Wei Zhang Ming suddenly shouted: “Practical joke? I remember, I remember something, it could possibly explain everything that is happening before us.”

“Eh?” Yu Guo Zhi’s eyes stared at him as savageness seemed to radiate within.

Seeing the gaze of everyone on him, Wei Zhang Ming coughed softly before continuing: “Has anyone watched the movie ‘The Truman Show’ before? The main protagonist of the show is a person called Truman and he lived in a world that was created by someone else. Everything that he believed to be real was actually created for him by the mega movie company of some superpower. Whatever he experienced was all part of an authentic show and everyone but him knew the truth. I think..... what we are going through right now could be the same as that of ‘The Truman Show’. We have actually been placed here by some group with certain backing and this area was created by them. In this place we have to struggle for our lives, escape or even kill and in fact..... in fact all the people in world can use their televisions to watch us perform?”

Having finished his piece, his voice had changed as he felt that this was simply too frightening.

Yu Guo Zhi looked at Wei Zhang Ming without speaking, Sun Da the younger looking cop looked had a despising expression on his face as he suddenly said: “If this place were really created artificially created, I think only aliens would have that sort of capability. On earth, no country has the scientific capabilities to create something with such an outcome.”

Wei Zhang Ming’s face was red as he thought about it. Sending an entire school into a forest within a matter of seconds and creating those green monsters, gaining strange energy when they killed the monsters, all this was simply inconceivable and definitely surpassed the limits of human knowledge. If all this were artificial, only aliens could have done it.

“In that case, I also don’t know the reason. That’s right, Su Yu has mentioned that it could be the ‘Sky Holes’. Our school as well as the supermarket could very likely have fallen into this forest due to the ‘Sky Hole’. If this is real then we currently aren’t on the world we were previously on.” Wei Zhang Ming seemed to recall something as he shouted.

Yu Zhi Guo stared blankly for a moment before speaking: “This seems to be rather logical, however, currently thinking about these things is simply f***ing useless, we need to think of how to carry on living. The food here would be enough for us to live on for ten days to half a month. With more time, we will be able to find a way out of this forest and properly understand what is going on in this f***ing place.”

Although this Yu Zhi Guo was in his thirties, his mouth constantly spewed vulgarities and came off as gangster with a foul mouth*.

[T/N*: Not exactly sure what this means 江湖痞气]

Qin Jia Gui immediately shouted: “No way! These food were found by us first and the school still has over one thousand people, everyone is waiting for our news.”

Yu Zhi Gui immediately took out his pistol as he pointed it at Qin Jia Gui’s head and said: “Young chap, do you have any f***ing objections?”

Qin Jia Gui's fists involuntarily clenched as a layer of jet-black metal skin emerged out from the back of his right hand, covering his entire fist.

Sun Da walked forward as he waved his hands, he spoke more gently than Yu Zhi Guo: "Don't be mistaken, we don't have any other intentions. All of us have suddenly appeared within this forest for reasons unbeknownst to us, we should be helping one another. With Yu Zhi Guo and myself here together with all of you, we have a good chance of making it out of this forest. As for the thousand over students you were mentioning..... We naturally feel concerned for them, however, we should first find a way out before going to help them. Isn't that right young fellow?"

Chapter 27: Fighting Over Food

Li Dong nodded: “What he said isn’t wrong.”

Qin Jia Gui looked at him angrily before taking in a deep breath and spoke: “The situation is like this, the school and us have an agreement that we will spend two days to investigate the situation outside and attempt to find a rescue team. In two days we must return to the school and if you are willing to, you can join us. If not, we will be heading back to the school first tomorrow.”

Sun Da frowned and Yu Guo Zhi laughed: “Young kid, I think you people must be misunderstanding our intentions? It’s been so difficult for us to find this food, how could we just divide it among so many people? That would simply be too wasteful. Sigh, why am I a police officer of the PRC? Nevermind, you people just follow behind us but be sure to listen to our orders. Everyone fill your backpacks with this food and as the matter regarding the thousand over students, let’s talk about it if we can stay alive.”

Sun Da continued: “That’s right, the dangers of this forest everyone should know right? Don’t think that the small green monsters’ that you’ve met are incredible. There are many more formidable things within the forest and if you follow us, you will actually have a chance at survival.”

Qin Jia Guo questioned: “Then when tomorrow comes, will we be returning to the school?”

Yu Guo Zhi was getting impatient as he snapped: “Don’t you

understand human language? There is no more food in your school. If we can't find a way out ourselves, why would we return to your school for? Damn young brat, of the group, you certainly have the most opinions."

Hearing him say his piece, Qin Jia Gui was determined as he said in a low voice: "Since it's like that, we will not carry on with you. We will allow you to take some of the food here. The two of you will each be allowed to carry one backpack worth of food, nothing more. Once you are done packing you can go."

Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da were stunned as they looked each other in the eye before looking over at Qin Jia Gui.

Qin Jia Gui's fists were clenched and he did not back down as he stared at them.

Having experienced so many life and death struggles, Qin Jia Gui did not even feel fear when faced with those monsters not to mention two cops who wielded guns. With the strange energy within his body, one to two gunshots would likely be insufficient to take his life.

Ma Zi Ye seeing the atmosphere become heavy, slowly made her way forward as she looked towards her right leg. She had her right leg poised on the ground and ready to activate the 'Web of Metal' at a moment's notice, trapping the two cops within.

"Teacher, what about you, what are your thoughts?" Sun Da suddenly looked over at Lin Shi as he shouted. Facing a group of students, although Sun Da and Yu Guo Zhi had guns, they were

still hesitant to engage in a conflict.

Although Lin Shi was a teacher, he was by nature a very quiet and soft spoken person, very low-key and hearing Sun Da's questioning he sighed and unwillingly spoke up: "We're all people who have landed in a difficult situation. We should be helping one another to find an exit however..... you people have no right to command us."

Yu Guo Zhi spat in contempt: "Your grandmother! Your father has only good intentions but the few of you useless things don't know how to appreciate it. Nevermind, we both find each other eyesores now, you walk your path and we'll walk ours. Your father no longer has any mood to talk nonsense with you and waste time. All of you leave, besides the things in your backpacks, all the other food, no one is allowed to take any, otherwise your daddy will use a gun to shoot him."

Hearing this Zhang Zhong Mou angrily retorted: "Hey hey, we were the ones who first discovered this place, all this food belongs to us. You call yourselves police officers and openly steal?"

Yu Guo Zhi looked at him with open disdain as he waved the gun within his hand, blowing at the tip. The threat behind his actions were clear.

Su Yu tousled his hair and softly muttered: "Things seem to have really gotten out of hand."

Sun Da's attitude was slightly better as he softened his tone and

looked at the group as he spoke in a low voice: “Everyone keep calm, we all have our objectives and want to make it out of this forest alive. There’s no need to be at loggerheads with each other. Although we are police officers, we are also humans and also want to go on living.....”

Stopping for a short while, he then continued: “Our greatest if not, only hope, is that the food here will last for ten days to half a month. Within this time frame, if we are lucky we may be able to find the exit and find a chance at life..... If the few of you continue to be blindly attached to those thousand over people in the school..... let me say something difficult to hear, if all of you go back to the school, going back and forth would be a huge waste of time. In addition, if we include those thousand over people, have you considered how much food they would require? By then the result would be that no one would have food to eat and everyone would starve. How many days do you feel you could live within this forest? I dare to say with certainty that if you people really choose to go back then everyone will only have death waiting for them.”

Sun Da’s words made the entire group solemn and even Qin Jia Gui could not find words to refute. A while later he yelled: “No! I..... I still have someone important within the school. No matter what, I will definitely go to the school to bring her along.”

The others seemed to have a flash of understanding as they suddenly understood why Qin Jia Gui was so staunch about returning to the school tomorrow. It was because of his girlfriend Yuan Ni Ping who was still in the school waiting for him.

Su Yu involuntarily thought of Jade as his mouth twitched, he was the same and no matter what tomorrow brought, he would

definitely go back to the school and find Jade.

He could be indifferent to the others but not towards Jade. If he threw Jade aside, even if he returned home his mother would kill him.

Sun Da noticed that Qin Jia Gui was determined and sighed before saying in a low voice: “How about this, those who are willing to come with us come over. As for those like you who cannot adapt to the circumstances and have no sense of priority, we don’t need you.” He thought in his heart that these people were smart people and besides Qin Jia Gui who was retarded the others would know to make the right choice.

Hearing Sun Da’s words, Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang were moved and nearly walked out of the group but quickly stopped as they suddenly thought of Su Yu.

Having come this far, Su Yu’s strength was clear for anyone to see. With him within the group, the probability of living when meeting with fearsome monsters would greatly increase. Although these two cops had pistols, their physical abilities were unknown and at this moment they could not make rash decisions.

”

Li Dong carefully asked: “Su Yu..... What do you think?”

The group’s gazes gathered on Su Yu and the two cops found it strange, they were thinking to themselves, was Lin Shi not the teacher? Why was this young kid who was standing at the back of the ground who looked so normal the leader?

Chapter 28: The Blood Red Beast

When Su Yu killed the three Greater Goblins, the two cops had not arrived yet and they had not noticed the strength and fearsomeness of Su Yu.

Su Yu tousled his hair and seeing the gaze of everyone on him, he smiled: “Do you guys have any doubts? Haven’t we already decided long ago? Could it be that you are thinking of changing your minds after such a short time?”

Hearing Su Yu say this, Qin Jia Gui let out a sigh of relief as he finally relaxed, Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: “That’s right, this decision was what we came to earlier when we discussed, there’s no reason to change it because of outsiders, I believe that our decisions are never wrong, isn’t that right? Ha Ha.”

Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang who were initially moved, saw that Su Yu was not willing to listen to the arrangements of the two cops and ruled out this idea, compared to the two cops who had suddenly appeared, they still trusted Su Yu slightly more.

Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da noticed that not a single person from the group had walked forward and the two were beginning to feel resentful.

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: “Two police officers, asking us to join the two of you is impossible, the group with lesser people should listen to the one with more. I think you two should join us however along the way you have to listen to our commands, how’s

that?”

“Shut up!” Yu Guo Zhi’s eyes were wide, he was initially fuming and hearing Zhang Zhong Mou’s words the fire within him was lit as he lifted his pistol and suddenly pointed it towards Zhang Zhong Mou’s head as he shouted: “Young kid, do you believe that I’ll kill you with a single pistol shot? Don’t think that this old man won’t dare to shoot.”

Zhang Zhong Mou’s eyes flipped as Su Yu who was by his side casually walked forward, if Yu Guo Zhi’s finger moved, he would immediately act and break the arm that Yu Guo Zhi was using to hold the pistol.

In this strange forest and mad world, Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da could no longer be considered policemen, law and ethics were no longer applicable in this world and under the current circumstances it was as Yu Guo Zhi said, he really could open fire and kill someone.

The atmosphere became intense as Yu Guo Zhi’s mouth widened as he looked at Zhang Zhong Mou’s defiant attitude and Su Yu who actually took a few steps forward, his eyes slowly narrowed.

Sun Da who was by the side sighed: “Since we can’t go together, then let’s stick to earlier arrangement and each walk our own paths, you guys can leave.”

Li Dong shouted: “Why do we have to be the ones to go? Once we’re gone the two of you will empty out the supermarket right?”

How could we let this happen? If we are to go we will bring all this food with us.”

Sun Da had a faint smile as Yu Guo Zhi’s eyes narrowed and suddenly said: “Sun Da, it seems like talking won’t work, this class of brats, speaking frankly with all of you, if you are smart you better hurry and leave, otherwise..... this old man really wouldn’t mind killing all of you.”

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed loudly: “Frightened of you? We don’t get frightened easily.”

Qin Jia Gui also walked forward as the strange energy in his right hand surged, if there was any movement from the other side he would immediately pounce with a killing blow. After gained the strange energy, their strength and reaction speed had also increased by several times and the recuperative abilities of their bodies were even more frightening. The pistol was not that frightening in their eyes.

Yu Guo Zi was really enraged and was about to take action when Sun Da suddenly pulled him back and smiled: “It’s alright, let’s not drop to the same level as these kids, let’s go.”

Yu Guo Zhi was in a daze and felt that he must have surely heard wrong as he cried out: “What?!”

Sun Da secretly motioned to him with his eyes as he continued to pull him: “Let’s go.”

Yu Guo Zhi knew that Sun Da always had plenty of ideas and there must be some deeper meaning to his actions as he slowly put his gun down and followed Sun Da out of the supermarket.

The two people were actually just leaving like that without even taking any of the food, this was simply too stunning, were these people so easily convinced?

“That’s not right, even if they leave they would surely bring some food with them. Why would they leave empty handed? These two fellows must be planning something.” Zhang Zhong Mou suddenly softly shouted, even he who was usually more thoughtless had seen this and the others naturally realised that there was a problem as they looked at the two people who had already walked twenty over metres away.

The two people had their back towards the group as they walked closely together, slowly heading outwards. From their back views, the group could not see what the two were doing but they were actually engaged in a discussion and Sun Da was sneakily retrieving his pistol and loading a cartridge.

When the two sides were about to fight, Sun Da had suddenly recalled that his pistol had only a single bullet remaining. He purposely pulled Yu Guo Zhi away to use this time to load his pistol full of bullets.

Yu Guo Zhi understood Sun Da’s intention and a vicious smile floated onto his face, while walking with Sun Da he also began to sneakily load his pistol full of bullets as they exchanged a glance before stopped and suddenly turning.

As long as the two of them wielded their pistols at the same time, they had twelve bullets firing in total, even if they were unable to kill everyone they would at least be able to kill a big portion of them. With the distance they had created, they would be able to easily aim at Su Yu and even if Su Yu was truly formidable he would not be able to get close to them.

It could be said that they had already grasped the conditions for victory.

Seeing Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da who were over twenty metres away suddenly turn around, Su Yu, Qin Jia Gui, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and the others who were looking at them suddenly had changes in their expressions as Qin Jia Gui opened his mouth as though he wanted to shout something.

Yu Zhi Guo and Sun Da imprinted the expressions of each person of the group clearly in their minds as their hearts surged with a feeling of glee.

“Ha Ha Ha, these little kids want to beg for us to spare them? It’s too late!”

Yu Guo Zhi had an evil grin as he thought this when he suddenly felt that something was amiss as Qin Jia Gui suddenly shouted: “Be careful behind you!”

Behind? What’s coming from behind? Yu Guo Zhi had formulated this thought when a “Chii” sound could be heard and a

cold could be felt from his back as an intense pain spread from within his chest.

Yu Guo Zhi instinctively looked down and saw that there was a big hole before his chest, a bloody claw was already showing from the hole.

“Ka Cha!”

This was the final sound that Yu Guo Zhi heard in his life and originated from his head.

Sun Da who was by Yu Guo Zhi's side heard Qin Jia Gui's wild shout and immediately understood as he hurriedly turned before seeing a scene that made him terrified.

A monster whose entire body was crimson red had the body of an ape and a wolf or dog's head, its legs were clasped around Yu Guo Zhi's waist region and a single claw was pierced into his body, fishing out a heart that was dripping in fresh blood. Opening its ferocious mouth, it bit off half the skull of Yu Guo Zhi's skull as its tongue extended forth, licking and sucking the white brain matter within Yu Guo Zhi's exposed skull, as though it were sucking soft tofu. It sucked the skull dry of the juices in the blink of an eye.

“Aaaahh!” His body icy cold, Sun Da finally recovered as he shot in a crazed manner at the blood red monster that looked like a mix between a dog and an ape.

Chapter 29: Bloody Ape Dog

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Six bullets were fired in quick succession and the blood red monster actually lifted Yu Guo Zhi’s body to block and the six bullets flew into the body as fresh blood splattered everywhere.

On the other side, Qin Jia Gui, Su Yu, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and the others had all rushed outside.

Earlier they were still suspecting whether Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da had some scheme and were focusing on them as they were leaving when suddenly the two had stopped to turn. At almost the same time, they clearly saw that from a large tree behind the two, a blood red monster was like an apparition as it descended on them.

This monster’s speed was indescribably fast as it seemed to fly as it moved and immediately reached Yu Guo Zhi.

Qin Jia Gui’s shocked cry was too late and Yu Guo Zhi had lost his life in the twinkling of an eye.

Sun Da was terrified and had shot all six of his bullets, he did not expect that the monster would actually use Yu Guo Zhi’s body to block before waving its long arms and tossing the corpse towards him. It then lifted the beating heart that was in its other hand towards its mouth as it began to eat while making slurping sounds.

Since entering this strange forest, besides the Lesser and Greater Goblins, this was the third type of monster they had run into.

On the back of Su Yu's left hand, the 'Eye of Perception' had appeared as it flashed with a light and swiftly transmitted the information of this red monster into Su Yu's mind.

Name: Bloody Ape Dog

Information: Skilled at climbing

Agile

Likes to eat the brain matter and hearts of various living things

Solitary animal with few numbers

Easily attracted by blood and many corpses

Difficult to deal with

Su Yu immediately understood that this Bloody Ape Dog must have been attracted by the smell of blood and the countless corpses of the Lesser Goblins.

Looking through the various information given by the 'Eye of Perception', Su Yu realised that this Bloody Ape Dog would be difficult to deal with. It was fortunate that the Bloody Ape Dog worked alone and it seemed that there would only be this one monster before them.

Sun Da's six bullets had all fired into Yu Guo Zhi's corpse and he did not have the time to change cartridges before the Bloody Ape Dog had already tossed the corpse towards him, forcing him to hastily dodge while clenching his right hand. On the back of his right hand, black pieces of flesh seemed to bulge outwards, swiftly transforming into a black coloured fist, the fist seemed to be filled with air as it was as big as a soccer ball. It was clear that his right hand also contained strange energy within in.

The blood red figure flashed as the Blood Ape Dog's hind legs were filled with strength, with a single leap he flew high into the air, going over Sun Da's head before landing seven to eight metres behind him.

Sun Da's back was covered in cold sweat as he hastily turned to face the Bloody Ape Dog, Su Yu who was rushing over saw this and shouted: "Careful!"

This Bloody Ape Dog was frightening because of its speed, Sun Da had thought to turn his body to face the Bloody Ape Dog but was already too slow as the Bloody Ape Dog leapt, its body contracted and like a cannon ball, a 'Swish' sound could be heard before striking Sun Da.

At this moment, Sun Da had barely turned half his body and the fist which contained strange energy within did not have time to showcase its prowess before he felt a cold feeling on his scalp, his skull had been torn open by the Bloody Ape Dog and its other claw had reached in to scoop out some of that delicious brain matter.

“Eek! Eek!”

The Bloody Ape Dog made shrill cries as it had already jumped over ten metres away, putting the warm brain matter within its hands into its mouth, a drunken expression on its face.

Sun Da's eyes were wide but the gaze was blank as the originally swelled up fist seemed to be punctured as it deflated, with a “Bang!” Sun Da fell heavily to the ground, seeming to die with a grievance.

At this moment, Su Yu, Qin Jia Gui, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and Ma Zi Ye had all rushed out together. The Bloody Ape Dog stopped over ten metres from the group and faced them, not caring in the slightest as it ate Sun Da's brain matter, as though it were tasting the world's finest delicacies.

No one had expected that the insufferably arrogant duo of Yu

Guo Zhi and Sun Da would lose their lives in the blink of an eye, this Bloody Ape Dog was simply far stronger than the Lesser Goblins.

“Monster!” Everyone let’s attack together!” Qin Jia Gui angrily shouted as his right hand wielded a wooden club, wanting to rush forwards.

“Wait.” Su Yu suddenly stretched forth his left hand to stop Qin Jia Gui, thereafter he turned and signalled to Ma Zi Ye with his eyes.

From the Bloody Ape Dog’s demon-like movements, Su Yu could tell that this Bloody Ape Dog was much stronger than a Greater Goblin, Sun Da’s fist had thoroughly transformed into a huge black fist, it could be seen that he was at least a tier one dark iron warrior and in terms of strength he would not be too much inferior to Su Yu. When faced with this Bloody Ape Dog, he could not even handle a blow and if Qin Jia Gui rushed forward, it would probably take a single moment for the monster to claw him to death. If the group haphazardly rushed forth, with its speed, it would actually give it an opportunity and create an even more dangerous situation for the group.

Amongst the group, the only way that Su Yu could think of to deal with the demon-like agility of the Bloody Ape Dog was the ‘Web of Metal’ that Ma Zi Ye had recently comprehended.

The ‘Web of Metal’ would lock its movements and if it could be held in place for one or even half a second, Su Yu was confident in killing it instantly.

Ma Zi Ye noticed Su Yu's expression and immediately understood as she rushed forward together with Su Yu to attack the Bloody Ape Dog.

Su Yu stretched forth his left arm, "Chi, Chi, Chi", in no time at all half his left arm was covered in black scales. Su Yu planned to attack the Bloody Ape Dog first in order to attract its attention to create a chance for Ma Zi Ye to use her 'Web of Metal'. With the two people working together, the chances of killing the Bloody Ape Dog increased exponentially.

Contrary to his expectations, the Bloody Ape Dog actually backed away as they were rushing forward and scuttled back to a tree, in the blink of an eye it had climbed to the top of the tree as it looked down on the group,

Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye stopped as they stared blankly, they had never expected that the Bloody Ape Dog would actually run away.

Could it be that its stomach was already full and it had no more interest in the group? Or did it realise that there was danger and thus chose to run?

Su Yu tousled the hair on his head as he thought of the eyes that looked towards them as it run, that was certainly not an expression of fear, rather..... it seemed like that of a predator looking at its prey or similar to a cat that was teasing a mouse before killing it.

"I understand, it currently views us as prey and it could be that

he wants to play hunter and the hunted with us?” Su Yu muttered as he felt a headache coming on. He could guess that this Bloody Ape Dog was already satisfied after killing and eating Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da’s brain matter so it could run away. However, their group had already been eyed by it and it would be frightening if it were to hide in the darkness and wait for its chance to attack them.

Chapter 30: Night Falls! The Unknown House

“Su Yu, what are you mumbling about?” Ma Zi Ye could not clearly hear what Su Yu was talking about and could not help but to ask, seeing the Bloody Ape Dog run away, she finally let out a sigh of relief.

Su Yu shook his head but did not answer.

Zhang Zhong Mou looked at the ground with the gruesome corpses of Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da as he sighed: “Damn, anything can happen in this world. These two insufferably arrogant fellows really died so quickly. Ai, what kind of damned world are we in.”

Qin Jia Gui muttered: “I can’t believe that besides the green monsters called Goblins, there are other types of monsters..... it’s only that we don’t know whether there are even stronger ones.....” Suddenly, he felt shivers run throughout his body.

Zhao Shi Chang then said: “Su Yu, what was that ape-like thing that looked like a dog? They knew that Su Yu had the ‘Eye of Perception’ and should be able to see the monster’s information.

“Bloody Ape Dog, its speed is simply too fast, I’m afraid that it’s even harder to deal with than the Greater Goblins, also..... I feel that it wasn’t as simple as the Bloody Ape Dog running away, everyone please be extra careful, we won’t know when it will suddenly sneak attack us.”

Su Yu had thought for a long time before finally deciding to share his conjectures.

His words had just been spoken and Qin Jia Gui and the rest were all in a daze as they looked back at him. It could be imagined if such a creature were to constantly watching them and attacking at any time, how deadly the situation would be. This thought sent shivers down each of their spines.

The group involuntarily moved their bodies as they swept their gaze at the surroundings, afraid that the Bloody Ape Dog would suddenly appear and no one wanted to end up like Sun Da or Yu Guo Zhi with their skulls ripped open and brain matter eaten up.

“Su Yu, don’t frighten us like that.” Ma Zi Ye said this but in her heart she believed eighty percent of his words.

Su Yu lightly sighed before continuing: “I also hope that I’m only frightening you guys, we can’t stay here anymore, these corpses may attract even more danger for us. That Bloody Ape Dog must have been drawn here by the smell of blood from the corpses.”

As Su Yu said this, the group became apprehensive as Zhao Shi Chang immediately said: “Alright, everyone let’s grab our bags and go, we’ve really stayed here for far too long.”

The group returned to the supermarket and grabbed the backpacks that belonged to them. Ma Zi Ye picked up her backpack then proceeded to take another instant noodle as she ripped it open and started to eat, as though she were eating the most delicious

food in the world.

Zhang Zhong Mou lit another cigarette and looking at the way Ma Zi Ye was eating her instant noodles, he laughed: “In the future I’ll call you instant noodle princess, how’s that? This nickname seems to fit you quite well.”

Ma Zi Ye glared at him as she softly harrumphed in indifference: “Big cigarette addict.”

Before leaving, Qin Jia Gui was firm in having Sun Da and Yu Guo Zhi’s corpses hidden and the group was helpless as they were afraid to tarry and immediately brought the corpses to a room in the supermarket, locking it tight and preparing to leave when Li Dong put forward a question.

The food they left behind at the supermarket, once they left and people like Sun Da or Yu Guo Zhi came along and took it, what would they do?

With regards to his question, nobody had an answer. There was simply too much food and the group had no way to bring it all at once. Finally, they still decided to leave the food and everything would depend on the group’s luck.

When everyone finally left the supermarket, they realised that the sky was already turning dark and Zhao Shi Chang whipped his phone out to check the time.

Looking at his phone, Zhao Shi Chang then said: “It’s no wonder the sky is already becoming dark, It’s already close to 5pm.” Five in the afternoon meant that they had barely one hour before the sky turned fully dark.

“Let’s go.” Qin Jia Gui walked in the front as he bypassed the supermarket and continued by running in the direction of an even denser forest.

No one commented and they carried their bags and held their wooden clubs as they followed closely behind, running at a similar pace.

Along the way they did not encounter any further danger and only saw a few corpses of Lesser Goblins. Su Yu looked carefully and noticed that almost all of them had been killed in a single gunshot, he immediately guessed that they must have died at the hands of Sun Da and Yu Guo Zhi.

The sky was becoming darker and Su Yu felt that in the darkness there were a pair of evil eyes that were constantly looking at the group, waiting for the chance to strike. This feeling was simply too frightening.

Feeling apprehensive, Su Yu slowed his speed and voluntarily became the last man in the group as the strange energy in his left arm circulated. If his guess was correct, the Bloody Ape Dog would attack at any time and amongst the group only he had the capability to barely contain its attack. To prevent further casualties, Su Yu had fallen to the back as a precaution.

“When it’s 6pm, let’s stop to rest.” Qin Jia Gui looked at his handphone while seeking the opinion of the group.

The sky was becoming darker and darker and the group were rushing within this forest, all kinds of difficulties would immediately increase and dangers would also definitely increase. Qin Jia Gui’s words received the acknowledgement of the group, they had already been through a day filled with danger and the group’s nerves were taut, they really required a good rest.

Contrary to Su Yu’s expectations, the Bloody Ape Dog did not appear to attack them again and it was already 6pm when the group saw a house in the distance.

This house took up a huge piece of land and although it was far from that of their school, it was certainly much larger than the supermarket and from a distance, the building that sat there in this forest seemed like an ancient enormous ferocious and wild beast.

Having the first experience, the group was not as elated upon seeing a building but were rather filled with nervousness, they did not know what this house was or what dangers it would bring.

The group stopped as Zhao Shi Chang said in a low voice: “What do we do?”

Qin Jia Gui was silent for a moment before he replied: “Let’s go up and take a look, everyone be careful.”

The sky had already become dark and the group had to use the light from their torch lights to walk. At this moment, several of them had already retrieved the torch lights from their backpacks.

Qin Jia Gui continued: “Everyone let’s use them sparingly, using two should be enough.”

“What he said is true, now that we don’t have any further provisions, we should save what we can.” Ma Zi Ye said this and kept the torchlight which she had just taken out.

Qin Jia Gui held one torchlight while Zhao Shi Chang held another as they headed towards the house. Zhang Zhong Mou, Ma Zi Ye, Li Dong and the others followed closely behind with Su Yu bringing up the rear. The rear position was naturally the most dangerous and since he was slightly stronger than them he decided to take up this burden.

In this kind of world, being afraid of death would actually cause a person to die faster.

Chapter 31: Local Police Station Of Death

Passing through the dense forest and slowly nearing, the group could see from the streams of light emitted from the torchlights that there were many Lesser Goblins littering the ground. Looking closely at the gun wounds of this corpses, it was clear that they had all been shot to death.

Could these also have been killed by Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da?

The group was startled and Qin Jia Gui flashed the torchlight in his hand at the house before them and said: “Everyone look.”

The group looked over and saw that above the big doors of the house there was a plaque and on the plaque it was written: “Ji Xian Local Police Station.” Currently there were green juices and red blood staining it.

Their hearts were shocked as the group immediately thought back to what Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da had mentioned. They were from the ‘Ji Xian Local Police Station’, could it be that this police station had suffered the same fate as their school and had actually been brought to this forest through the ‘Sky Hole’? If that was the case, it was likely that Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da were not the only two police officers around.

Thinking of this, the group could only hurry forward, ignoring the danger as they soon saw the aftermath of an intense struggle. There were many corpses of Lesser Goblins mixed with several corpses wearing police uniforms, these corpses either had their

skulls smashed in or were pierced through in the chest and stomach. As the group continued forward, the number of police corpses they could see numbered at least twenty to thirty people.

“Could it be that Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da were the only policemen within the police station to make it out alive?” Although Zhang Zhong Mou was usually courageous, at this moment he felt a chill all over his body as he softly spoke.

There were corpses of Lesser Goblins and policemen interspersed on the ground, the white walls were all stained with green juice and red blood that truly shocked the eyes and astonished the heart.

“Hey guys, look over here.” Suddenly Qin Jia Gui’s torchlight stopped at a door. This was a metal door and at this moment it was weirdly bent in, as though a strong force had caused it to bend inwards.

The group looked at each other in shock, to bend an anti-theft metal door, how much force would be required? A lesser Goblin could never do this and even a Greater Goblin may not have been able to do this, what sort of power could cause such destruction?

Suddenly, there was a soft “Bang” that could be heard from a distance.

In this quiet surroundings, the soft sound seemed especially daunting.

The group exchanged glances as they stopped for half a second before slowly saying in unison: “That way.” Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Lin Shi and the others rushed towards the walkway where the sound came from.

This police station was rather large and the group quickly ran down the walkway. There was still a courtyard at the back and the courtyard was very messy and littered with Lesser Goblin corpses. At this moment the ‘Bang! Bang!’ sounds that seemed as though a door were being smashed was becoming clearer and clearer, it was clear that the sound was coming from the end of the courtyard from another two storey building there.

Who was smashing the door? Was it a human or a monster? The group was curious and apprehensive at the same time.

Qin Jia Gui used his torchlight to light the way as he softly said: “Let’s go, everyone be careful!” without much thought he went ahead first to check out the situation.

“Roar!” A hoarse roar could be heard and the arrival of Su Yu and the group seemed to have attracted the other party’s attention. When Qin Jia Gui and Zhao Shi Chang rushed into the two storey building, they saw a long walkway and on both sides of the walkway were rooms. The end of the walkway had an anti-theft metal door and at this moment there were three big green monsters that were continually smashing at the metal door. When the group rushed over, the metal door seemed to have deformed slightly.

These three green monsters were clearly Greater Goblins which

were much stronger than Lesser Goblins.

Qin Jia Gui held his torchlight and flashed it at the three monsters at the end of the walkway, a roar could be heard from the Greater Goblins as they stopped attacking the anti-theft door and began rushing towards the group.

Qin Jia Gui held the torchlight in his left hand while his right hand gripped a wooden club, on the back of his right hand, metal speckles appeared. By his side, Zhao Shi Chang also made a low growl as he courageously went forward.

Although Greater Goblins were certainly frightening, they had also become much stronger and most importantly killing a Greater Goblin was a crucial factor in allowing them to evolve.

Ma Zi Ye was only slightly slower than them and on her right leg, strands of black rope could be seen, she was the second person besides Su Yu to become a tier one dark iron warrior and at this moment she wanted to test her new abilities.

The walkway was barely two metres wide and the two Greater Goblins lifted their arms as they roared and in the blink of an eye had met head-on with Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and Ma Zi Ye.

Ma Zi Ye delicately shouted as she stamped her right leg, strand after strand of black ropes spread out from her right leg, activating the 'Web of Metal' and attempting to snare the two Greater Goblins who were attacking.

Su Yu was afraid that they would mess up and followed closely behind Ma Zi Ye, he then saw Qin Jia Gui growl as he dropped the torchlight in his hand while he was knocked flying by the rushing Greater Goblin.

By the side, Zhao Shi Chang was in greater danger and the wooden club in his right hand had been grabbed by the Greater Goblin, the other claw of the Greater Goblin was aimed at his head and with the sharpness of the claw, a hit would surely kill.

Su Yu growled as he rushed forward, he had no time to interfere with the Greater Goblins attack and could only use his body to knock into Zhao Shi Chang. Knocking him away from the killing blow as black scales appeared on his left hand with “Chi Chi” sounds as the ‘Rending Claw’ was activated and sent forth.

The Greater Goblin did not know how destructive the ‘Rending Claw’ was and actually attempted to use a hand to block while stretching out its other hand forward and aiming towards Su Yu’s heart.

A sudden miserable shriek could be heard from its mouth as the right hand that tried blocking Su Yu’s ‘Rending Claw’ was thoroughly minced, by the time it realised that things were bad, Su Yu’s left hand continued with the ‘Rending Claw’, going through the right shoulder and continuing down to the left waist, causing the entire body to be rent in two, organs littered the ground and green juice splattered everywhere as the Greater Goblin immediately died a gruesome death.

Su Yu was able to kill one of the Greater Goblins in a single

moment and Ma Zi Ye's 'Web of Metal' finally showcased its power as the strands of black rope followed the ground and formed a web, tangling the other two Greater Goblins.

By the time the two Greater Goblins realised that something was amiss, their two feet were already tangled by the strange and wriggling mass of black rope, as for Ma Zi Ye, she was already flying through the air and attacking with her right leg.

“Chiii”

Her right leg flew through the air in an arc and smashed directly into the face of one of the Greater Goblins, Ma Zi Ye landed heavily on the ground and used her two hands to turn around and stand up steadily. As for the Greater Goblin that had been smashed in the face, its face had been smashed apart like tofu as it fell to the ground.

After promoting to the tier one level, Ma Zi Ye had not only comprehended the 'Web of Metal', the strength within her right leg had gone up several times and her previous kick was a culmination of her Wu Shu background and the strange energy within her right leg. She named this move the '[Flying Spade](#)', gathering the momentum from running and kicking out, the strength was astonishing and even if it were a thick and heavy wooden door, this kick would thoroughly destroy it.

[Flying Spade is a Chinese pole-arm](#)

Chapter 32: Zhang Zhong Mou Advances

Ma Zi Ye stood up as she felt the black crystal from the Greater Goblin disappear into her right leg. There was an elated expression on her face as she felt the stronger energy fluctuations within.

“Ha Ha..... This..... This feeling.....” Suddenly Zhang Zhong Mou who was by the side began to shout as he touched his face.

Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye hurried over to see and saw that half of his face had actually become rock, his hand which he used to knock on the surface actually felt pain from doing so.

Su Yu looked at his side and saw that the third Greater Goblin’s head was smashed in and had already died a gruesome death.

When Qin Jia Gui had fallen down, Zhang Zhong Mou who was behind had rushed forward as Ma Zi Ye’s ‘Web of Metal’ had come into effect and locked the two Greater Goblins in place.

As Ma Zi Ye did her flying spade to one of the Greater Goblin’s face, Zhang Zhong Mou scored an easy kill on the other Greater Goblin.

Although ‘Web of Metal’ lasted for only a second, this second of immobility made the final Greater Goblin forget to block in its panic as Zhang Zhong Mou who frantically wielded his wooden club, and was able to smash its head in.

Zhang Zhong Mou had already absorbed the crystals from several Lesser Goblins and the strength within his arms had gone up by at least twice even though they were not the initial point where the strange energy gathered. With his crazed attacks of the club, he was finally able to kill the final Greater Goblin.

Absorbing the crystal of this Greater Goblin, Zhang Zhong Mou had finally promoted to a tier one dark iron warrior.

Zhang Zhong Mou who was wildly elated felt appreciation for his strength for the first time as the strange energy surged and half his face actually transformed into stone, furthermore, he had also comprehended an ability that belonged to him.

Three Greater Goblins had been wiped in an instant and Zhao Shi Chang unsteadily climbed off the ground as he looked to Su Yu and softly said: “Thanks.”

He knew that earlier he had been too rash in wanting to kill a Greater Goblin to evolve and had used too much force, nearly dying at the hands of the Greater Goblin. If Su Yu had not acted when he did and knocked him aside, he would have already been a goner.

Su Yu laughed as he shook his head and indicated that it was nothing much before looking towards the anti-theft door at the end of the walkway. The three Greater Goblins were working hand in hand to break it earlier and the anti-theft metal door had begun to deform, if they had arrived slightly later this door would have been thoroughly destroyed.

Qin Jia Gui picked up his fallen torchlight and looking at Zhang Zhong Mou's stone transformed face, his heart surged with an indignant feeling. He was much more serious than him and clearly better than him in many ways but this fellow was simply too lucky and had actually killed the final Greater Goblin.

“Let's go and see what's behind the anti-theft door.” Ma Zi Ye was feeling very satisfied, her first usage of the ‘Web of Metal’ had great results and a single ‘Flying Spade’ had killed a frightening Greater Goblin, it must be known that if this was the past her she simply could not imagine herself doing something like that.

The group were walking towards the metal door when a miserable shriek was suddenly heard from behind them.

Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye, Zhao Shi Chang hurriedly turned back and saw a black red figure flash by as it hastily retreated and disappeared. Wen Rui who was standing at the back of the group had half his skull exposed, it had been torn in half and his eyes were currently wide and twisted in terror as his body swayed before falling to the ground dead.

“Bloody Ape Dog! Damn!” Su Yu angrily shouted as he turned to rush over, however, the outside was simply too dark and with night set in, it was simply impossible to spot the figure of the Bloody Ape Dog.

The group had serious expressions as they rushed over, Su Yu's guess was correct and the Bloody Ape Dog had indeed put them in

its sights, suddenly attacking and with its speed, there was simply no way to defend against its attack.

“What should we do?” Li Dong’s voice was filled with fear as he trembled while speaking.

Su Yu’s face was dark as he walked back to the walkway and continued towards the anti-theft door.

The group could feel Su Yu’s current emotions and he was thoroughly incensed.

“Su Yu.” Zhang Zhong Mou who had just felt the elation from promoting, soon calmed down, someone amongst them had suddenly died and this was a blow to the group. Their group had only ten odd people remaining and each person was very important, seeing Su Yu’s dark countenance Zhang Zhong Mou hurriedly called out.

not stop or look back as he replied: “It will return and when it does, it will be its last move. This I promise!” His two fists were clenched tightly and the strange energy was surging and swelling, the anger within his body seemed like it could explode at any time.

The feeling of knowing that one was a prey of a predator but being completely helpless, this pressure was simply stifling.

Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and Lin Shi had heavy expressions on their faces and even Ma Zi Ye no longer felt the

excitement of killing her first Greater Goblin.

Amongst the group, Ning Yan was the only one who still had a dreamy expression, as though whoever died did not concern her and within the group several people had begun to ignore her. Although she was very pretty, but if she kept this up and did nothing, the group felt that she not only failed to contribute but also became a burden.

Su Yu walked to the end of the walkway as he looked at the slightly bent anti-theft door and attempted to push it but it did not budge an inch.

The continual attacks of a few Greater Goblins caused a slight deformation in the anti-theft door, it could be imagined how tough it was.

What was inside that would make these Greater Goblins smash at the door in such a crazed manner?

Su Yu lightly growled as he activated his ‘Lizard Arm’.

“Eh?” Ma Zi Ye and the others exclaimed as they noticed that Su Yu’s left arm suddenly swelled and not only did black scales cover it, it seemed to also become thicker and longer and the flesh on it seemed to swell, becoming a large beast’s arm. This was precisely the ability of the ‘Lizard’s Arm’, although his attack speed was decreased, his strength had increased by several times.

Without a word, Su Yu hefted this huge black door and smashed it toward the anti-theft door.

“Bang!”

The originally deformed anti-theft door immediately let out an explosive sound as the walls beside it actually seemed to faintly tremble, the group was shocked as Su Yu exclaimed and threw a second fist out.

“Dang!”

The anti-theft door finally thoroughly bent inwards and seemed to be sent flying from the bent door frame that it was attached to.

Su Yu felt a tearing sensation within his chest, this was the result of using too much force.

Su Yu took a deep breath as he walked forward half a step and the back of his head felt cool as a cold object seemed to be pressed against it.

“Stop!” A delicate voice could be heard by his ear.

Su Yu’s entire body was cold and he knew that this was a pistol.

Having someone point a pistol at the back of your head, this was a first for Su Yu and he did not dare to move an inch. On his

forehead, cold sweat was flowing and although he had become strong because of the strange energy and had strong recuperative abilities, if he were shot through the head with a gun at such a close range, he would surely die.

Chapter 33: Female Cop and Young Kid

Zhang Zhong Mou who was following closely behind did not understand what was going on as he loudly argued: “Young master Yu, why are you standing there in a daze? Could it be that there’s a lady there with showing her naked body?” He wanted to squeeze past Su Yu and head inside.

“Stop right there.” Su Yu commanded.

The credit of Su Yu’s words were great and the group immediately stopped where they were as they looking towards the insides of the metal door stunned.

At this moment, Su Yu’s eyes had gradually gotten used to the darkness and could clearly see the situation within the anti-theft door.

This seemed to be a library archive as files and folders could be seen stacked everywhere, the anti-theft door had been shoved away by Su Yu and had flown into a cabinet, causing it to be smashed open as the files to fall messily to the ground.

By the side leaning against a wall was a little girl who sat there hugging her knees, her eyes were filled with fright as she looked over at Su Yu. That frightened expression of this helpless child would remain in Su Yu’s mind for a long long time.

By his side was a lady wearing a police uniform, her hands were holding a pistol as it pressed against the back of his head, her face

had a nervous and prepared expression on it and did not seem to relax just because he was a human.

“We don’t have any ill intentions, the few Greater Goblins have already been killed by us, we only want to help.” Su Yu immediately understood the situation and swiftly explained the situation, having a gun held to the back of his head was really stifling and if the lady became agitated and pulled the trigger, everything would be over.

While he spoke, his left hand was tightly clenched and if the other side had any sort of movement, he would immediately attack with the ‘Rending Claw’.

He did not wish to kill others but did not wish for himself to be killed by them.

Hearing Su Yu’s explanation, the female cop noticeably eased up as she softly said: “Back up, all of you back up.”

It was clear that she was not totally convinced of Su Yu and the group.

Su Yu could understand as he slowly backed away, thereafter Zhang Zhong Mou, Qin Jia Gui and the others also saw what was going on as they slowly backed off.

Zhang Zhong Mou was indignant as he voiced out: “Damn, what’s this about? We helped kill those monsters and could be

considered to have saved you, yet this is how you treat your benefactors?”

As she forced Su Yu and the others back more than ten metres, the female cop finally gave a sigh of relief as she put down her pistol. While they were backing off, she was assessing them and also saw the three corpses of the Greater Goblins lying on the ground.

Previously when Su Yu and the group had engaged the three Greater Goblins in an intense battle she had heard the commotion, however, in this dangerous world, her instinct for self-preservation resulted in her not trusting strangers who appeared so suddenly, this may also be the wariness that came with her profession.

At this moment, borrowing the light from Qin Jia Gui's handheld torchlight, Su Yu could clearly see these female cops features, initially he had thought that this cop would be the mother of the little girl inside but on close inspection he found that this female cop seemed to be about twenty five to twenty six years of age, the police uniform was fitting and accentuated her curves, she seemed mature and full, her short skirt exposed two beautiful legs and under the currently gloomy and frightening atmosphere, there was an indescribable beauty to her.

The female cop's skin was white like snowy jade, her eyes were big and her lashes were long, she was quite a looker and even movie stars who had makeup on would pale in comparison.

Looking at her, Su Yu felt it was not likely that she was the little

girl's mother, the little girl seemed to be about seven to eight years old, could the female cop have given birth so young?

As they were lost in their thoughts, Zhang Zhong Mou suddenly hollered: "Hey, are we just going to stand here? Forget about it, since people can't appreciate our kindness, let's leave young master Yu."

Su Yu shook his head as his hand tousled his hair, voluntarily walking forwards.

The female cop noticed that Su Yu was coming closer and immediately stared at him while raising her pistol.

Su Yu's hands lifted into the air showing that he had no ill intentions as he slowly opened the backpack behind him and allowed her to see the food and water within.

The female cop saw this and her expression seemed to become more gentle, she could not help but swallow a mouthful of saliva and it seemed that she was really starving.

Seeing her expression, Su Yu brought the backpack and walked in. This time, the female cop did not stop him however tightly held onto the pistol as she stayed guarded.

Zhang Zhong Mou who was behind saw Su Yu walk in and also moved forward however was blocked by Qin Jia Gui as he shook his head: "That cop is simply too apprehensive, it's hard to blame

her, suddenly meeting such a big group of us would be nerve wrecking and too many people in there would actually make her more nervous. Let's just wait out here for a while."

Zhang Zhong Mou listened to his words and grunted, he decided to not to go in as he lit a cigarette and replied: "How about it, I've got plenty of cigarettes now, do you want a stick?"

Qin Jia Gui had a faint smile as he shook his head, he felt that Zhang Zhong Mou was too uncouth with his words and did not want to be bothered with him. He could not understand how Zhang Zhong Mou and Su Yu had become such good friends, towards Su Yu, Qin Jia Gui only felt a deep respect within his heart.

Su Yu carried his backpack as he walked in, he crouched down before the little girl who was sitting by the wall and took a bread out as he smiled: "Go ahead and eat it." He also retrieved a bottle of water.

The little girl had a frightened expression on her face but feeling the warmth from Su Yu, the fear on her face gradually lessened. She had not eaten for an entire day and was starving, as she accepted the bread she began to take big bites but started to choke.

Su Yu hurriedly brought the water as he lightly patted her back: "Don't rush, there's still plenty of food with big brother, here drink some water."

Little kids were very easy to coax and the fear on the little girl's

face gradually disappeared as she had a thankful smile on her face.

Su Yu felt satisfied as he smiled and stood up, looking over to the female cop who was still holding on to her pistol as his hands spread out and laughed: “Still don’t believe in us?” Holding out some bread and biscuits, he indicated for the female cop to come over and take it.

The female cop gently grunted and said in a soft voice: “I’m not hungry.” Having said this, her stomach made growling noises and her face immediately turned red.

Su Yu did not laugh at her but rather softly sighed: “We actually came across a supermarket along the way and obtained this food, otherwise we would also be starving.” After thinking for awhile, he continued: “If you two don’t mind, you can follow us. If you don’t wish to, we can leave this bag of food for you and leave this place.”

Su Yu saw that the apprehension of the female cop towards the group was too deep and did not wish to push the matter. Under the current circumstances, he did not need to ask but could guess that this police station had also suddenly appeared within the forest like the school and suffered the attacks from Lesser and Greater Goblins.

This female cop and little girl must have been the lucky survivors that hid here but were discovered by the Greater Goblins and they had happened upon them resulting in this current situation.

Chapter 34: Hunting The Bloody Ape Dog

As for why the little girl was within the local police station, she did not say it and Su Yu naturally had no way to guess, these were of course unimportant side details.

This female cop heard Su Yu's words and her expression seemed to change, Su Yu noticed this as he smiled and said: "Farewell, you two be careful, we're leaving." Then he proceeded to leave.

The female cop looked at Su Yu's back and seeing that he was about to leave, she could not help but shout: "Wait..... wait!"

Su Yu stopped as he looked back and smiled, the smile on his face made the female cop feel dazzled.

This smile of Su Yu's would be engraved in her mind forever.

The female cop was finally infected by Su Yu's amiability and dropped her guard, Zhang Zhong Mou, Qin Jia Gui, Ma Zi Ye and the others walked in and seeing that there were also females in the group, the female cops last vestiges of wariness also disappeared.

After an initial round of introductions, the group found out that her name was Zhou Bi Rong, a police officer from this police station. As for the little girl, she was called Ding Shan and had been brought to the police station because she had become lost while out playing. At that time Zhou Bi Rong had just gotten the details of her address and was planning to send her home when the change occurred, following the short rumbling sounds the entire

sky had changed and the familiar surroundings had disappeared. Their police station had landed itself within this sinister and frightening forest.

The rest of the events were as Su Yu had guessed, the police had suffered an attack from a group of Lesser Goblins, it was fortunate that the police were not like the common folk and had weapons with them, allowing them to kill several of the monsters. Thereafter, the Greater Goblins had appeared and with their bullets finally running out, the group had fallen apart.

Zhou Bi Rong watched as her colleagues were killed and had remembered the archive library, taking advantage of the messy situation she then brought Ding Shan and hid over here, tightly locking up the anti-theft door. Finally, the other cops had all died but they had managed to survive thanks to the anti-theft door.

Su Yu spoke of Yu Guo Zhi and Sun Da and indeed Zhou Bi Rong did know them but she was unsure how they had managed to run away with their lives.

The area of the police station was not small and these Lesser Goblins could not possibly surround the entire complex, one or two people secretly escaping was no surprise.

Zhou Bi Rong heard Su Yu's conjecture regarding this world and could not help but have an expression of disbelief on her face. Seeing so many people, Ding Shan had long forgotten her fear and asked Zhou Bi Rong when she could go back home.

The group looked over at Ding Shan and sighed, it was good to be a child with nothing to worry about.

Having clarified matters, it was already night and compared to the forest outside, this place was a much safer area to rest and the group each found a room as they took turns to be sentries in groups of two.

Su Yu found a random place to lean against and Zhang Zhong Mou laid down by his side as he softly whispered: “Young master Yu, seeing your contemplative expression, what are you thinking about?”

Su Yu leaned on the wall as he tousled his hair: “Thinking of how to become a predator instead of being a prey.”

Zhang Zhong Mou was stunned as he said: “What do you mean? Young master Yu, can your words not be so profound.”

By the side, Ma Zi Ye harrumphed: “Big cigarette addict really is too stupid, he’s talking about the Bloody Ape Dog.”

Zhang Zhong Mou now understood as he laughed drily: “Instant noodles, you’re so smart, could eating instant noodles make someone smart?”

Initially he had called Ma Zi Ye ‘Instant Noodle Princess’ however he now shortened it to ‘Instant Noodles’ all because Ma Zi Ye loved to eat instant noodles.

Ma Zi Ye could not be bothered with him as she looked over at Su Yu: “So, have you thought of any ideas? If the Bloody Ape Dog continues to stalk us like this and attack from the dark, we would be constantly living in fear.”

Su Yu was silent for a while before he suddenly replied: “What do you guys think..... why would the Bloody Ape Dog not be willing to meet us head on but rather choose to sneak attack us?”

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: “Even I understand why, it’s because we have more people and can bully it.”

“That’s right.” Su Yu suddenly stood up as he continued: “If I haven’t guessed wrongly, the Bloody Ape Dog is constantly observing us and if someone falls behind, do you guys think it will sneak attack that person?”

Ma Zi Ye was shocked as she said: “You’re thinking of.....”

Su Yu nodded as he said heavily: “Everyone be careful, stick together and don’t fall behind. I will go out alone.” Su Yu wanted to kill this Bloody Ape Dog and was willing to use himself as bait to lure the Bloody Ape Dog out.

Ma Zi Ye stood up: “I’ll go with you, my ‘Web of Steel’ is the best for dealing with this kind of agile monster.”

Su Yu thought for a moment before shaking his head, if they two of them went together the Bloody Ape Dog would not necessarily

appear and although Ma Zi Ye's 'Web of Steel' was good, Su Yu could see the faults in it. It needed time to activate and with the speed of the Bloody Ape Dog, it could attack or escape within that time frame, making the 'Web of Steel' useless.

The third most important thing was that although Su Yu had confidence in fighting against the Bloody Ape Dog, if Ma Zi Ye were by his side and the Bloody Ape Dog chose to target her, things would get messy.

Thinking through all this, Su Yu felt that he would rather go by himself and face the danger, thus choosing to shake his head and reject her.

"With me alone, the chances of it appearing are greater. The few of you just stay here."

The outside was sinister and dark, on such a night only someone like Su Yu would dare to go out alone, if the others were requested to do so, they certainly would not dare.

"Zhang Zhong Mou went on: "You better come back earlier." He was quite concerned for Su Yu.

To this point, Su Yu had already become an integral part of their group and no one could imagine what they would do if something untowards happened to him.

Su Yu laughed: "I'm only going out for a while, if it doesn't appear then I'll be back in a jiffy."

Thereafter he walked out and closed the door for them.

Once out the door, Su Yu's entire body was tense with wariness as each nonchalant step he took was actually filled with wariness and his five senses were working to the extremes.

The strange energy from his left hand continued to flow throughout his entire body and this caused his senses to be especially sharp. If the Bloody Ape Dog did not appear it would be fine but if it did try to attack him, Su Yu had the confidence to instantly activate 'Rending Claw' and stab through it's body.

This Bloody Ape Dog had already brought them much pressure and threat, he wanted to take the chance when it had not caused that much devastation to kill the creature, otherwise the outcome of leaving it alive would be disastrous.

Following the walkway, Su Yu walked step by step as he walked out of this building and his way seemed free and unhindered, he continued out of the police station and before him were the corpses of the Lesser Goblins as well as the forest.

Su Yu stood before these corpses and turned slightly, seemingly very leisurely but at the same time, his entire body had tensed because he had finally felt the presence of that Bloody Ape Dog.

Chapter 35: Golden Goblin

The Bloody Ape Dog moved along the side of the wall, it did so silently as it continually moved closer to Su Yu.

Su Yu forced himself to look ahead and left his back facing the enemy, he was waiting for a life-threatening blow.

However, this would be his life-threatening blow for the enemy.

In order to confuse the enemy, he did not activate the scales on his left hand but rather was waiting for the enemy to strike before he activated his strange energy.

Under Su Yu's total concentration, he heard a soft 'swoosh' sound from the wall behind him and the Bloody Ape Dog had struck out towards Su Yu with a life-threatening blow the moment it had reached the perfect distance.

Compared to humans, although the Bloody Ape Dog was not stupid it simply would not think too much as to why a human would walk out alone. Was this not sending oneself out to be killed? It could only think that the human before him was a good target for it to act and with its strength, it could easily kill the opponent and enjoy the delightful taste of human brain.

As the Bloody Ape Dog initiated its attack, Su Yu took a deep breath as he turned and sent out the 'Rending Claw', this was a deliberate plan and Su Yu had a ninety percent certainty that a single fist would be able to bore through a bloody hole into the

monster's body.

“Ss!”

A sound came from beside Su Yu and he did not understand what was happening, when a figure pounced and suddenly the Bloody Ape Dog let out a shrill cry as it was caught by a pair of arms.

“Chii”

The pair of arms caught the Bloody Ape Dog and as the arms parted, the Bloody Ape Dog screamed miserably as flesh and blood splattered, the thin body was ripped into two as the Bloody Ape Dog died on the spot.

Thereafter an arm dug out a crystal from within the body as it swallowed it and threw the two halves of the Blood Ape Dog's corpse onto the ground.

Su Yu was dazed as he retreated several steps and felt the goosebumps on his body stand on end. A terrifying feeling of danger arose within him as the strange energy within his left arm surged, black scales appeared and on the back of his hand, the 'Eye of Perception' had appeared.

Absolute fear, absolute pressure, Su Yu had never thought that there was something that could make someone feel such stifling pressure and fear.

Just as Su Yu was prepared to kill the Bloody Ape Dog, a monster had suddenly appeared. With regards to its movements, Su Yu had not sensed it at all even though it had been close to his side.

This was a monster that looked like a goblin with the same green skin and its height was between that of a Lesser and Greater Goblin, its differences were very obvious when compared to the normal Goblins because its skin was covered in golden spots and its head was entirely gold. That ugly face was covered in gold skin and gave an oppressive feeling making one feel dazed while looking at it.

The 'Eye of Perception' automatically activated as a stream of information flowed through Su Yu's mind, in an instant, the information regarding this new monster which had easily killed the Bloody Ape Dog appeared within his mind.

Name: Golden Goblin

Information: Within a thousand Lesser Goblins there is a possibility for one to transform into a Golden Goblin, by constantly consuming the crystals of other beast races to advance, when its body becomes totally golden it would become the king amongst Golden Goblins, becoming a peerless king amongst the Goblin race and having the 'Golden Race' bloodline, its body contained the hidden treasure of the Golden Race. When killing a Golden Goblin, one would be able to obtain this hidden treasure.

This Goblin before him that was covered in golden spots was precisely a Golden Goblin that could appear once in every one thousand Lesser Goblins, its head had completely turned to gold

and other areas were still spotted with gold, it was clear that this Golden Goblin was still growing and even so, Su Yu still felt a stifling pressure emanating from its body, this feeling was simply too frightening.

By the time Su Yu felt that the situation was grim, the Golden Goblin had pounced towards him.

The Golden Goblin disappeared with a ‘swoosh’ and Su Yu wildly shouted as he instinctively swung his left arm.

“Bang!”

His left arm trembled as it blocked a blow from the Golden Goblin, however, Su Yu was still sent hurtling away from the impact of this blow.

Frightening, absolutely frightening, this was the first time Su Yu had met such a terrifying monster. Regardless of Bloody Ape Dog, Greater Goblin, all those monsters added up still paled in comparison to the strength of a Golden Goblin.

“Rending Claw!” Su Yu who had fallen to the ground shouted as he activated the ‘Rending Claw’, black scales coalesced together as white mist formed and with a turn of his body, the ‘Rending Claw’ dragged him and his body explosively forward in an attack.

This Golden Goblin actually stood there without dodging, both its hands were held together and the flesh on the outer areas of its

arms actually split apart revealing the edges of steel blades within.

“CLANG!”

An explosive sound could be heard as the ‘Rending Claw’ forcefully met with the golden steel edge, Su Yu felt his left arm violently tremble as though it were suffering the recoil of tens of thousands of catty, his legs immediately became wobbly as though he were drunk and swayed as he retreated.

There was a strange look that flashed within the Golden Goblins eyes when its golden steel edges had been knocked aside as it felt the power of the ‘Rending Claw’.

The strange expression flashed past and the face of the Golden Goblin reflected bloodthirstiness and elation, Su Yu’s strength made it interested and this Golden Goblin actually became excited.

A low growl came from its mouth as its two legs kicked the ground, the Golden Goblin was like a golden lightning as it rushed forward, its steel blades viciously rushing towards Su Yu’s chest region.

If this pair of steel blades landed, once the arms split it would rend Su Yu’s body apart and this Golden Goblin loved to kill its enemies in this gruesome manner.

Su Yu was slower than it and simply had no way to dodge as he madly wielded his ‘Rending Claw’, constantly using it to fend off

the attacks from the Golden Goblin.

The strength of the ‘Rending Claw’ was immense and even the Golden Goblin did not dare to let it smash onto its body. It was more agile than Su Yu and used a single steel blade to block the ‘Rending Claw’ while its other blade flashed towards Su Yu.

“Chii”

Fresh blood splattered as Su Yu felt blood flowing like a spring from his stomach region.

This was the result even though he kicked to retreat explosively backwards, otherwise it would not merely be a wound but his entire waist region would be cut off.

Su Yu had just retreated but the Golden Goblin was already pouncing towards him, its speed was simply too frightening and Su Yu could only barely manage to lift his left arm as he blocked a steel blade, another gold steel blade was speeding towards his face and this time, Su Yu did not have the time to dodge as his eyes widened, was he going to die? If he died it was inconsequential but Jade was still within the school, waiting for his return.....

Chapter 36: Killing A Golden Goblin

“Bang! Bang!”

Almost at the same time, gunshots could be heard as the Golden Goblin shuddered, the speed of its golden steel blades slowed down and Su Yu was suddenly filled with thoughts of Jade who was still waiting in school for him, he could not die here and he yelled in a crazed manner as he suddenly retaliated.

“Kaboom!”

A loud explosive sound could be heard as the countless black scales lifted up and spat out white mist, creating a frightening pushing force that allowed the ‘Rending Claw’ to actually push back the steel blade, Su Yu threw out another fist as it landed heavily on the Golden Goblin’s chest.

Immediately, green juices splattered from the Golden Goblin’s chest as it screamed, it moved at a faster speed than Su Yu’s punch as it explosively retreated several metres back, Su Yu’s fist had not thoroughly landed but even so there was mangled flesh on the chest of the Golden Goblin.

“Yaaa!”

There was a delicate shout from the side as a figure flew through the air, its aim was the Golden Goblin which was currently retreating.

Su Yu turned back as he saw Zhang Zhong Mou, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others, even the female cop Zhou Bi Rong had appeared and earlier the gunshots had been fired from her; interfering with the Golden Goblin and allowing Su Yu the chance to retaliate. Otherwise Su Yu would have already died under the blades of the Golden Goblin.

When the Golden Goblin killed the Bloody Ape Dog and causing it to shriek miserably, Qin Jia Gui and the rest had heard it from far away and realised that it was the sound of the Bloody Ape Dog. Once they understand that it had come into contact with Su Yu, the group was elated and nervous as they did not know Su Yu's situation, the Bloody Ape Dog was after all very frightening.

Zhang Zhong Mou and the others discussed and decided to come out to aid Su Yu, they did not expect to see him battling a Goblin that was covered in golden spots, under the dire circumstances, Zhou Bi Rong had fired with her pistol and it was fortunate that she still had some ammunition left from when she hid within the archive library and it came in handy, saving Su Yu's life. Ma Zi Ye had then jumped and was currently using a flying kick to end the Golden Goblin's life with a single life-threatening blow.

"Careful!" Su Yu was well aware of the fearsomeness of the Golden Goblin as he shouted and pounced forward.

The Golden Goblin let out a low growl and anger could be heard in its voice, it had taken two bullets to its back. It's chest had been badly mangled by the 'Rending Claw', although there was no life-threatening wound, it had severely affected its movements and

this was because it had been careless.

Seeing Ma Zi Ye's kick fly towards itself, it howled in anger as it brandished its steel blades, astonishingly fast.

“Chiii”

Ma Zi Ye screamed in pain as blood fountained out from her leg, half a foot had actually been cleanly sliced off by the Golden Goblin's blade and it then kicked out with a “Bang!” as it hit her chest region causing her to scream as she tumbled to the ground.

“Damn!” Su Yu roared in rage as he dashed up furiously, by the side Zhou Bi Rong wielded her pistol and “Bang! Bang! Bang!” sounds could be heard as she continued to fire.

“Hmph!” The Golden Goblin wielded its blades and the bullets were all blocked by the golden steel blades, a fiery light exploded and with its other hand it sliced towards the incoming Su Yu.

The fearsomeness of the Golden Goblin was beyond their imaginations as Zhou Bi Rong witnessed it blocking her bullets, she took a breath of cold air as Zhang Zhong Mou shouted and half his face turned to stone as he rushed forward while brandishing a wooden club.

He could see that the situation was grim for Su Yu and this strange Goblin was too frightening, even if he risked his life, he wanted to help Su Yu. No matter what, Su Yu must not die.

Su Yu lifted his arm as the 'Rending Claw' once again collided with the golden steel blade, a flash of golden light could be seen as another blade sliced downwards, Su Yu's legs kicked the Golden Goblin with a 'Bang!' as the blade of the Golden Goblin once again left a chinese foot long wound on his body.

Su Yu grimaced from the pain and used the rebound from his kick to roll away, The Golden Goblin had a vicious look as it pounced, with Zhang Zhong Mou madly shouting as he attacked.

By the side, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others had finally come back to their senses as they each moved forward to attack.

If Su Yu died, it would be impossible for them to run away from the viciousness of this monster and they had to work together to kill this terrifying monster no matter what.

Su Yu turned as he climbed back up, before him was the vicious face of the Golden Goblin as its two blades had almost pierced into his chest.

"Monster!" Zhang Zhong Mou howled as he finally reached, since he did not have many methods to attack, he used his two arms to hug the Golden Goblins body tightly while wielded his stone head to heavily smash downwards.

The Golden Goblin was incensed as it turned and wanted to kick Su Yu away, its steel claws wanting to slice Zhang Zhong Mou

apart, by the side Ma Zi Ye suddenly screamed: “Su Yu!”

At the same time, the Golden Goblin suddenly felt as though its feet were bounded by something and it actually couldn't move them, it was thoroughly shocked.

Ma Zi Ye's right leg had half the foot cleanly sliced off and she was in a phenomenal amount of pain, under these circumstances, the obstinate girl managed to use that half foot to stomp the ground as she activated the 'Web of Steel'.

By the time the Golden Goblin noticed this, it had already been firmly bound by the 'Web of Steel' and Ma Zi Ye screamed as she utilised the full potential of the 'Web of Steel' while Zhang Zhong Mou howled as he tightly held the Golden Goblin in a death vice. Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Lin Shi and the others were using their all to rush forward.

“HOWL!”

The Golden Goblin lifted its head as it hissed, its arms were trembling as it tried to shake off Zhang Zhou Mou, Su Yu suddenly let out a shout as all the strange energy gathered into his left palm, the black scales coalesced and began to spin, white mist was being emitted, tearing through the air and causing “Siii, Siii” sounds, this 'Rending Claw' was the most terrifying one he had ever released and it smashed cleanly onto the Golden Goblin's head.

This attack contained all the strength and strange energy within Su Yu and after this blow, his entire body seemed to lose its

strength as he fell to the ground regardless of the situation of the Golden Goblin.

“Shaa..... Shaa.....”

By the time Su Yu turned around, he saw Zhang Zhong Mou still hugging the headless Golden Goblin, his stone head was still smashing downwards.

By the side, Ma Zi Ye was lying on the ground and heavily panting, her face was as white as a sheet of paper.

Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others finally reached but stopped as they dazedly stared at the headless Goblin which fell to the ground beside Su Yu, thereafter, they gazed over at his left arm.

This final blow that contained all his strength resulted in a terrifying power from the ‘Rending Claw’, it actually crushed the entire head of the Golden Goblin causing it to become lumps of minced meat.

Without its head, even if the Golden Goblin was ten times stronger it would still die. Thereafter, a black crystal appeared from its body which was similar to the size of that from a Lesser Goblin but there was a slight difference because there were actually wisps of gold on the black crystal.

This crystal that had wisps of gold on it sped forth and entered Su

Yu's arm as he immediately felt the strange energy within it surge and swell as it continually released. It surged towards his four limbs and hundreds of bones within his body, continually flowing as the wounds all over his body miraculously healed, all the thirty six thousand pores on his body were ridding itself of a vile and fishy smelling sweat.

Chapter 37: Tier Two Dark Iron Warrior

This strange energy actually nourished his entire body as it cleansed every inch of skin, every tendon and muscle, causing all the impurities within the body to be expunged. This was like the washing of the marrow and veins of legends, exchanging one's bones and shedding their mortal body.

Su Yu laid on the ground as he felt this strange change within his body, Qin Jia Gui and the others were staring at his left arm because black scales were appearing there and continued to move upwards, in no time at all his entire left arm had been thoroughly covered by the scales and it finally stopped at his shoulder. These newly formed black scales were glinting and faintly releasing a black light, even if it were in the dark of night the group could still clearly see this, this arm that was covered in black scales released a frightening aura and it seemed that if Su Yu were to wield this left arm, it would have the ability to destroy heaven and earth.

Within Su Yu's mind, information flashed as he finally promoted once again, going from his initial status of tier one to tier two dark iron warrior.

From his basic 'Tier one Rending Claw' he also comprehended 'Tier two Rending Claw' and the 'Lizard's Arm' ability had advanced. Its amplification capabilities became even stronger and the drawback of the slower speed had dropped from thirty percent to twenty percent.

Besides this, he also comprehended a new ability: 'Fang Bullet Burst'.

What made him most astonished was the strange energy within his left arm that seemed to have made a qualitative change, it was no longer just strength that could be felt but Su Yu could also feel that his left arm was actually filled with a dark coloured flow of qi.

Promoting to tier two, the strange energy was no longer just an indistinct strength but rather had become something that could be felt and viewed within the body. This was a transformation of the strange energy into qi and the advantages of this were that he no longer had to passively feel out the strange energy but instead could actively control it with his thoughts. He could concentrate the qi to a certain spot, be it a stronger attack or spreading it out throughout his body to defend. Its usages were endless and it felt that the profoundness of it was far superior to the tier one strange energy.

Su Yu stumbled to the ground as he felt the earth shattering changes within his left arm, because of the promotion, his vigor had been restored as he quickly got back on his feet. Without a word, he hurriedly went to find Ma Zi Ye's foot that was sliced away by the Golden Goblin. Afterwards, he crouched beside Ma Ze Yi who was hurting badly and was close to losing consciousness.

Silently, he began to remove the shoes and socks from her half foot which was currently dripping in blood.

"You..... what are you doing?" Although Ma Zi Ye was pale as a sheet of paper, she was still conscious and suddenly feeling her leg being held by Su Yu as he removed her shoes and socks, her innate shyness as a female made her feel like struggling to release her

legs.

“Don’t move about recklessly.” Su Yu glared at her with a stern look which made Ma Zi Ye stop struggling.

Su Yu removed the shoes and socks from her feet and the others finally understood his intentions, he wanted to attach the sliced off portion of Ma Zi Ye’s feet, however, he was not a doctor and did not have any tools, how was he planning to reattach it?

“Don’t..... don’t waste your effort..... it’s useless..... I’ve become a cripple.....” Ma Zi Ye immediately understood his intentions as her face became distressed while she grit her teeth.

Su Yu did not respond but continued to earnestly press the sliced off portion against her feet, his right arm supported it while his left hand covered the top, his eyes narrowed as he circulated the strange energy which had formed into qi and circulated it into Ma Zi Ye’s feet.

In the eyes of the others, it seemed as though Su Yu was holding up Ma Zi Ye’s feet while his left hand seemed to be stroking it. The group looked each other in the eye as they felt that something was strange, if it were not for the special circumstances whereby Ma Zi Ye was injured, this kind of scene was really quite erotic.

Ma Zi Ye was also red faced as she almost thought that Su Yu was being frivolous with her.

It was only a short time before she felt that something was different, from Su Yu's left hand, waves of hot energy seemed to be entering into her feet, the pain immediately subsided by a huge amount and the area where the feet had been sliced actually began to feel itchy.

Ma Zi Ye wanted to reach her hand out to scratch but Su Yu looked her in the eye as he repeated: "Don't move, otherwise if the feet reattach in a weird manner, don't blame me."

Ma Zi Ye was shocked and immediately stopped moving, she felt that something unimaginable was occurring as she said: "My..... my feet can be reattached?"

The people all around were speechless as they saw the area of the wound continually release faint black light, the wound was actually healing at a speed which the naked eye could see and the itchy feeling Ma Zi Ye had felt earlier was precisely the feet reattaching themselves.

Su Yu had a faint smile as he answered: "As long as you don't move recklessly, it will definitely be reattached also..... it will be the same as the past, without any scars. Just relax, this won't prevent you from finding a marriage partner."

Ma Zi Ye's face turned red as she glared at Su Yu, realising that her feet could be attached, she was in high spirits as she lightly harrumphed: "So you're also a bad person, I thought that only big cigarette addict was a bad person."

Zhang Zhong Mou who was by the side exclaimed: “How can I not be a good person? If you want to talk about this little Yu fellow go ahead, why drag me in? I’m simply innocent.”

Ma Zi Ye harrumphed: “Anyways, it’s true that the two of you aren’t good people. Hey, big cigarette addict, what are your lecherous eyes looking at, haven’t you seen a lady’s legs before?”

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed loudly: “Now that you mention it, I remember reading a novel before, everyone has read ‘The Heaven Sword and Dragon Saber’ right? That Zhang Wu Ji had touched Zhao Min’s feet and eventually Zhao Min grew feelings for him becoming his wife. Hehe..... I suddenly feel that the scene before me is so familiar, so it’s actually exactly the same as the novel.....”

Hearing this, Ma Zi Ye’s face turned beet red and was shy to the point of becoming speechless. Even Su Yu coughed in embarrassment however Ma Zi Ye’s wound had not completely healed and he could not relax his hand, continually circulating the energy while holding onto Ma Zi Ye’s feet.

Qin Jia Gui could not hold in his curiosity as he asked Su Yu what was happening before they arrived, by the time the group arrived they had already seen the corpse of the Bloody Ape Dog but they did not know what the Golden Goblin was or why it was so frightening.

Su Yu gave a summary and the group felt startled after understanding that within a thousand Goblins there would only be a single Golden Goblin, no wonder the monster was so fearsome and the group being able to kill it was simply luck.

Hearing Qin Jia Gui ask about the Golden Goblin, Su Yu suddenly recalled something that was in the information of the 'Eye of Perception'. There was a hidden treasure buried within the Golden Goblin's body, what could the hidden treasure possibly be?

He suddenly became very curious.

Chapter 38: Hidden Treasure: Earth Spikes Ring

After the battle with the Golden Goblin, Su Yu was able to clearly identify many things. The one whose relation was most solid with him was indeed Zhang Zhong Mou and seeing him in danger, he had rushed forward without regard for his life, this was a pair of life and death buddies. As for Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others, although they had good relations but they were still far from comparing with Zhang Zhong Mou.

Only Ma Zi Ye's performance made Su Yu feel surprised, her feet had already been sliced in half but she still obstinately held on as she utilised the 'Web of Steel', locking the Golden Goblin in place and creating the only critical chance for him to deliver the fatal blow.

Ma Zi Ye's performance made Su Yu feel a deep respect for her.

This girl was definitely not simple.

Hearing Qin Jia Gui talk about matters regarding the Golden Goblin, Su Yu suddenly thought of the information regarding the Golden Goblin transmitted to him through the 'Eye of Perception'. The Golden Goblin which had the bloodline of the 'Golden Race' would definitely have a hidden treasure of the 'Golden Race' within its body, it was only that he did not know what the hidden treasure was.

His heart filled with curiosity, he finally placed the feet that was

now fully healed on the ground as he stood up and smiled: “Why don’t you test it out to see if there’s any discomfort?” His left arm was limp and painful, earlier he had transferred the strange energy into Ma Zi Ye’s feet and his left arm was almost empty of the energy, it was fortunate that the energy would slowly recover over time.

Releasing the strange energy that had formed into qi to heal others, this was one of the benefits of having a tier two strange energy.

Su Yu had only just comprehended it and used it on Ma Zi Ye, the results were indeed astonishing and could reattached her sliced off foot.

Ma Zi Ye wriggled her right leg and it did not feel any different from usual, without any discomfort as a smile finally floated onto her face.

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed loudly by the side: “Instant noodles, I feel that your small legs are quite white and rather good to look at, haha.”

Ma Zi Ye was reminded by him as she glared at him and retracted her feet while cursing: “Scoundrel!” Hastily standing up, she frowned as she fretted over not having shoes or socks to wear, she certainly could not go on with her bare feet.

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed as he suggested: “There’s a floor full of dead people here, just find a pair of fitting shoes to wear. This

current surroundings are very dangerous and you can't be picky."

Although his words sounded heartless, Ma Zi Ye could only glare at him but was helpless because what he said was the truth.

Su Yu stood up as he walked back to the headless corpse of the Golden Goblin and muttered to himself before reaching forth with his left hand, black scales covered it then flashing with a black light as five claws extended forth and unrestrainedly split apart the corpse of the Golden Goblin.

The group was puzzled as to what he was doing and were about to inquire when they suddenly closed their mouths. Su Yu had suddenly taken a ball of twinkling golden light out from the Golden Goblin's corpse, shrouded within the ball of light was a small ring.

"That..... what is that?" Qin Jia Gui asked in curiosity as astonishment as written on his face.

Su Yu replied: "Based on the information from the 'Eye of Perception'. This should be a type of hidden treasure." While saying this, a 'pop' sound could be heard as the ball of light broke and the ring let out a 'Ting' sound as it landed on Su Yu's palm.

At the same time, the eyeball once again appeared on the back of Su Yu's hand as a dim glow shrouded the ring which was currently releasing a faint yellow rays of light.

Hidden treasure: Earth Spikes ring

Ability: A mighty earth elemental energy is stored within the ring, an earth piercing charm is carved on the surface of the ring and one can use the earth elements to activate the earth piercing charm, using the 'Earth Spikes Assault' spell. The earth elemental energy contained within can sustain a single usage of the spell, after utilising the energy it will require twenty four hours before the energy is restored and the ability can be used again. Other abilities are unknown.

Su Yu stared blankly before comprehending the information, this 'Earth Spike Ring' could utilise the 'Earth Spike Assault' spell and after every usage, one would have to wait for an entire day before being able to use it again. It could be said that this ability seemed to be of little value at first glance, however it was only that he did not know the might of this 'Earth Spike Assault'."

Of course, having it was better than not having it.

Su Yu smiled, this was certainly better than nothing and he wore the ring on his right finger.

Done with everything, the originally dark sky had begun to brighten and it seemed that it would not be long before the sky was bright.

Returning back to the police station, Su Yu could no longer bear it and fell into a deep sleep.

This sleep was a very deep and sweet one and only when Ma Zi Ye pulled his ear did he wake up from the shocking pain.

Opening his eyes, the room was already bright from the light shining in.

“Wake up, lazy pig.” Ma Zi Ye noticed that Su Yu had woken up and harrumphed as she released the finger that had pulled his ear.

Since the evening before where Su Yu had helped her remove her shoes and healed her injuries, the attitude with which Ma Zi Ye treated Su Yu seemed to have gone through some minor changes.

Su Yu rubbed his eyes as he asked: “It’s already morning?” Seeing that no one else was sleeping, he hurriedly got up.

His sleep had been very peaceful and free from anxiety and it could be said that this was the first time since coming to this world that he had such a deep sleep, this made him feel rather embarrassed.

Out of the room, he found his backpack and brushed his teeth, as for washing his face, he poured out some water and began to randomly rub his face. His clothes were filled with the scent of blood and had long since been dyed green by the juices of the Goblins. His body was extremely uncomfortable but within this forest, they did not have the conditions to allow them to wash their clothes and he could only bear with it.

The guys fared better when compared to the girls who loved cleanliness, this was simply a living nightmare for the girls.

Adding the female cop Zhou Bi Rong and the young girl Ding Shan, their group was thirteen strong and everyone huddled together to have breakfast. Although they had two additional people there was still more than enough food to go around. Firstly, each person's backpack had enough rations for a person to last four to five days, secondly, Wen Rui had died and left behind a backpack, all the food within it had been given to Zhou Bi Rong and they really only had an additional little girl Ding Shan thus allowing them to not fret over food.

“I wonder how concerned my parents are after finding out what happened to the school, Ai!” During breakfast, Zhuang Xiao Hua suddenly sighed, he was also from AJ college and if the school was really swallowed by a ‘Sky Hole’, his parents would have gotten this news and must be beside themselves in panic. He was the only son and his parents really doted on him, with such an event occurring, it would be weird if they were not worried.

Hearing Zhuang Xiao Hua mention his parents, the group of people immediately became silent as each person thought of their parents. Amongst them, Qin Jia Gui's dad had died young and his only mother had worked hard to nurture him. Hearing Zhuang Xiao Hua mention his parents, Qin Jia Gui inadvertently thought of his father who had died gruesomely to the pack of wolves and also his hardworking mother as his expression became gloomy.

Chapter 39: The Rear Of The Group

Initially he had been adamant about handling all the corpses but after experiencing so many changes, he had realised his own absurdity and not talking about other monsters, just the Bloody Ape Dog which was able to climb trees would be able to desecrate the corpses hidden within the trees, this was simply too easy for it.

“Ai.....” Qin Jia Gui gnawed on a bread, he quickly thought of his girlfriend Yuan Ni Ping who was still back in the school.

Because of family reasons, the him who was afraid of being alone especially cherished his girlfriend.

Zhou Hua Kang suddenly spoke up: “Zhuang Xiao Hua, stop sighing already, if we’re lucky we’ll be able to go back. Don’t give up hope so easily, everyone isn’t that right? Haha.....” He wanted to laugh to lighten the gloomy atmosphere but only managed to make a single sound before he could no longer carry on because the expressions on everybody’s faces were solemn and heavy, the atmosphere was very tense.

“What’s wrong with everyone?” Zhao Shi Chang suddenly yelled out: “We’ve got two days time, there’s still a full day ahead of us, we haven’t reached the end! Let’s not become despondent.”

Because the food was only sufficient for one thousand over people to eat for two to three days, Su Yu and the group were restrained with this limitation and if they could find a way out, that would be good, however, if they could not they would have to

return and everyone would have to struggle for their lives. Give up on the school and enter the forest, it could be imagined how gruesome it would be, endless amounts of people would die and thinking of that scene the group could not help but feel the chills.

A day had already gone by and the time remaining was a single day.

If they did not have any gains today.....

Qin Jia Gui stood up as he said in a heavy voice: “Time is of the essence, everyone let’s go. Staying here and sighing isn’t going to do us much good.”

Su Yu ate the final piece of bread in his hand and drank a mouthful of water before slapping his hands and lifting his backpack: “That’s right, it’s time to move.”

With the addition of Zhou Bi Rong and Ding Shan, thirteen of them carried their backpacks as they left the police station which was filled with the scent of blood and covered with corpses.

Although there were guns left behind on the ground, they did not have bullets and were just useless pieces of metal, besides Zhou Bi Rong who had some bullets left, the rest would not be able to put the guns to use.

The group exchanged glances, they had come to this forest and enduring two nights, this was their third morning here and the

amount of time they had left to continue exploring this forest was only a day. Thereafter, they would have to come to a decision and no one wanted to let it come to that.

Ding Shan followed closely by Zhou Bi Rong's side, protected within the centre of the group. Zhou Bi Rong held a pistol in her hand as her expression was filled with caution as she continually glanced at her surroundings, since coming to this world she had never entered the forest before.

Qin Jia Gui and Zhao Shi Chang still led the group in the front and Su Yu habitually became the last man in the group, compared to the front the back of the group was the most dangerous position.

Usually he was alone as he fell back but today it was different, Ma Zi Ye had actually also fallen behind and was walking by Su Yu's side.

“Hey, usually you stay at the back because you don't like being the centre of attention or are you afraid of encountering danger?” Ma Zi Ye smiled, she knew that Su Yu was not afraid but rather guessed that he did not want to be the centre of attention. Unlike Qin Jia Gui, whose actions and words seemed to make him the leader of the group.

Su Yu smiled as he looked back at the police station which was becoming further and further away before replying: “Don't you think that walking at the back..... the forest becomes even more frightening?”

Ma Zi Ye stared blankly for a moment before answering: “You’re right, walking at the back really puts one’s nerves on end. You have to continually look back and this feeling is really stifling, that is why I’m wondering why you’re always at the back, you’re a weirdo.”

Su Yu tousled his hair before speaking: “The problem is, there’s always someone who has to be at the back right?”

Ma Zi Ye acknowledged with a “Oh.”, she now understood that Su Yu was purposefully staying at the back of the group which was the most dangerous position and an unknown feeling welled up within her as she softly said: “You’re indeed a weirdo, is this considered kindheartedness? Or could this be considered you being charitable or even foolish?”

Su Yu faintly laughed: “About that, I haven’t really thought about it. Since someone has to walk behind, me walking at the back would be the same thing. There’s no connection with kindness or foolishness. Ma Zi Ye, aren’t you thinking too much? Anyways now that you mention it, I still have to thank you, your performance yesterday was very impressive and brave.”

Saying this he lifted his hand to give her a thumbs up, Su Yu was really praising her and Ma Zi Ye could not help but recall the scene of him touching her legs as her face became red and she turned while saying: “Both you and that big cigarette addict aren’t anything good, isn’t that right?”

Su Yu was stunned and Zhang Zhong Mou who was walking in front immediately turned around as he said discontentedly:

“Instant noodles, why do you always associate bad things with me? I’ve been behaving myself and have not said a single word.”

Looking at his face which seemed to be grieved, Ma Zi Ye could not help but laugh before glaring at him: “I still want to say it, what’s wrong? You’re not happy? If you’re not happy come bite me.”

Zhang Zhong Mou’s mouth widened as he laughed: “Okay, I’ll really bite you.” while exposing his white teeth.

Ma Zi Ye lifted her feet as she lightly said: “You dare to come? This little missy will use her legs to take care of you.” Her face was ferocious without a hint of fear on it.

Speaking of legs, Zhang Zhong Mou suddenly had a lecherous expression on his face as he glanced at her legs before using his mouth to signal at Su Yu: “Using your legs to take care of me? You dare but I wouldn’t dare. I’m afraid that young master Yu will come find trouble with me, a gentleman does not steal his brother’s love interest, how could I snatch with my good brother. You better use your legs to take care of young master Yu, last night he was so tender and caring to help you massage your legs.....”

Once these words were said, Ma Zi Ye’s face immediately became beet red and she seemed to be fuming, Su Yu shook his head with some embarrassment as he said: “You really have a dog mouth that can’t say anything good, I was clearly helping her treat her wounds and have explained this many times before. What are you talking about massaging? Since when would I have that sort of leisurely free time, you being disgusting with me is fine, but don’t do it to

the ladies.”

“Hey, how can this be considered disgusting, am I really that disgusting to you?” Ma Zi Ye heard Su Yu’s words and could not help but speak out in dissatisfaction.

Zhang Zhong Mou was secretly happy thinking that Su Yu had actually sided with a girl and neglected his brother, this is the just desserts he got for helping a lady.

Seeing Ma Zi Ye flip out, he coughed as he scratched his head, realising that he had been too direct and forgot that saying this would be a blow to her as he explained:” No no, no one is saying you’re disgusting. This matter..... No no, Ma Zi Ye, don’t you find that face in front very disgusting?”

Su Yu finally thought of an excuse as he lifted his finger to point at Zhang Zhong Mou who was still secretly feeling pleased. Su Yu thought inwardly: “This ass, you and Ma Zi Ye were bickering but you actually dragged me in, since you’ve taken the first move you can’t blame me for giving you two stabs because of a lady. I’ll play a trick on you.”

Chapter 40: Stone Tablet Road Sign

Ma Zi Ye realised what Su Yu was talking about and although she knew he was diverting her attention, she found his words pleasing as she immediately nodded: “What you said makes sense, that face is really disgusting.”

Zhang Zhong Mou stared blankly, he wanted to cry but there were no tears. He thought to himself how could his handsome face be considered as disgusting, looking over at Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye who seemed to be earnestly giving their evaluation, his face became gloomy as he thought about how to retaliate. Suddenly, Lin Shi who was always silent spoke up: “Zhang Zhong Mou, they’re a couple singing in unison, how are you going to beat the two of them with a single mouth.”

It was fine when Lin Shi did not speak but once he spoke, his words were astonishing and made the faces of Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye blush. Zhang Zhong Mou was dazed before wildly laughing as he nodded: “You’re right, I won’t speak anymore. Haha..... Teacher Lin, it’s still the older ginger that is spicier, you really have your means!” He was so elated that he did not care about Lin Shi’s status as a teacher and heavily patted his back. Zhang Zhong Mou’s current actions meant that he treated Lin Shi as a brother.

Lin Shi faintly smiled but did not speak any further.

Su Yu smiled bitterly as he shook his head, he did not expect that everyone would start to make fun of him and Ma Zi Ye. If Jade were to find out, he would be in hot soup. He turned to look at Ma Zi Ye in the eye but noticed that she was blushing as she looked at

him, their eyes met and swiftly turned away. At this moment, Ma Zi Ye's face was clearly bashful.

“Ma Zi Ye..... couldn't really have fallen for me right?” Suddenly, Su Yu had a weird thought in his head as he immediately dispelled it as he felt that it was very unlikely. She was probably just feeling shy and it did not have any other meaning to it.

Thinking of this, Su Yu could not help but look at Ning Yan who was within the group. From Su Yu's perspective, he could only see her back.

It could not be denied that regardless of the angle, Ning Yan was simply stunning. She really deserved her title as the undisputed faculty belle, or in Su Yu's opinion, the school belle.

“Although Ning Yan is beautiful, her character is rather weird. Back in class, I only noticed that she was very quiet and did well in her studies but upon entering this forest..... Although she joined the group, she seems to be sleepwalking and if I remember correctly, since leaving the school she has not killed a single of these monsters. Why is that?” Su Yu muttered as he thought of how he had saved her and accidentally tossed a wooden club into her shoulder. When she had looked at him, her eyes were had a tinge of hate within them.

Frustration well up within him as Su Yu gloomily tousled his hair, the group had already walked through a fair bit of this forest with the fresh morning air and the police station had long faded from their view.

Qin Jia Gui continued to leave clear markings on the barks of trees to allow them to head back in the direction they came from, a precautionary measure.

This path they took was very relaxing and they did not meet a single monster. Occasionally they could hear the roars of a frightening monster in the distance but the distance was simply too far and it was indistinct, only if one listened intently could they notice it.

“Eh? Guys look over there.” Zhao Shi Chang who was walking in front suddenly pointed.

The group looked in the direction he was pointing in and they saw a stone tablet erected on the ground approximately twenty odd metres from them. This stone tablet was slanted and covered in moss, it seemed to have seen the weather of many years and had been here for along time.

A stone tablet suddenly appearing within this forest, the group was curious as they walked closer and found that there was an arrow carved onto the stone tablet.

“This is..... a directional sign board?” Qin Jia Gui was startled as he called up, hurriedly using his hand to wipe away the moss covering it as the arrowhead on the stone tablet became clearer. It pointed forwards in a certain direction.

Zhao Shi Chang said excitedly: “Does this mean that we have been walking the right path? Since there’s a directional sign board

here, what could it possibly mean? Does this mean that there is something up ahead, and what could that thing be? Could we have finally found the exit to the forest?”

Qin Jia Gui followed up: “That’s right, there’s certainly something up ahead otherwise there wouldn’t be a stone tablet here for no apparent reason. Let’s go, everyone speed up and let’s see what’s up ahead.”

The group became excited, maybe the arrowhead really led to the exit of the forest? Even if that were not the case they were still expectant of finding something.

The group of people who were originally lethargic felt invigorated as they immediately sped up.

Ding Shan who was still a little child was tired from constantly walking and upon noticing this, Zhou Bi Rong carried her onto her back.

Carrying a person was not a simple task and Ding Shan was already seven to eight years old, no longer that light as Zhou Bi Rong began to pant after a short while.

Noticing this, Su Yu walked forward and said: “Let me take over.”

Zhou Bi Rong gave him a grateful look as she handed Ding Shan over.

Ding Shan's face was red as she softly said: "Big brother, sorry, I'm so useless."

Su Yu smiled: "You're a little kid, it's normal." rubbing Ding Shan's head, he gave his backpack over to Zhang Zhong Mou before lifting Ding Shan onto his back.

Su Yu had the strange energy circulating within his body and having promoted to tier two dark iron warrior, carrying Ding Shan was a simple task and could not be counted for much.

Li Dong looked at Ding Shan as he frowned, he felt that bringing a kid along was a burden and since no one voiced it out, he did not say anything as he was not the one who was required to carry her.

The swift hurrying along the path caused them to cover quite a distance, however trees still sprawled endlessly in front of them. This forest was so vast and seemed without end, the initial excitement of the group gradually wore off as their speed began to slow down.

Qin Jia Gui's mouth twitched as he wanted to say something to encourage the group, allowing their speed to increase when suddenly a loud 'Kaboom!' could be heard from the distant sky.

This sound was extremely frightening and the entire land seemed to be shaking and trembling, the group stopped in shock and a second 'Kaboom!' could be heard. This time, it seemed to be closer to them.

Following the second loud noise, Su Yu and the group lifted their heads as they saw a scene that would be carved in their minds forever.

Within the roiling clouds in the sky, a leg that seemed like the size of a mountain was breaking through the clouds and heavily falling to the ground.

The area where it was falling was over a hundred [Zhang](#) away but even so, the force it brought with it was like a violent hurricane, sending everyone tumbling through the air and everyone felt like leaves within a squall, unable to control their bodies as they felt chills all over their body. The entire world seemed to be trembling and this frightening scene seemed like the end of the world is nigh.

[Zhang is 3.3m or 10 Chinese feet](#)

Chapter 41: The Eagle Monster

That ‘Kaboom!’ that seemed to be the sound of exploding cannon shells was actually caused by a humongous bare foot that seemed like a mountain, creating a loud noise as it stepped onto the ground.

By the time that humongous foot lifted, endless amounts of trees had already fallen apart, a weird footprint sized area of emptiness was formed within the forest.

Ding Shan cried out in alarm, this little girl simply did not understand what was happening and only felt a fierce gale as she flew into the air.

Su Yu growled as his left arm was covered in black scales, the strange energy within exploded and he heavily smashed the ground.

“Poof!”

An entire arm was buried within the ground and holding the weight of his entire body, his right arm reached forth and grabbed Ding Shan into his embrace. Amongst the group he was the only one who had barely managed to stabilize himself within the gale. Gritting his teeth as he looked at the astonishing scene that was occurring one hundred Zhang away.

This foot that was as large as the pillars supporting the heavens stomped and lifted, and prepared to stomp again. There was a flash

of golden light within the clouds above and like a golden coloured rainbow it heavily slammed into that huge foot.

“Chiii, Chiii, Chiii”

Frightening sounds could be heard from the huge foot as Su Yu and the group felt an even more frightening gale assail them, Su Yu held on tightly to the ground with his left arm as he grit his teeth and stabilised himself, opening his eyes wide as he saw the shocking scene before him.

The streak of golden light converged and landed on top of the humongous foot, Su Yu could clearly see a half human half eagle golden monster after the golden light receded.

This golden monster had a torso that seemed like that of a human, however, its hands and legs were like the claws of a bird and its head was that of a golden eagle. Its entire body was covered in a layer of golden dazzling lustre, golden feathers seemed to tightly cover its entire body and its back had a pair of wings that were initially expanded out but upon landing on the huge feet, they tightly retreated and stuck to its body.

The golden light was dazzling and the eagle head and human body made the entire figure seem mysterious and noble. Words simply did it no justice and it was impossible to describe it properly in writing, Su Yu was dazed and speechless as he stared at it from afar, his heart was in a turmoil.

That..... what was that?

Su Yu was shocked to the point of stupefaction as he stared at the golden eagle monster, its golden wings were retracted and as it landed on the humongous foot, frightening ‘Chiii, Chiii, Chiii’ sounds could be heard as rain of blood instantly drowned the entire area of one hundred Zhang.

That humongous mountain-like foot was actually struck by the eagle monster and pieces of flesh were rent apart as a fountain of rain covered the entire sky, making it seem to be raining blood.

Su Yu, Ding Shan, Ma Zi Ye and the others had no way to avoid being wet by the rain and at this moment, the group had regained their senses as they stared at the shocking scene occurring in the sky.

“AWOOOO!”

Thunderous howling could be heard that caused all the tens of thousands of beasts within the forest to lower their heads in fright as they trembled. Thereafter, a black huge claw that was covered in black feathers could be seen swiping down as it heavily clawed towards the golden eagle monster.

The golden wings on the eagle monster’s back expanded out and with a ‘swoosh’ it flew to the sky once more. In the air, its body was shrouded in a dazzling golden glow and quickly became a streak of gold, like a magnificent rocket streaking through the sky as it collided with the humongous claw that was heavily swinging downwards.

Frightening sounds were emitted once again as the two sides collided, the golden light continued upward and wherever it went, the huge claw was rent apart, utterly defeated.

The glow that the golden eagle monster was emitting was simply too frightening and seemed as though it would disappear into the clouds above when another huge claw came swiping down.

This time the golden eagle monster was actually smacked by the huge claw that was like a mountain and the golden glow surrounding it dissipated as the golden eagle monster fell from the sky.

“Kaboom!”

An immense noise suddenly came from tens of Zhang away and several trees were crushed, a huge crater was created in the centre of the impact zone.

The group were all startled but a golden light flashed as the golden eagle monster that had been smashed to the ground got up from the crater.

Seeing it from such a close proximity, the group noticed that although this golden eagle monster was like a small bug in comparison to the huge hands and feet, it was actually extremely big and when it stood up, it towered over ten metres and made them forget to breathe, that golden glow encompassing its body was emitting a pressure and grandeur as though a god had

descended on earth.

The golden eagle monster stood up from the crater and swept its gaze hurriedly, looking at Su Yu, Ding Shan, Qin Jia Gui and the rest for a moment before looking up to the sky.

In the sky, that huge claw that had sent it plummeting was once again viciously smashing down towards it.

A single glance from the golden monster made Su Yu and the others feel their hearts tremble as their blood and qi roiled in turmoil, they had nearly fainted from that glance and this gaze from the golden monster was simply too formidable such that they could not even handle a single glance.

What kind of level of expert was this life form?

The golden monster had fallen to the ground and did not fly again but rather retracted its wings as it raised its two claws and grabbed and tore at its two wings.

The originally retracted golden wings continually contorted and quickly transformed into a large golden bow and a golden arrow.

The golden monster raised its bow and aimed it at the sky however not towards the humongous claw that was smashing down towards it.

The golden bow was pulled to form a crescent moon shape and

the golden monster gave a shrill screech, this sound seemed to shatter rocks and pierce the clouds, skyrocketing upwards as the golden arrow became a streak of golden lightning that pierced the air with a 'swish' and disappeared through the clouds.

Almost at the same time, a frightening miserable cry could be heard from above the clouds and the huge claw that was smashing down trembled before suddenly stopping. Thereafter, streaks of golden lightning seemed to emit from the huge claw as it split apart the flesh. Finally, the huge claw was swallowed and disintegrated by the golden lightning and the miserable shrieks stopped, within the clouds a golden haze seemed to shroud the area.

The golden monster let out a long exhale as two streams of gas flowed out from its eagle nostrils like a jade dragon. It then pressed the golden bow onto its back and reformed the golden wings. Thereafter it kicked the ground with its claws and shot upwards, in the sky its wings suddenly spread out with a 'swoosh' and only its left wing seemed to be missing a single golden feather. This was the material used to form the golden arrow earlier and although it was missing a golden feather, it would grow out soon enough.

Chapter 42: Ability To Lead

The golden monster swiftly disappeared within the clouds and the humongous claws and feet also disappeared into the sky. The crazy scene from before gradually calmed down, leaving behind a scene of destruction, tall trees were crushed and the ground was covered in fresh blood, the entire area seemed in complete disorder.

Su Yu, Qin Jia Gui, Zhang Zhong Mou, Ma Zi Ye and the others took a while before they came to their senses, their wits gathered and everything that had just occurred seemed like a bad dream. If it weren't for the disorder before them they would find it hard to believe that everything had really happened before their eyes.

“That..... what was that thing?” Zhao Shi Chang finally voiced out the question in everyone's hearts.

At this moment, whoever believed that this was still the world they had lived in would surely be a madman.

“What godforsaken place have we landed ourselves in!” Zhao Shi Chang suddenly shouted as his fist punched into the ground before him.

The scene that had just occurred before them was simply too insane and deeply impacted their psyches, making it difficult for them to accept it so suddenly.

Humongous hands and feet that were as big as mountains? An

eagle monster that seemed to be molded from gold and could fly through the skies? Just before their eyes the golden eagle monster seemed to have killed the owner of the huge hands and feet, what could be more crazy than that?

Meeting with Goblins and seeing the Bloody Ape Dog the group could still barely accept it but the short few seconds earlier had thoroughly shattered the group's beliefs or the world and even Zhao Shi Chang who was usually staunch felt as though he might break down.

“Zhao Shi Chang, what are you shouting for? Calm down, we're all still alive isn't that right?” Qin Jia Gui suddenly jumped up as he shook Zhao Shi Chang and yelled.

Zhao Shi Chang stared blankly as he looked over with his eyes and muttered: “Alive?”

“That's right, we're all still alive. As long as we are alive, we have hope of leaving this place and returned to the world which we are familiar with, isn't that right? Everyone don't you agree?!” Qin Jia Gui shouted till his voice became hoarse.

Su Yu nodded, he had to admit that Qin Jia Gui did have the talent for being a leader and his encouraging words to rouse the group were certainly something he could not do.

“We've already come a crazy place, Goblins, Golden Goblins and the strange energy within us. Since this is a crazy world, crazy things occurring is only natural, we should remember that we have

to live on no matter what, if we all work hard to live on eventually..... eventually we will get out and escape from this night!mare!” Qin Jia Gui hoarsely shouted: “As long as we stay positive, we can persevere on!”

The group stared blankly at him as the crazed expression on Zhao Shi Chang’s face gradually faded. Qin Jia Gui’s words allowed the group to calm down and recover their senses, the scene that occurred before them was simply too inconceivable but what did that have to do with them? They were only looking for a way to live on and get out of here, was that not the case?

“I know, thanks.” Zhao Shi Chang became silent as he patted Qin Jia Gui on the shoulder.

Zhang Zhong Mou lifted his thumb at Qin Jia Gui and said: “I’m beginning to appreciate you more and more Qin Jia Gui.” Taking out a cigarette he said: “Don’t reject it, everyone let’s smoke a cigarette. Smoking can allow us to calm down and allow us to decide what to do next.”

This time, even Qin Jia Gui who had never smoked a stick before took a puff, however he was choked by the smoke and began to cough as his eyes became teary.

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed loudly as the atmosphere finally stabilised, the group’s feelings of fear and despair had finally dissipated a little.

“F***, in the past I always felt that Ultraman and Superman were

fictional characters, now I suspect whether there may be some truth to them after all. That golden monster with an eagle head doesn't seem any inferior to Ultraman." Zhang Zhong Mou took a puff as he half teased and laughed bitterly.

Su Yu softly muttered: "Everyone let's go, staying here will only waste time. This world has several things and life forms that we are unable to understand. We can only choose to accept whatever comes and do what we need to do." Thereafter, he lifted up Ding Shan and began to walk forward.

"That's right, do well in what we need to do. Remember, there are still over a thousand people in the school waiting for our good news. No matter what, we have to find an exit today!" Qin Jia Gui shouted as he lifted his backpack and followed.

Zhang Zhong Mou extinguished the cigarette within his hand as he lifted his and Su Yu's backpack and grumbled: "Young master Yu, why do I have to carry your backpack for you? It makes me seem like I'm your servant."

Su Yu glared at him while Zhou Bi Rong who was by the side felt dissatisfied. Su Yu had tossed the backpack over to Zhang Zhong Mou in order to help carry Ding Shan. She said snappily: "Hand it to me."

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: "Beautiful police officer, don't think too much. I'm only teasing Su Yu and talking nonsense, there's no other meaning."

Zhou Bi Rong looked over at Su Yu as he smiled and said: “Don’t care about him, this fellow is just like that with a smelly mouth. Since young he has offended many people and thinking about it, I’ve suffered quite a bit from his problem causing mouth.”

Hearing his words, Zhang Zhong Mou laughed loudly and continued: “Now that you mention it I find it weird, back when we were younger and I had offended someone and was surrounded and being beaten, you actually jumped in to defend me even though you were so skinny and weak. You caused me to be unable to leave you behind, resulting in an even worse beating.”

Su Yu laughed as he heard this, when they were younger Zhang Zhong Mou often got into trouble and he would go forward to help, each time he would not be of much help and would actually cause Zhang Zhong Mou to suffer an even worse beating. Thinking back to their swollen faces as they went home together, Su Yu felt nostalgia. His friendship with Zhang Zhong Mou had been forged since that event and could be said to be even stronger than some brothers.

Hearing them mention their childhood stories, Ma Zi Ye also walked over to listen before she laughed: “Who knew that Su Yu would have such character at a young age? Big cigarette addict on the other hand has not changed one bit.”

Zhang Zhong Mou continued: “There are many more interesting things. Jade is like a jinx to Su Yu. Haha, Ma Zi Ye, in future if you want to wake him up, don’t bother pulling his ear. Just whisper to him ‘Jade is here’ and he will definitely jump up faster than a rabbit and immediately wake up.”

Hearing Zhang Zhong Mou mention Jade, his mouth widened into a smile as he thought about her and wondered how she was going. At this moment Su Yu suddenly felt like returning to the school.

Ma Zi Ye asked curiously: “Who’s Jade? His sister?” Hearing her name, it did seem like Jade(Su Yu) was from the same family as Su Yu.

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed and wanted to explain who Jade was when suddenly a “Shaa Shaa” sound could be heard. A group of old and ugly monsters with wrinkled faces, they were short and their big heads were disproportionate to their bodies. Pointed ears and dark green in colour, they wore simple leather armour, their right hands held metal shovels and their left hands held wooden shields. They were making weird hissing noises as their faces were filled with killing intent and excitement as they rushed towards the group.

Chapter 43: Gnomes

Name: Gnome

Information: Distant relatives to Goblins, likes living underground. Does not know what is lethargy as it constantly digs one hole after another for itself before swiftly migrating. Loves eating the stems of several different plants. Frequently forms groups to attack humans and other animals, using their corpses as fertiliser for the various plants they harvest. Also, Gnome's have a shallow level of craftsmanship and can make leather armour and shields for themselves. During battle they will don their leather armour and shields and use the metal shovels that they usually use for digging to attack people who pass by their holes. Usually in large packs and rather frightening to face.

The 'Eye of Perception' on Su Yu's left hand had activated and swiftly transmitted the information regarding these old and ugly monsters into his head. Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Lin Shi and the others reacted quickly as they dropped their backpacks and got into a fighting formation.

Zhou Bi Rong lifted her pistol as she took off the safety.

Releasing Ding Shan from his back and looking at these small monsters that wore leather armour while wielded metal shovels and wooden shields, he had a weird feeling.

“Haaaa!”

After hesitating for a moment, Qin Jia Gui and Zhao Shi Chang rushed forward first. Even Zhang Zhong Mou had become a tier one dark iron warrior and this had a big impact on them. They urgently wanted to kill more monsters to promote and these short monsters did not seem very impressive and seemed suitable candidates for their slaughter.

Zhang Zhong Mou dropped the two backpacks he was carrying as he boisterously said: “Damn, I’ll let you test the abilities of this master Zhang.”

Promoting from tier zero to tier one dark iron warrior, a person would randomly comprehend one or two abilities, like Su Yu who comprehended the ‘Eye of Perception’ and ‘Rending Claw’ or Ma Zi Ye who comprehended the ‘Web of Steel’. Now that Zhang Zhong Mou had risen to tier one dark iron warrior, he naturally also comprehended some abilities.

Half his face turned to stone as he lowered his head while exclaiming: “Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser!” A crisp sound could be heard from the top of his head as he suddenly rushed forward.

“Bang!”

An Gnome wielded a wooden shield to block while its other hand swung the metal shovel forward.

“Ahhhh!”

Zhang Zhong Mou screamed as his left arm was hit by the metal shovel, fresh blood splattered while the Gnome also screamed, the wooden shield within its hand had actually been shattered by Zhang Zhong Mou's head and its small body was sent flying through the air.

“Eh? Haha!” The pain in his left arm caused his face to be contorted but Zhang Zhong Mou suddenly felt that his ‘Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser’ was impressive as he began to laugh loudly. In the intense battle with the Golden Goblin previously, he panicked and had only used his head to smash and totally forgot about activating his ability. He was rather ashamed of this and thought that if he had used the ‘Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser’ then, the Golden Goblin would have suffered quite a bit more.

Zhou Bi Rong began to fire with her pistol, “Bang! Bang! Bang!” three shots could be heard as an Gnome began to sway before a final bullet entered its skull causing it to fall to the ground.

Su Yu stood at his original position as his left arm became covered in scales. He did not act but rather watched as Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Lin Shi and the others kill the Gnomes. They were at the precipice of promoting and once they did, their strength would increase by leaps and bounds. A tier zero dark iron warrior was simply too weak.

Ma Zi Ye activated the ‘Web of Steel’ and immediately sealed the movements of two Gnomes before kicking forth with her ‘Flying Spade’.

“Chiii”

The kick flew into the face of one of the Gnomes.

Besides the mighty Golden Goblin which could use its golden blades to slice off Ma Zi Ye's right leg which was enhanced by the strange energy, her leg was immensely strong and even rocks smashing against it would do no damage. This immensely strong leg had slammed into the face of one of the Gnomes.

Falling to the ground, Ma Zi Ye used her two hands to prop herself up as her right leg continued and performed a Wushu move 'Leg Whip'.

"Pa!"

An explosive sound resounded as the leg swept forth like a whip, hitting the thigh of another Gnome as it was sent flying, the bones in its legs thoroughly smashed.

These two moves were swift and decisive and could be considered to have been performed to perfection. A Gnome had died in a single blow while the other was heavily injured. Seeing this, Su Yu could not help but silently praise her. Having a Wushu background really made a difference, even though they were both tier one dark iron warriors, Ma Zi Ye was clearly much more formidable than Zhang Zhong Mou.

Earlier Zhang Zhong Mou had carelessly and haphazardly rushed forward, he had gone too fast and although he had managed to knock down an Gnome, his left arm was also hit in the process and

even Su Yu did not have the time to aid him.

By the side, Qin Jia Gui howled as the wooden club in his hand went forward and heavily smashed onto the head of an Gnome. “Bang!” The head of the Gnome was smashed in and blood splattered everywhere before its body fell heavily to the ground.

As for Li Dong, he was currently in a perilous situation. Although he had managed to hit a Gnome, he was suddenly attacked by two other Gnomes and if nothing changed he would certainly be smashed by the metal shovels.

Su Yu was carefully observing the surroundings and noticing Li Dong facing such peril, he lifted his left arm as white fangs that seemed to come from a huge beast appeared from within his black scales, he softly exclaimed as he shook his left arm and several “swish swish swish swish” sounds could be heard as white fangs shot forth like bullets and landed squarely on the two Gnomes.

Hoarse screams could be heard as two explosions caused two holes to appear on the chests of the Gnomes, their bodies swayed as they backed away and Li Dong used the chance to attack, his wooden club swinging down as he killed one of the Gnomes.

The sharp fangs that Su Yu had just shot forth was his newly comprehended ability ‘Fang Bullet Burst’. Allowing fangs to grow from in between the black scales on his arm and shooting them like bullets, upon contact with the enemy they would explode with a strong force. This was a long distance attack and the effective distance was approximately twenty metres, any further and the accuracy would be severely affected.

Zhou Bi Rong saw this and looked at Su Yu in amazement, his move had been even more fearsome than her pistol shots.

“Aaahhh!” Qin Jia Gui suddenly roared however this roar seemed to have some excitement within it.

Looking over, Su Yu noticed that Qin Jia Gui’s right hand had been completely covered in a layer of raven black metal, he immediately understood that Qin Jia Gui must have promoted to tier one as well.

Indeed, Qin Jia Gui immediately wielded his metallic right hand as he shouted: “Demolishing Iron Fist!” the metallic arm heavily smashed into the chest of a Gnome.

“Bang!”

The area that was smashed suddenly exploded as the Gnome shrieked miserably, it flew backwards through the air and a large hole that was caused by the explosion could be seen, killing it immediately even as it fell to the ground.

Su Yu’s expression changed, this move ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ was clearly very powerful.

“Iron Arrow Claw!” Qin Jia Gui swiftly strode forward, “Thump Thump Thump” taking three big steps as his five fingers spread, five metallic fingers suddenly became five sharp awls that went

forward with a “Chiii”, piercing five bloody holes into the chest of an incoming Gnome.

Chapter 44: Demolishing Iron Fist

“Iron Arrow Claw” was precisely the second ability that he had comprehended. He was similar to Su Yu and had comprehended two abilities after entering tier one and both were combat abilities.

The Gnome howled miserably as it attempted to retaliate with the metal shovel in its hand.

Qin Jia Gui noticed that the killing potential of the ‘Iron Arrow Claw’ was insufficient and hurriedly activated the ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ as he smashed forward again.

“Bang!”

Right before the metal shovel slam down onto his head, the chest of the Gnome exploded as it was sent flying away.

Qin Jia Gui had just stepped into the tier one level and comprehended two abilities as he immediately used them and shocked everyone, immediately killing two of the Gnomes.

Ma Zi Ye looked over and felt that her limelight had been covered by his as she harrumphed. This fellow really liked to stand in the limelight and his performance seemed even more outstanding than when Su Yu had reached tier one.

Qin Jia Gui retracted his metal fist, elation evident on his face. Even he could not help but compare his ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ to

the ‘Rending Claw’ and wondered which was stronger. With strength, his ambitions were ignited and he wanted to become the acknowledged strongest person in the group. He wanted to take over Su Yu’s position.

Thinking of this, he glanced over at Su Yu as his eyes seemed to burn with intensity, a challenging air could be felt around him.

Su Yu noticed this but laughed and did not say anything.

Ma Zi Ye also noticed this and backed away to Su Yu’s side as she whispered: “What do you think? This fellow’s skill really has some qualities that make it worth seeing but isn’t he too flashy.”

Seeing that most of the Gnomes had already died, Su Yu relaxed his left hand as the black scales disappeared. He tousled his hair as he smiled and replied: “It’s not bad, seems like it has a rather strong impetus.”

Ma Zi Ye’s eyes lit up, Su Yu said that the ‘impetus’ was strong and did not mention it’s ‘might’, this clearly illustrated the problem.

Su Yu had analyzed Qin Jia Gui’s ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ and his ‘Rending Claw’ while he was still at tier one and both sides had relatively strong offensive might however, the ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ relied on the strength behind the metal fist to create an explosive force to destroy the enemy while his ‘Rending Claw’ depended on the sharpness and hardness of his black scales, creating a frightening rotational force that formed a powerful vortex. The black scales were like small knife pieces and when this

claw went forth, wherever it went regardless of bone or flesh they would be minced. In comparison to the ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’, it not only matched it in power but also added a rotational force to it.

When making this comparison, Su Yu felt that his ‘Rending Claw’ did not pale in the slightest to the ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ and this was under the assumptions that both sides were on the same level. Su Yu who had entered into tier two certainly had a much greater destructive power than Qin Jia Gui.

Qin Jia Gui’s competitive spirit only meant that he wanted to work hard and overcome Su Yu but it did not mean that he already had the ability to do so.

The strength of these Gnomes were between that of a Lesser and Greater Goblin and the group managed to kill all the Gnomes without taking any injuries. Qin Jia Gui had also promoted and become the fourth tier one dark iron warrior after Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye and Zhang Zhong Mou while comprehending the abilities of ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ and ‘Iron Arrow Claw’.

As people continually promoted, they had already gotten a deep understanding of the strange energy. Killing monsters and absorbing the crystals from them would allow them to become ‘Dark Iron Warriors’, there were different tiers of dark irons warriors and the lowest was tier zero followed by tier one then two and each time they promoted a tier they would comprehend new abilities and become even stronger.

Furthermore, each person had unique reactions to the strange energy. Su Yu’s left hand that was covered in a layer of black scales

appears to be an arm that only an animal would possess, together with the claws and fangs that his abilities had, it was clear that his strange energy was associated to a bestial form of energy.

Ma Zi Ye's strange energy was even stranger and black rope-like things would appear on her leg. Zhang Zhong Mou's face turned into stone and Qin Jia Gui's skin could become metal, causing his right fist to appear like dark coloured iron.

Although they were absorbing the same energy, each person would go through a different transformation.

Seeing Qin Jia Gui's transformation, Zhao Shi Chang, Lin Shi and Lin Dong had a yearning within their eyes, they also wanted to know what their abilities were, after going through a transformation.

Having killed this group of Gnomes, Li Dong and the others who had not promoted changed their wooden clubs for the metal shovels. It was clear that the metal shovel had a much stronger offensive capability than the wooden club.

They continued on and spotted holes behind a copse of trees, it was clear that this hole was the dwelling of that group of Gnomes and they had heard the group's footsteps causing them to climb out and attack, inadvertently losing their lives in the process.

The group did not tarry for long before continuing on, of the thirteen people in the group, there was one tier two dark iron warrior and three tier one dark iron warriors. The group's

strength could be said to be immense and a normal pack of Lesser Goblins or low level Gnomes would not be able to threaten them.

At midday the group stopped to rest and began to eat. The dark clouds in the sky began to disperse as indistinct rays from the sun could be seen, causing the area to not seem as sinister.

The morning had gone by swiftly and the group had already covered much ground but did not made much headway. What was before them was still a sprawling forest with trees that reached the sky, wild grass and flowers littered the area and their uniqueness made it difficult to describe, the group simply did not recognise any of them.

It was already midday and Qin Jia Gui who had been elated earlier gradually felt his spirits sink lower, based on their appointment they only had an afternoon worth of time left.

If they did not make any discoveries this afternoon, they had to head back to the school and the food there would probably have run out already.

The group sat together as they rested and took food out from their backpacks. Ma Zi Ye continued to eat her instant noodles with an intoxicated expression on her face as her other hand reached into her backpack to retrieve a bottle of orange juice. She was not too fond of drinking water and had stuffed many bottles of orange juice, Coca Cola, Sprite and other similar drinks.

Ding Shan drank the mineral water in her hands and felt that it

was rather tasteless as she looked at the orange juice within Ma Zi Ye's hands with a yearning expression.

Ma Zi Ye noticed this and laughed as she handed the orange juice over to her.

Ding Shan was shy and she timidly shook her head.

Su Yu rubbed her hair and laughed: "Little girl what's there to be shy about." as he helped her accept the orange juice and passed it to her.

Ding Shan stuck out her small tongue as she softly said: "Thank you big sister." before turning to Su Yu and continuing: "Thank you big brother."

Su Yu laughed as he rubbed Ding Shan's head, he felt that this little girl was simply too cute.

Chapter 45: Encountering With Danger At The River

By the side, Li Dong seemed ill at ease as he bit into a bread and suddenly said: “Qin Jia Gui, it’s already noon time but all we see is forest and more forest. Are we still going to continue forward?”

Although Su Yu was the strongest within the group, he was rather low-key and did not make many decisions. Most of the decisions within the group were made by Qin Jia Gui who liked being in the limelight and as a result Li Dong decided to ask for Qin Jia Gui’s opinion.

Although Li Dong had only asked a simple question, his meaning was clear and he was saying that going forward had no further meaning because there was only endless forest ahead of them.

Qin Jia Gui had not spoken up when Zhou Hua Kang nodded and said: “That’s right, originally we planned to spend two days searching and we’ve only got half a day left. There’s only forest in front of us and no reason to continue heading forward. Should we just..... head back to the school and make a decision then?”

Hearing their words, the group had expressions of deep thought before Qin Jia Gui spoke up: “No way, since we’ve already decided we should continue on. Even if there’s only an afternoon left, we should not give up till the end. Who knows, maybe hope will appear at the final moment.”

Li Dong saw that Qin Jia Gui was still firm in his decision as he

turned to Su Yu and asked: “Su Yu, what do you think?” Within the group, only Su Yu had the possibility of changing Qin Jia Gui’s mind.

Su Yu muttered: “About that.....” He tousled his hair before continuing: “I agree with Qin Jia Gui, till the final moment we should not give up.....” He paused for a while before sighing. The truth was, he felt that chances were slim and once they headed back, he would be faced with a difficult decision.

Seeing that Su Yu was of the same mind, disappointment clearly showed on Li Dong’s face but he did not say anything else.

After a short respite, they packed up their belongings and continued hurrying down the road.

The route they continued on was as Li Dong had predicted, the front was still endless sprawling trees and occasionally Lesser Goblins and Gnomes would appear. Finally Zhao Shi Chang also promoted and became the fifth tier one dark iron warrior within the group.

The strange energy within Zhao Shi Chang and Qin Jia Gui were located similarly in their right hands but when he promoted to tier one, his right hand was covered in a black shell-like layer and when he attacked enemies it was different from Qin Jia Gui who would smash down with his fist. A sharp one chi* long blade that was snow white and similar to jade, would actually extend from within the black shell and pierce outwards.

[Chi = 1/3 metre]

When he received the information regarding it, he realised it was known as 'Bone Blade' and while wielding it he could easily pierce through the trunk of a small tree, its sharpness was evident.

Seeing the time go by minute after minute, the group became more and more despondent. It was at this moment that Qin Jia Gui walked by a shrub that was approximately as high as him and let out a soft exclamation of surprise.

Ma Zi Ye who was following closely behind also saw this and cheered before suddenly rushing forward.

Past the shrubs, there was a slope and below it there was a river that was over ten metres in length and one could not see the start nor end of it. The river passed through the forest like a white strip amongst the boundless greenery.

At this moment, the appearance of this river made the group fill with elation.

In these two days, they had experienced countless slaughters and their clothes had long been stained with blood and the stench and discomfort could not be described in words. At this moment the river was like a life saver and their elation was evident, it was no wonder that Ma Zi Ye would suddenly just rush forward.

"Be careful." Qin Jia Gui reminded as he followed closely behind.

“It’s a river, a river!” Zhao Shi Chang laughed as he ran over.

In the back, Ning Yan’s face finally brightened as she also went forward.

In no time at all the thirteen people were gathered before the river, looking at the river water, they were excited and felt that their entire bodies were itchy and uncomfortable. They were tempted to simply jump into the river and take a bath.

“Everyone let’s calm down first. We don’t know how deep the river is or if there are any dangers. Let’s examine closely first.” Qin Jia Gui was more calm than the others and did not forget about the danger at this moment.

Zhao Shi Chang then laughed: “I think everyone should take turns bathing, if we don’t come across a water source it’s fine. But now that it’s in front of us, even a second longer of not bathing is so difficult to bear.”

Even a guy like him felt this way, not to mention the girls Ma Zi Ye and Ning Yan, they immediately nodded as they heard this.

Zhuang Xiao Hua who was by the side also piped up: “This river is very narrow and probably won’t be too deep. I’ve actually got some experience in this area, the water is clear and we can even see the small rocks at the bottom. What danger is there to speak of? Haha, since you guys are scared then I won’t be courteous and go ahead to take a bath first.”

Zhuang Xiao Hua laughed as he excitedly took off his outer clothes and leapt into the water.

Ma Zi Ye spat as the few girls hurriedly turned away.

Qin Jia Gui and Su Yu saw that the river water was indeed clear to the extent that they could see the bottom and it did not seem deep as they finally put their fears to rest. Zhao Shi Chang then spoke: “Then we’ll trouble you girls to keep watch, we’re going to bathe first.....”

His words had barely left his mouth when Zhuang Xiao Hua who was enjoying himself within the river suddenly shouted as his four limbs began to struggle violently, the clear river water was suddenly stained with fresh blood.

“What’s going on?” A sudden situation had arisen and everyone was shocked as they rushed forward to take a look, the girls were no exception.

The clear river water seemed to have nothing within it yet Zhuang Xiao Hua’s body was constantly irregularly contorting within, as though something were wrapping around him. Words could be barely heard from his mouth “Save..... Save me.....” as his body was continually dragged under.

“Everyone be careful, don’t recklessly jump into the water!” Qin Jia Gui exclaimed as the metal fist appeared on his right hand. Looking over at Zhuang Xiao Hua who was being pulled under as

he continually squirmed and struggled, he hesitated.

There was nothing there but why was Zhuang Xiao Hua acting so weird? The more someone did not understand something, the more frightening it was and even Qin Jia Gui hesitated.

Su Yu did not speak and did not bother to remove his clothing as black scales covered his left arm till his shoulders, the black scales raised up as they spat out white mist and he jumped into the river, 'Rending Claw' was activated and the force immediately affected the water, causing a loud explosive noise 'Kaboom!', thereafter, Su Yu continued to wield it as he continued forward towards Zhuang Xiao Hua who was still struggling for his life.

"Kaboom! Kaboom!"

The high rotational speed from the 'Rending Claw' caused the water to fly in all directions, at the same time Su Yu softly hissed: "I understand now!" White fangs appeared from within his black scales and as he shook his arm "swish swish swish" sounds that were similar to beans being fried could be heard, 'Fang Bullet Burst' had been activated and immediately the water seemed to explode as large amounts of fresh blood spewed forth. The "Fang Bullet Burst" that caused the explosion in the water actually produced such a large amount of fresh blood? The people by the shore who saw this soon understood the reason.

Chapter 46: End Of The Journey

Su Yu hissed as he strode forward, his left arm heavily slamming downwards. Finally, a shrill cry like that of a baby could be heard as the 'Rending Claw' brought up large amounts of minced meat and fresh blood mixed with river water. Su Yu then lifted his hand and with a "Pa!", something was brought out of the river and heavily thrown to the shore.

The group looked over and saw half a segment of a monster that seemed to be a mix between a fish and a snake, the 'Rending Claw' of Su Yu had caused an area of minced flesh but the other areas of the monster seemed clear like the colour of the river water, extremely strange and now that it had been dropped by the river side, its colour gradually changed and actually became that of the mud, if one did not look closely it would be simply impossible to see it.

In no time at all Su Yu tossed the other half of its body to the shore and it also changed from the colour of the river water to that of the mud by the shore.

The monster actually had the ability of a chameleon and could change its body colour to match that of its surroundings, when it was in the river it was clear like the river water and thus no one had noticed its presence.

Zhuang Xiao Hua had been hoodwinked to believe that there was no danger within the water and leapt in, thus resulting in him being viciously attacked.

When Su Yu brought Zhuang Xiao Hua back to the shore, Zhuang Xiao Hua's body was already contorted and he had already died.

Looking at Zhuang Xiao Hua's corpse and recalling the scene of him jesting earlier, his vibrant life had suddenly vanished in an instant.

The group looked at Zhuang Xiao Hua's corpse which was currently lying wide eyed by the shore, the atmosphere silent and heavy. Qin Jia Gui was currently hating on himself for hesitating, if he had not hesitated and jumped into the river with Su Yu, while Su Yu was killing the monster he would have been able to attempt to save Zhuang Xiao Hua, possibly giving him a fighting chance. However, besides Su Yu, no one else had dared to jump into the river.

Qin Jia Gui was ashamed and he finally realised that we would never be able to compare to Su Yu, during a critical juncture he was not as decisive as Su Yu.

Thinking of this, he could not help but look over at Su Yu.

At this moment Su Yu was staring at Zhuang Xiao Hua's corpse, as though he were thinking about something.

In Qin Jia Gui's eyes, Su Yu had suddenly become mystifying and incomprehensible.

Su Yu was extremely ordinary on a normal day and did not seem

to possess anything special, however, when it came to a critical situation, he seemed to have extraordinary courage and insight, able to make the right decisions and the ability to adapt to any situation.

Qin Jia Gui suddenly understood, the reason why Su Yu was able to stand at their forefront and become the only tier two dark iron warrior was not due to luck like he once thought but rather, strength. This was the strength he kept buried and concealed within him and Qin Jia Gui suddenly felt the distance between him and Su Yu.

His fists clenched tightly as Qin Jia Gui suddenly felt envious of Su Yu, this innate quality that Su Yu possessed he also yearned for it.

The weird monster that had appeared at the riverbed and Zhuang Xiao Hua's death made the group gloomy, the sky was gradually getting darker and this afternoon would pass in no time. At this very moment, everyone was feeling their enthusiasm wane.

Su Yu's 'Eye of Perception' had already gathered the information regarding the dead monster. It was called 'River Boa Beast' and it made sounds like that of a baby. Its body would change its colour to the surroundings and often would commence sneak attacks from within rivers. It did not have teeth but was immensely strong, when it wrangled its prey it could crush all the bones within it causing the prey to die instantly. Thereafter, it would swallow the prey whole. It belonged to the water beast race and loved solidarity, it was fearsome and could be occasionally seen in rivers and mountains.

Looking at Zhuang Xiao Hua's corpse and the sky that was gradually becoming darker, the group had even lost their interest to take a bath.

Qin Jia Gui felt deep down that he owed Zhuang Xiao Hua, grabbing a metal spade from Wei Zhang Ming as he began to dig a hole.

Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang and the others were quick to grab metal spades as they assisted him, these metal spades were those wielded by the gnomes and were currently very useful.

In no time at all a large hole was dug by the riverside and Qin Jia Gui put the metal spade down as he gingerly lifted Zhuang Xiao Hua's corpse as he softly said: "Sorry, if I was slightly more courageous, maybe..... maybe you wouldn't be dead now. I promise..... I will never be weak again in the future..... just watch, if Su Yu can do it, Qin Jia Gui also can do it. I won't be inferior to him."

Placing Zhuang Xiao Hua's corpse into the large hole, the group began to help cover it and his corpse was buried swiftly.

Having buried the corpse, Qin Jia Gui let out a sigh as the feeling of guilt within his heart lessened. He lifted his head and mumbled: "The sky will be dark soon."

The group understood what he meant, seeing the ten over metre river before them, Qin Jia Gui had lost the will to carry on. This

journey of theirs seemed like it would end at this river.

Following Zhuang Xiao Hua's death, the number of people in the group had fallen to twelve.

The group were silent for a long time as they sat down, the twelve people lost in their own thoughts.

The night came swiftly within the forest and shrouded the entire area in darkness. The group silently ate as they heard the occasional frightening roars within the forest. In the night, the forest became extremely frightening and the roars this night were exceptionally bone-chilling and frightening, repeating continuously and constantly fraying their nerves, making them unable to rest.

Ding Shan's large eyes were filled with terror and she hid within Zhou Bi Rong's embrace. Zhou Bi Rong covered her ears in an attempt to prevent her from hearing the frightening roars.

Finally, Qin Jia Gui broke the silence as he looked at a biscuit within his hand and said: "Based on the promise, two days have already passed but heading back in the night is too dangerous. Let's rest here for tonight and early in the morning, we will go back to the school. What are your opinions?"

Returning back to the school meant facing the thousand over students and teachers. What would they do about the food problem? They had ventured forth but not found a rescue team, neither had they found a safe exit or any food that could satisfy the

thousand odd people. It could be said that they had thoroughly failed in their mission.

Li Dong laughed coldly: “There are quite a few of the monsters within the forest, regardless of Lesser Goblins or Gnomes, if we let them eat the meat from these monsters, they may be able to continue living.”

Li Dong’s words made the group feel disgusted, the blood of the Lesser Goblins was green and their flesh was also green, seemingly extremely disgusting. Eating the meat from a Lesser Goblin? Not to mention eating it, the mere thought of it made the goosebumps of the group stand on end.

“Li Dong, your damned dog mouth that can’t say any good things, can you not be so disgusting?” Zhang Zhong Mou had almost spat out the sausage he had eaten and was quite displeased.

Li Dong coldly replied: “Disgusting? Haven’t you guys heard the rumours from the past, back in the desolate past, people were hungry to the point of eating tree bark and roots, eating mud or even human flesh. These are just the meat from monsters and if you don’t want to, then there’s only one solution.”

Chapter 47: Painful Decision

Zhang Zhong Mou asked curiously: “What method?”

Li Dong had a profound expression as he slowly spoke: “The food on our bodies can still last us two to three days, if the food at the supermarket is still there, we can bring it all and it would last us at least ten to twenty days..... Within that time, we might be able to find the exit right? At least..... it would be better than being together with those people and eating of the monster’s carcasses and consuming tree bark and wild grass.”

As he was saying this, the fists by his sides were tightly clenched.

Li Dong had spoken his mind and the group were silent. It was a frightening silence and the group could hear the loud heartbeats within their chests.

In this moment, each person was left with a choice. To return to the school and suffer with the thousand over people or throw them aside and choose the road which had a greater hope.

Many of the people had cold sweat on their hands and something that seemed like a simple choice made them feel that they would either be going against their conscience or choosing a path that would be wrought with difficulties.

Seeing that no one spoke, Li Dong continued in a low voice: “What do you guys think?” His voice was hoarse as he yelled, his hands were drenched in cold sweat and seeing the group that

remained silent he shouted wildly: “Are you people really that magnanimous? Can’t you bear to throw them aside? If we can’t even ensure that we live, what power do we have to go and care about other people?”

Li Dong was very nervous, he was afraid that these people would really choose to go back to the school and work together with the thousand odd people. If it was only him, no matter how much gall he had he would not dare to travel alone. He needed to convince them and make everyone be like him, decide to take the food and ignore the lives and deaths of the thousand odd people within the school.

A moment later, Zhou Hua Kang wiped the cold sweat from his brow as he said in a slightly hoarse voice: “My thoughts are similar to Li Dong. Although..... although we are letting them down, however..... however I really don’t dare to imagine, over a thousand people without food and water..... food can be ignored as trees and wild plants can stave off hunger, but what about water? With so many people moving together..... I’m afraid..... Afraid that it would lure even more frightening monsters. The outcome would be simply unimaginable.” Looking at the river before them, although there was water there, the amount that over a thousand people would require was astonishing and merely thinking about it caused Zhou Hua Kang to feel his scalp go numb, simply inconceivable.

Li Dong noticed that someone had finally agreed with his view as he secretly sighed in relief before looking towards Su Yu and Qin Jia Gui. They were still deep in thought as though they had not made their decision.

Zhao Shi Chang suddenly stood up and his voice was very calm as he indifferently said: “I’ve thought through this and..... understood something. Be it us or the people in the school, everyone has come to this forest together. Everyone has started from the same starting point and only we can decide our own futures. We won’t harm them but neither do we have the ability to help them. I think we can share our experiences of these two days with them and I sincerely hope that they all can live, however, we cannot help so many people and thus I’m sad to say, I choose to be with Li Dong and the others. Also..... I don’t believe that this means we’re selfish, when faced with life and death, everyone is equal and why would I treat my life lightly? Why would I cause myself to endure the worst circumstances by starving and thirsting for these people? I’m not a saint and I am unable to do so.”

Having said his piece, Zhao Shi Chang then sat down.

Zhang Zhong Mou snorted: “Good fellow, do you think you’re performing in some recital? You certainly have a refined bearing.”

Su Yu lifted his head as he glanced at Zhao Shi Chang before saying: “That’s right, we are all ordinary people and know how to plan for ourselves. This..... may not be wrong and I am also very selfish. I can’t possibly love and care for everyone in the same amounts however, there are some people, some things, some principles that have to be adhered to and even if I sacrifice my life, this would remain.”

Zhao Shi Chang stared blankly for a moment before speaking: “Su Yu, what is the meaning of your words? Are you going to throw us away? Are you going together with the thousand over

people?”

Su Yu shook his head as he softly said: “I’ve already said, I also can’t be fair and show care for each and every person. Although we have to face reality, there are some people in the school that I cannot leave behind, even if I throw away my life I will go and protect them. Do you understand?”

Zhao Shi Chang was dazed and Qin Jia Gui clenched his fists as he made his voice more forceful: “That’s right, I’m similar to Su Yu. There is someone I want to protect within the school and no matter what, I will not give her up.”

Zhou Bi Rong who was by the side then interrupted: “Since that’s the case, why not just bring away the people who you guys treasure, wouldn’t that solve the conundrum?”

Qin Jia Gui’s body trembled as Li Dong hurriedly continued: “That’s right, Qin Jia Gui, you’re talking about your girlfriend right? Just bring her along, one or two more people within the group won’t affect us. Su Yu, who can’t you give up? It can’t be that class of students you were with right?”

Hearing his words, Qin Jia Gui’s eyes lit up, this was indeed a possibility. Thinking of the thousand over people and the days of possibly eating tree bark or the flesh of those monsters, he could not bear to do so and certainly could not bear letting his girlfriend live those days.

The person that Su Yu could not give up on was naturally Jade.

The group had originally felt guilty towards giving up on the thousand over people and were afraid to face it. However, now that they had steeled their hearts and made the decision, it actually became a lot easier. After a careful discussion, each person besides Zhou Bi Rong and Ding Shan could bring one person from the school and they had the choice to give up this right as well.

Su Yu's choice was naturally Jade and Qin Jia Gui chose his girlfriend Yuan Ni Ping. The other people in the group began to consider whether they wanted to bring anyone along. There were some who were planning to give up their chance as every additional person in the group would mean an additional mouth to feed.

The prerequisite for this was that the food within the supermarket was still there, otherwise, all this talk would be meaningless.

“Roar!”

Suddenly, a frightening roar could be heard from the distance followed by sharp hissing.

Hearing this, their faces changed as the sounds of roaring and sharp hissing gradually grew closer. It seemed that the sounds were coming from barely several hundred metres away and finally with an explosive “Ka Cha!” two large monsters could be seen fighting, it extremely intense.

“Everyone be careful.” Qin Jia Gui spoke softly as he climbed up.

Hearing the imposing sounds, their colour on their faces drained.
These were definitely two very fearsome monsters.

Chapter 48: Savage Bull Demon

The vigorous battle that was several hundred metres away only lasted one to two breaths of time.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

There were expressions of alarm on the faces of the group and the monster that had been several hundred metres away was rushing toward them, the group thought about running but it was already too late.

This was a dark green monster with an enormous head, its outer appearance was similar to that of the Gnome they had previously encountered but below its hip was actually a large grey wolf. On close inspection it was not that this Gnome-like creature that was riding on the back of the grey wolf but rather the two were conjoined together, evidently it was a single entity. It was just that the appearance was simply too weird and from a glance one would think that it was a Gnome riding a large wolf.

The ‘Eye of Perception’ once again appeared on Su Yu’s left hand and immediately flashed the information regarding the monster through his mind.

Name: Gnome Rider

Information: Tier two beast soldier, mutated evolution within the Gnome race, they are formed when a Gnome catches a wolf and rips the flesh on its back open, thereafter planting themselves atop

it before merging and become one entity. Has speed comparable to the wolf and ferocious strength, a killer of the night within the forest. A strong Gnome Rider can even match against a Golden Goblin within the Goblin race.

Su Yu read through the information and took a breath of cold air, this Gnome Rider before them could actually match against a Golden Goblin in strength?

It was only that the Gnome Rider before them was covered in blood and seemed worse for wear, as it rushed towards the group, it simply ignored them and jumped into the river before crossing it and running into the woods on the other side of the river.

Su Yu suddenly came to his senses as he recalled that the sounds of clashing earlier were that of this Gnome Rider and another unknown monster in an intense battle. This Gnome Rider had lost and ran away as a result. It was simply so coincidental that it had actually run away in their direction and in this case the monster that had battled and won the Gnome Rider.....

By the time Su Yu came to this conclusion, another frightening roar could be heard in front of them as the monster that was chasing the fleeing Gnome Rider appeared. When it saw Su Yu and the group, it actually stopped as its blood-thirsty eyes seemed to suddenly fill with elation and viciousness. Compared to the tough meat of a Gnome Rider, human skin was thin and their meat soft, their fresh blood was sweet and could be considered a high quality food. Right now, a group of humans were before its eyes.

This monster that was initially hunting the Gnome Rider now

fully focused its attention on the group.

At this moment, even if some people of the group wanted to flee it was simply too late. The speed with which the enemy had arrived was several times faster than any of them.

“Everyone be careful, don’t move recklessly!” Qin Jia Gui exclaimed as he clenched his right fist, his skin becoming metal and swiftly transforming into a black iron fist.

Without his reminder, the group knew that the monster before them was not simple and clearly was not something the Gnomes, Lesser Goblins or River Boa Beast could match.

The monster before them had a head of a Bull and two black horns atop its head that seemed to flash with a frightening cold light, one could imagine how sharp it was.

Below the bull’s head was the body of a dog that seemed to be as big as that of a wild bull, its entire body was covered in a thick faint gold fur and what was most striking was on this monster’s back, there were actually two large arms that seemed to be that of an ape. These two arms were black like metal and seemed to contained inconceivable strength, the first thing the group noticed were these two black arms and almost without question, the most frightening aspect of this monster would be those two arms.

It was clear that the bull headed monster had ill intentions towards the group and Li Dong, Wei Zhang Ming, Zhou Hua Kang and the others lifted the metal spades as they slowly fanned out,

forming a tight formation. Zhou Bi Rong protected Ding Shan as she slowly backed away, Ning Yan also gradually backed away and it seemed as though whenever there was danger or monsters, she would choose to run and not fight.

Black ropes appeared on Ma Zi Ye's right leg and once their distance was close enough, she was prepared to activate the 'Web of Steel' to trap the monster.

The 'Eye of Perception' appeared on Su Yu's hand and once again sent the information regarding this monster through his mind.

Name: Savage Bull Demon

Information: Part of the Bull demon race, when a Savage Bull Demon matured, it would become a bonafide tier two elite beast soldier. Its speed was average however it had a frightening barbaric strength and could also use the ability 'Beheading Cyclone', it was one of the most frightening demon beasts among the tier two elite beast soldiers.

"Beheading Cyclone? This monster before them actually had an ability?" Su Yu felt his mind shudder and had not even warned the group before the Savage Bull Demon released a terrifying bull-like roar, its eyes widened as it lowered its head, its two black horns pointing forwards as it rushed towards the group.

Although the 'Eye of Perception' informed that the Savage Bull Demon only had an average speed, when compared to the group it was already frightening.

“Quick, dodge!” Qin Jia Gui shouted as he dodged to the side, his right metal fist swung in an attempt to slam into the side of the Savage Bull Demon. He had already activated the ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ within this blow and if it landed on the Savage Bull Demon, it would be able to explode a hole on its body.

Qin Jia Gui could see that this Savage Bull Demon was of a high level and if he managed to kill it, he would surely be able to greatly advance and possibly even become a ‘tier two dark iron warrior’. By then, he would really become an expert who would not be one whit inferior to Su Yu.

His thinking was too simplistic and just as his metal fist went forth, the ape arms on the back of the Savage Cow Demon stretched and grabbed his face as it lifted his body into the air. Qin Jia Gui was like a little chicken that had fallen into the claws of an eagle and in this moment he did not have any strength to resist.

Qin Jia Gui howled, he was terrified and if the hands of the Savage Bull Demon were to squeeze, his skull would surely be crushed.

Su Yu did not speak a word as his left arm was covered in black scales, immediately the entire left arm had gone through a bestial transformation, white fangs appeared from within the black scales as his right arm raised and with continuous “Bang! Bang! Bang!”, the ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ was activated.

The ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ was akin to bullets firing and Su Yu was

only half a step slower as he fired.

By the side, Ma Zi Ye shot forward and seeing Qin Jia Gui in a perilous situation, she did not bother activating the 'Web of Steel' but rather used the 'Flying Spade' to aim at the arm of the Savage Bull Demon.

If this 'Flying Spade' landed, Ma Zi Ye was confident that it would be able to break the arm that was currently holding onto Qin Jia Gui.

Zhang Zhong Mou lowered his head as he howled, activating the 'Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser' as he shot forth the back.

Zhao Shi Chang's left hand was covered in a thick shell as a 'Bone Blade' extended forth and also attacked.

In the blink of an eye, the entire group had pounced and no one showed any signs of fear or hesitation.

Having gone through two days of trials, the group had all become stronger and their mental fortitude was much stronger. Qin Jia Gui was suddenly in danger and the group surged forward, exhibiting the strength of their formidable abilities and showing their proficiency in coordination. In a split second the Savage Bull Demon was in a dangerous predicament.

Chapter 49: Earth Spikes Assault

‘Pa! Pa! Pa!’

Explosive noises rang from its back as the Savage Bull Demon howled. It had already been hit by three ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ and in its anger it actually wielded Qin Jia Gui which was currently in its hand as he smashed him towards Su Yu who was rushing over.

Su Yu had just activated the ‘Rending Claw’ and was using his full strength as he charged forward. Qin Jia Gui was suddenly smashing towards him and it seemed as though the ‘Rending Claw’ would collide with Qin Jia Gui.

Su Yu was shocked as he forcefully retracted his hand, the Savage Bull Demon had whirled its body and its other hand stretched forth actually managing to grab onto Su Yu who was currently frantically retreating, at the same time, Ma Zi Ye’s ‘Flying Spade’ had only landed on the back of the Savage Bull Demon due to it spinning its body.

“Bang!”

Ma Zi Ye painfully fell to the ground as the Savage Bull Demon roared from being kicked and let out an explosive roar as it sped forward on all fours.

Su Yu and Qin Jia Gui had both been grabbed by the Savage Bull Demon by their heads and Su Yu felt that it was weird that the arms of the Savage Bull Demon had such speed yet it did not use its

fist to clench down and crush their skulls but rather held on, this was simply too bewildering.

That thought flashed through Su Yu's mind, this immediately showcased the difference between Su Yu and Qin Jia Gui.

Although Qin Jia Gui was impressive, once he was grabbed by the Savage Bull Demon by the head, he immediately thought of all the people before him who had their heads crushed and thinking of the possibility of his skull being squashed, fear gripped his entire body as he now only knew how to yell in fear.

Su Yu on the other hand, started having several weird thoughts, as his left arm activated the 'Rending Claw'. In an instant, the strange energy that had formed into qi within his left arm began to wildly discharge out. Pieces of black scales were raised up as streaks of white mist that seemed like thin pillars were being emitted, borrowing the counter-force from the discharged white mist, Su Yu grunted and sent forth this fist of 'Rending Claw' that contained the full potential of the second tier for the first time.

Streaks of white mist like thin pillars continued to be discharged and the speed of this fist was simply indescribable. Su Yu could only see the mirage of his fist as it shot forth, thereafter, fresh blood splattered as the Savage Bull Demon shrieked miserably, the arm that had grabbed onto Su Yu had already been minced by the 'Rending Claw'.

“Roar!”

The Savage Bull Demon roared as it threw Qin Jia Gui towards Su Yu, its four legs kicked as it suddenly jumped away.

Su Yu's follow up attack of another 'Rending Claw' missed and the Savage Bull Demon had already escaped over ten metres away. It then abruptly turned around as a single arm stretched forth actually breaking a horn off its head as it hurled it towards the group.

The group were stunned and felt that as the black horn left its hand, a "Huo Huo" grim hissing could be heard as a streak of black light was seen and it appeared before Su Yu.

In shock, Su Yu howled as the 'Rending Claw' went forth to block.

"Ke Cha!"

Sparks of fire scattered about as Su Yu seemed to be electrocuted, heavily flipped away as the Savage Bull Demon broke off its second bull horn and tossed it.

"Beheading Cyclone!" Su Yu fell to the ground as he let out a shout. He understood that this was certainly the ability of the Savage Bull Demon: Beheading Cyclone.

The second horn flew towards the group as the 'Beheading Cyclone' activated, Ma Zi Ye, Zhao Shi Chang and the others saw the frightening scene of Su Yu being sent flying through the air

and dodged, the group seemed to have dodged it as it flew by however this 'Beheading Cyclone' actually turned and came flying back.

“Chiii”

Wei Zhang Ming suddenly screamed as his body trembled as he stood rigidly there. The 'Beheading Cyclone' earlier had entered his back and flew out from his chest, returning back to the hand of the Savage Bull Demon.

The hole in his chest was spewing out blood like a fountain and the group stared blankly, Wei Zhang Ming swayed as he moved a few steps before falling to the ground, dead even before he collapsed.

Receiving the horn which it had sent flying, the Savage Bull Demon once again activated the 'Beheading Cyclone.' The group were terrified as they dodged and Qin Jia Gui had just climbed back up but upon seeing it had no choice but to prone to the ground again.

Su Yu turned his body as he yelled: “Ma Zi Ye!” At the same time his left arm changed and the 'Lizard's arm' was activated.

His entire arm went through this unique change and became a huge arm that was roughly one metre in length and swelled like an inflated monster's arm. Each part of the muscle were like panels of iron and even nails would find it hard to penetrate.

Hearing Su Yu's shout, Ma Zi Ye rushed towards the Savage Bull Demon as she activated the 'Web of Steel'.

The Savage Bull Demon roared as it sent forth the 'Beheading Cyclone' while Su Yu howled as he wielded his 'Lizard's Arm'.

“Bang!”

There was a loud noise as though metal had collided and this time, the powerful 'Beheading Cyclone' was actually sent flying by Su Yu's 'Lizard's Arm', landing on the ground as it became an ordinary black horn.

The 'Lizard's arm' amplified his strength by two to three times and was certainly frightening, even the anti-theft door could be deformed in a single blow much less this 'Beheading Cyclone'.

Noticing that Su Yu had defeated its 'Beheading Cyclone', the Savage Bull Demon seemed to panic as it turned and wanted to run. Although it was strong, it understood that it was not a match for this group of people before it.

Ma Zi Ye delicately shouted 'Web of Steel' but was too slow as the Savage Bull Demon had already kicked the ground with its four legs as it jumped, with its speed, the group simply had no way to chase it.

Su Yu similarly had no chance to catch it and seemed to recall something as he turned his body and pressed his right hand onto

the ground, activating the magic spell 'Earth Spikes Assault' within the Earth Spike ring he wore on his hand.

He remembered that this particular magic spell attacked from afar.

The Earth Spikes ring glowed with an indistinct light as the crisp "Chi Chi Chi" sounds were being emitted from the ground. Thereafter, the area of several Zhang from where the Savage Bull Demon stood was suddenly covered with immense sharp rock piercings, dense and numerous as though the area had turned into a stone needle forest.

This was simply too imposing and the entire group was shocked. Su Yu also stared blankly as the Savage Bull Demon shrieked miserably while being pierced by these sharp rock piercings that had suddenly erupted from the ground.

These sharp rock piercings lasted for roughly a second before vanishing. The Savage Bull Demon's body seemed like a beehive and there were several large bleeding holes on its body as it fell heavily to the ground. The fresh blood dyed the entire ground crimson and its bull eyes were wide open, dying aggrieved as it did not even understand how it died.

Su Yu was dazed for a while before finally coming back to his sense. This 'Earth Spikes Assault' was actually so fearsome? This simply far exceeded his expectations.

After utilising the 'Earth Spikes Assault' the earth elemental laws

contained within had been emptied and it would require twenty four hours before being fully replenished and allowing the next usage of this frightening magic.

The Savage Bull Demon was not one whit inferior to the Golden Goblin and Su Yu absorbed a frightening amount of strange energy as he felt the strange energy within his left arm was about to advance. It was indistinct as it began to converge in the same place and pushed through the left shoulder area blockade. However a mere touch caused the strange energy to flow backwards.

Chapter 50: Friend

Su Yu was amazed, could it be that this was a sign that he was about to promote again?

The Savage Bull Demon had been killed by the 'Earth Spikes Assault' and the group was still stunned when Su Yu walked forward and crouched before the corpse. He then pressed the solitary arm that was on its back and found that it was rather feeble, nodding his head he immediately understood. The two arms that were grown by the side of the monster's back were not for attacking enemies but specifically for utilising the 'Beheading Cyclone'.

Although this arm seemed quite frightening at a glance, it did not contain much strength and although its speed was fast enough to swiftly grab his and Qin Jia Gui's heads, it did not have the explosive power to crush their heads.

"It seems that utilising that 'Beheading Cyclone' requires speed and nimble skill, not too much strength is required. As a result, these two arms are very fast and deft but lack in strength. It's fortunate that it turned out this way, otherwise, both me and Qin Jia Gui would have died to it." Su Yu mumbled.

If the Savage Bull Demon really had such speed in its arms and also a frightening destructive strength, it would be able to kill their group in seconds and certainly not only be a tier two beast soldier.

Li Dong stood by Wei Zhang Ming's corpse and an expression of

grief could be seen on his face.

Within their group, Su Yu and Zhang Zhong Mou's relations were the most iron clad and Li Dong and Wei Zhang Ming could be considered to have good relations. Now that Wei Zhang Ming had died, he felt a feeling of loneliness, like the fox who grieves when the rabbit dies*.

[Idiom: To have sympathy with a like-minded person in distress]

Wei Zhang Ming did not speak much normally and was like Lin Shi in this respect however, he was far from Lin Shi who was so daring and within the group he seemed ordinary. It was to the point where Su Yu and the others almost did not recall when they last spoke with him and seeing his corpse, there was a puzzled expression on Zhang Zhong Mou's face. He had actually forgotten Wei Zhang Ming's name but it certainly was not a good time to ask about it.

After a moment of silence, Li Dong lifted his metal spade and began to dig at the area where Zhuang Xiao Hua had been buried. It was clear that he also planned to bury Wei Zhang Ming here.

Qin Jia Gui noticed this and immediately picked up a metal spade as he began to help out.

As he dug, Qin Jia Gui recalled the scene of him exchanging blows with the Savage Bull Demon but he did not understand why he became so panicky after being grabbed by the monster, losing his wits and if he had only calmed down and used the 'Demolishing

Iron Fist', he could have easily shattered that Savage Bull Demon's arm but he questioned himself constantly as to why he had not done it.

Qin Jia Gui thought to himself: "For..... for Su Yu, it had seemed so simple. Was this because he had risen to tier two dark iron warrior? Or could it be that he was weaker than Su Yu? No, that's impossible!"

Qin Jia Gui grit his teeth as he promised deep down, if he met with such a dangerous situation in the future, he would not panic and would calmly assess the situation, looking for gaps within impossible situations and turn defeat into victory.

Once Wei Zhang Ming had been buried, Li Dong carried Wei Zhang Ming's backpack and poured all the contents within out. Thereafter he picked up two pieces of bread before speaking to the rest: "Everyone take a bit, the items are on the ground." Having said this, he then threw away the empty backpack to the side.

Seeing this, Zhang Zhong Mou clicked his tongue: "Good fellow, still call yourself his friend? He has only just died but you're already raring to go and splitting up his items?"

Li Dong looked him in the eye as he angrily retorted: "You ass, what do you know? Wei Zhang Ming and I are friends and so I personally buried him. However..... due to this, the items that he left behind, should we just bury it together with him? What do you think? Does doing that make me a good friend? Otherwise I'm just being a superficial friend? Oh, pray do tell. I don't really know how to be superficial. I only know that a dead person is already dead

while the people who are alive still have to struggle to live on. Even if I die, I would think that splitting my items would be the correct choice for the group, giving more chances for the living to go on. Is this wrong? What's wrong with this?"

Li Dong was howling like as if he was a lunatic as Zhang Zhong Mou was actually dumbstruck and rendered speechless by this.

Su Yu did not speak but rather walked forward, picking up a bottle of water as well as a bag of beef jerky from the pile of items.

The others saw this and also went forward to take one or two items. Li Dong's eyes were red as he stood there rigidly, his entire body trembling.

Su Yu took the final two items that were on the ground and tossed it to Zhang Zhong Mou who was by the side: "Take it, Li Dong is right. If Wei Zhang Ming were in the underworld he would also wish for us to do this. As living people, we have to carry the hopes of the dead and struggle onward. Why we entered this forest, one day we will find out the reason. If it were because of some people, I think..... I think that as living people we should take revenge for our dead buddies. This is for sure!"

Zhang Zhong Mou received the food which Su Yu had thrown over as he solemnly put them into his backpack. He suddenly felt heavy as though these two food items were a heavy responsibility that had been entrusted on to him.

When Li Dong saw that Zhang Zhong Mou was keeping the two

food items, he quickly turned his body around as his shoulders began to tremble faintly.

Su Yu stretched his hands forth to pat his shoulders as he spoke: “What you said is very true, as living people, we have to struggle to live on. In this way, the dead would not have died in vain and I believe that Wei Zhang Ming would not wish to see you like this.”

“I know..... I know.....” Li Dong’s shoulders continued to faintly tremble as his breathing became ragged. Unknowingly tears had already welled up within his eyes.

Seeing this, Su Yu sighted. Although Li Dong could be considered a very selfish person and constantly planned for himself, from another perspective, he could be considered a realist. Seeing the way he valued the friendship with Wei Zhang Ming, Su Yu felt a change in his opinion of him. At least this Li Dong was not superficial, he was not a vile person with no regard for others, he merely wants to strive hard to survive, that’s all.

After the commotion with the Savage Bull Demon together with the deaths of Zhuang Xiao Hua and Wei Zhang Ming, everyone felt restless and could not fall asleep easily. Zhuang Xiao Hua and Wei Zhang Ming were different from the others who had died, they had been together for a longer period of time and their feelings were closer. The group was heavy hearted and sat down before a large tree as they chatted.

Ma Zi Ye suddenly asked Zhang Zhong Mou: “Hey, big cigarette addict. You love smoking so much which girl do you think can bear with it? You don’t have a girlfriend right? I think you should stop

smoking, sister Ma is showing concern for you.”

Zhang Zhong Mou snorted, although he was not happy but what Ma Zi Ye said was right.

Ma Zi Ye noticed Zhang Zhong Mou’s expression and knew that she had hit the mark as she smiled: “As for Su Yu who doesn’t smoke, it’s clear that he already has a girlfriend.”

Chapter 51: A Sinister Fire

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed out: “You guessed wrongly, Su Yu doesn’t smoke or drink but he also does not have a girlfriend.....” Having said this, Ma Zi Ye’s beautiful eyes seemed to brighten, Zhang Zhong Mou was not dumb and suddenly seemed to have comprehended something as he scolded in his heart: “Stupid woman, she isn’t concerned about whether I have a girlfriend. She’s just trying to use me to find out if Su Yu has a girlfriend. It seems that Ma Zi Ye has really fallen for Su Yu.”

Thinking of this, Zhang Zhong Mou laughed as he thought of how to give a psychological blow to Ma Zi Ye as he whispered: “Ma Zi Ye, although Su Yu doesn’t have a girlfriend, he has an idol who he would die for.”

The expression on Ma Zi Ye’s face became unnatural as she laughed: “Is that right? You would know?”

Zhang Zhong Mou’s mouth curled upwards as he sneakily glanced at Ning Yan who was resting by the big tree: “That..... it’s a student from his class, it’s an open secret and we all know.”

Ma Zi Ye noticed the form of his mouth as she saw Ning Yan and she seemed to suddenly realise something as disappointment filled her heart. Ning Yan was indeed very beautiful and had an elegant air about her. Although she did not perform much within the group, it could not be denied that her appearance was exceptional. It was only that besides her looks, she had no other attractive points and could Su Yu possibly like such a girl that was like a flower vase? Ma Zi Ye felt rather indignant.

“If you don’t believe me, you can ask Su Yu for yourself.” Zhang Zhong Mou softly whispered.

Ma Zi Ye became rather moody, if she were to personally ask Su Yu, she could not do it. She raised her head and saw Su Yu was sitting together with Qin Jia Gui and Zhao Shi Chang. The three of them were chatting and discussing about their views of this forest.

If Su Yu’s hypothesis was correct, their school had been brought here through the ‘Sky Holes’. In that case, why did the ‘Sky Holes’ occur and why were they sent to this world? Did all this happen naturally or was there a someone controlling this from behind the scenes? If there was a mastermind, what were his motives? How could they escape from this forest, escape from this world?”

The three continued to voice their opinions and their conversation slowly moved towards dark iron warriors. They now knew that people who had gained strange energy within world were known as ‘dark iron warriors’ and ‘dark iron warriors’ had special strengths and uniquely differed from person to person. There were even tier segregations and in that case, was there a highest tier for the ‘dark iron warrior’? In that case what was the highest tier? What was the humongous feet and hand that had come down from the sky? Could it be a giant that was as tall as the sky? There was also that golden eagle monster who had destroyed the huge hands and feet.

Was the eagle monster closer to the Golden Goblin’s type of monster or was it closer to their human biological form?

Su Yu could still distinctly remember the gaze that the golden eagle monster had swept, those eyes were austere, like flashes of lightning or sounds of thunder sweeping through their bodies, emotionless and it felt like a human had inadvertently seen a few ants that were crawling on the ground but his gaze swept past without any regard for them.

They idly gossiped as Lin Shi who was silent for a long time suddenly interrupted: “Why would those who have strange energy within them be known as ‘dark iron warriors’?”

This question was rather weird and Zhao Shi Chang dryly laughed as he replied: “It could be because the colours of the areas that we transform seem like dark iron, my right hand is covered in a hard crust like that of an insects and Qin Jia Gui’s is even more alike, it is basically a fist that is cast from dark iron, Su Yu’s also looks similar.”

Although Zhao Shi Chang said this in a joking manner, his words still had some basis however Lin Shi had different views as he spoke up: “The warrior term within the dark iron warrior can be easily understood however why would one use dark iron to describe warriors? I feel that there should be some meaning behind this. At the very minimum, it won’t be the reason that Zhao Shi Chang stated.” As he said this he pointed at Zhang Zhong Mou who was by the side.

The group understood his meaning, Zhang Zhong Mou’s face could turn to stone and the colour was quite different from that of dark iron.

Zhao Shi Chang was speechless after this rebuttal and Su Yu tousled his hair as he seemed to want to say something but as he lifted his head, he saw that Zhou Hua Kang was walking towards Ning Yan who was leaning against a big tree and seemed to whisper something to her. Ning Yan lifted her face and looked at him, anger seemed to flash across her face but she continued to ignore him.

Zhou Hua Kang seemed angry as he slightly raised his voice: “Why are you still pretending? Do you really think that just because you have otherworldly beauty you can follow us, eat and drink for free without doing anything? What? Being my girlfriend would be an injustice for you? It’s me who thinks highly of you, otherwise, with your trashiness, you will die in this forest sooner or later. If you become my girlfriend, at least I will be able to protect you.....”

Having said this, Zhou Hua Kang suddenly had a gentle smiling face as he whispered: “There’s danger throughout this forest and we could die at any time. I believe you don’t wish to die before having a taste of ‘that’ right? Agree to be my girlfriend and once we return to school we can have a go, how’s that?”

Within this frightening forest, they could die at any time and because of this, many people removed their daily facades and superficial attitudes as they straightforwardly talked about their heartfelt desires.

Ning Yan could understand the meaning behind his words and her face shone in anger, her originally snow white face became even paler and seemed to be speechless in anger.

Zhou Bi Rong who was nearer to them heard Zhou Hua Kang's words and as a police officer, she had a strong sense of justice which shone as she stood up and said heavily: "What you just said is too much, such matters require mutual consent. Wishful thinking only on your part has no meaning."

Zhou Hua Kang turned his head and gave Zhou Bi Rong a look as he scolded: "Mind your own business, what business do you have when I'm courting a girl." Afterwards, he spoke with a heavy tone: "Ning Yan, speak up, what are your thoughts about this?"

Su Yu lowered down his hands that were currently tousling his hair. Zhao Shi Chang who was by the side spoke while smiling: "This rascal Zhou Hua Kang, he actually knows how to strike first and gain the upper hand. It must have been difficult for him to talk about love in these circumstances, but that Ning Yan..... perhaps she has some illness. If we knew earlier, we would not have allowed her to join this group, other than dragging down our feet, she has not accomplished anything else."

Qin Jia Gui nodded his head slightly as he seemed to ponder deeply before agreeing, Su Yu took it all in, he now knew what were the majority's thoughts with regards to Ning Yan's performance that resulted in antipathy. Some of them were even hoping that Zhou Hua Kang and Ning Yan would tangle and afterwards, perhaps.... they would actually be able to get a taste of something as well.

A sinister longing that was like a single spark, in the beginning it may only be a small flame but once it is aggravated, it may flare up

and become bigger and bigger, causing things to get out of hand.

Chapter 52: First Love

Ning Yan's face was cold as she glared at Zhou Hua Kang before ignoring him.

Zhou Hua Kang's face seemed to have been spat on but unexpectedly he laughed mischievously: "Since you are silent, I will treat it as tacit approval." He actually went to sit beside Ning Yan and reached out with his hand, wanting to put his hand over her shoulder.

Zhou Hua Kang's actions were gradually becoming more impudent.

Throughout this journey, he had been secretly paying close attention to Ning Yan. He noticed that no one had spoken with Ning Yan and it could be seen that she was a loner with no relations with anyone. This made Zhou Hua Kang feel relaxed, even if he did something shameless to her, no one would interfere.

Also, the yearning that he felt for Ning Yan had been there from the first time he saw her, it was only that they had constantly been placed in dangerous situations and he did not have the mood to go for it. Thinking that they were returning to the school tomorrow, he became more relaxed and thought of grabbing this chance to make Ning Yan into his girlfriend before returning to school..... Following through to the end, he would have sex with her once they returned to the school.

The forest was too dangerous and one could die at any moment.

He did not want to die a virgin and wanted to at least have a taste of male-female relations.

This sinister fire grew larger and larger and fueled Zhou Hua Kang's courage, this was especially so after several impudent remarks had not trigger any retaliation from Ning Yan making him think that she was afraid of him, further boosting his confidence.

Zhou Hua Kang's actions did not incite disgust in the others but rather influenced some of them, they felt as though a fire had been lit within them as they could not help but sweep their gazes at Ma Zi Ye and Zhou Bi Rong.

“Zhou Hua Kang, stop!” Finally, seeing that Zhou Hua Kang had wanted to drape his hands over Ning Yan, Su Yu could bear it no longer as he stood up.

Zhou Hua Kang was stunned as his hand stopped rigidly in mid air, he did not expect that Su Yu would speak up for Ning Yan and a strange and rigid smile appeared on his face as he said: “Su Yu, I'm chasing Ning Yan and she doesn't seem to be rejecting my advances. Are you caring too much? Haha.”

When faced with Su Yu, Zhou Hua Kang did not dare to be disrespectful like how he had been with Zhou Bi Rong. The meaning behind his words were clear, he was chasing Ning Yan and if she did not reject, you were simply being a busybody and there was actually a hint of dissatisfaction in Zhou Hua Kang's voice.

Su Yu looked over at Ning Yan and her face was clearly angry to the point of becoming pale but she did not reject, what was this woman thinking.

In class, Zhang Zhong Mou also liked Ning Yan however over the past two days of interaction he no longer had any feelings for Ning Yan. In his words, Ning Yan was but an empty shell with a beautiful countenance, besides her appearance she had no other redeeming qualities. At this moment even his feelings towards Ma Zi Ye were better than Ning Yan.

Although Zhang Zhong Mou no longer felt anything for Ning Yan, seeing Su Yu being confronted by Zhou Hua Kang, he jumped up with a 'Swoosh' as he said: "Zhou Hua Kang, we give you face but you don't want it. If he asks you to stop, you just stop. Why talk so much nonsense?"

Hearing Zhang Zhong Mou's shout, Zhou Hua Kang's face became red, he was not afraid of Zhang Zhong Mou as he retorted: "What for? Are you bullying me because I'm alone?"

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: "Ha, what you said is precisely right. We are bullying you. Now that you ask why, I'll tell it to you straight. My brother likes the girl so you better scram off to the side, don't be a toad that is lusting over the swan's flesh."

As he said this he patted Su Yu on his shoulders.

Su Yu's face became red in embarrassment but Ning Yan continued to coldly look at them, her face was still deathly pale and

it may be that in her eyes, Su Yu, Zhang ZHong Mou and Zhou Hua Kang were similarly just trash that did not differ by much.

Zhou Hua Kang's face was bright red from Zhang Zhong Mou's words and veins could be seen on his neck, it was obvious that he was incensed and had the impulse to rush over and fight with Zhang Zhong Mou. He managed to control his emotions as he knew that he could not afford to offend Su Yu, however, youths are reckless and he could not take this lying down.

He felt that he was merely chasing after Ning Yan and did not hinder their plans. They were now using their might to pressure others and this resentment roiled within his chest, suddenly he lifted his hand as he slapped Ning Yan with a 'Pa!' and cursed: "Repulsive whore!" before turning away and walking to the side.

This slap caused Ning Yan's expression to change as a trickle of blood could be seen on her lips.

Zhang Zhong Mou angrily shouted: "You f***er!" as he rushed towards Zhou Hua Kang.

Li Dong suddenly blocked him as a reluctant smile was plastered on his face as he spoke: "We're all comrades, let's not let this small matter affect our camaraderie. Don't you all agree."

Within this group, Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang had closer relations and seeing that things were getting out of hand, he had immediately stood out to lend him a helping hand.

Zhang Zhong Mou glared at him as he wanted to continue making a fuss but Su Yu pulled his hand and shook his head.

Zhang Zhong Mou believed in Su Yu and seeing that he did not wish to make a commotion, he grunted and spat on the ground as he cursed: “Damn, if you dare to provoke me again you’ll get what’s coming for you.”

Su Yu looked at Ning Yan who was by the side but only saw that her expression was apathetic as she wiped the blood on her lips, as though what just happened had nothing to do with her.

Sighing lightly, Su Yu felt his enthusiasm dry up, could it be that Ning Yan really was willing to be friends with Zhou Hua Kang? Was he merely overly concerned and being a busybody?

It was precisely because of this that he had stopped Zhang Zhong Mou from kicking a fuss and made the decision that in the future he would no longer be concerned with Ning Yan’s problems.

Su Yu’s liking for Ning Yan had began from the beginning of school and it could be said to be love at first sight.

When Ning Yan had first appeared before Su Yu, she was wearing a white top and skirt, like a pure angel and in that moment, Su Yu’s heart was captivated and he even forgot to breathe.

It was a pity that although both were in the same class, they did not have much chance for interaction and each time Su Yu saw her

he would have a feeling of inferiority, unable to summon the courage to speak with her.

Thereafter, the frightening events occurred and the school had appeared within the forest. Everyone had joined a group and finally there was a chance to interact however, Su Yu felt that the distance between the two had not gotten closer but rather further and further apart as they travelled. Ning Yan was like an icy mountain, rejecting anyone who tried getting close to her.

Su Yu's secret admiration and liking of Ning Yan far exceeded that of Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhang Zhong Mou only loved her beauty but Su Yu had a deep appreciation for everything about her.

It was only that Ning Yan's attitude made him feel waves of frustration and disappointment, it could be that he really did not have any fate with Ning Yan. No matter how much he changed, be it his mundaneness previously in school or his current powerful status within the group.

To Ning Yan, she could care less whether Su Yu existed, no matter what he did was of no concern to her.

An indescribable frustration welled up within him as Su Yu voluntarily sought a cigarette from Zhang Zhong Mou as he took a puff.

Was this his first love? It had not even began but it seemed like it had ended already.

Chapter 53: Apportioning Food

Su Yu's actions made it clear to Ma Zi Ye that he really did like Ning Yan.

Looking past the smoke that Su Yu was puffing out, seeing the blurry face of Su Yu through the smoke, Ma Zi Ye felt a slight feeling of disappointment.

This night was spent listening to the different frightening roars off in the distance. When the sky lit up, the group woke up and Su Yu tousled his hair, it was actually moist and seemed to have been wet by the moisture in the night.

This day was the fourth day since they came to this forest.

The group did not say much as they packed their backpacks and headed back to the school with Qin Jia Gui in the lead.

Along the path back Qin Jia Gui had left markings at conspicuous areas making it easy to trace their steps back without fear of getting lost.

Hurrying back, Ding Shan could no longer move and Su Yu bore her weight on his back while Zhang Zhong Mou assisted him with his backpack.

The group walked swiftly on the road back and half an hour later they met with a group of Gnomes.

There were fifteen to sixteen of them and Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Ma Zi Ye, Lin Shi and the others swiftly took care of them without any injuries.

Unknowingly, the group had already become much stronger.

At midday, the group took a half hour rest as they ate before continuing down the path. They met many groups of Gnomes and Lesser Goblins but these were handled without much danger and Lin Shi finally promoted, becoming a tier one dark iron warrior.

After becoming tier one, Lin Shi's strength was totally different from the others. When the right hand which contained the strange energy transformed, it actually became a piece of black iron however it was very different from Qin Jia Gui's black iron fist because the piece of black metal that his right hand formed strikingly resembled a pistol.

This metal that strikingly resembled a pistol had a piece that extended forth with a hole, by its sides were two smaller holes and when Lin Shi utilised the strange energy, the two small holes by the side began to wildly suck in air before firing out a faint white light beam from the 'muzzle of the gun', easily leaving a finger sized hole within a large tree.

Zhang Zhong Mou hooted as he touched the hole in the tree before putting his finger into the hole, he could still feel the heat within the hole.

“Good fellow, it seems to be even better than a pistol. Teacher Lin, you’ve struck it rich.” Zhang Zhong Mou had a look of envy as he lifted his thumb towards Lin Shi.

Qin Jia Gui walked over and asked: “Teacher Lin, what was the name of that ability called?” It could be said that the transformation of Lin Shi was totally different from all of them and had aroused the curiosity of the group.

Lin Shi frowned slightly before replying simply: “Air Bullet.” He found that his close combat prowess did not increase by much and although this ‘Air Bullet’ seemed strong, it was only suitable for long range attacks and once a monster came close, he would be in danger.

The strength within his right arm still remained within the level of tier zero.

Currently, Ning Yan, Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang and Ding Shan had not promoted to tier one.

Ning Yan was adamant in not killing monsters and simply had no chance to promote, as for Ding Shan, she was a young child and currently did not possess any strange energy within her. As for Zhou Bi Rong, she had a pistol and did not showcase much of her strength. Su Yu guessed that she was a dark iron warrior and should not be too weak in terms of strange energy. At the police station, she had killed several of the monsters and it was not possible for her not to have strange energy.

As for Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang, they were at the precipice of promoting to tier one level, they could promote at any moment because it was relatively easy promoting from tier one to tier two however, wanting to promote to tier two was not as easy. Besides Su Yu who was currently tier two, the others including Ma Zi Ye did not have the slightest indication that they would be entering tier two any time soon.

If one wanted to promote to tier two, killing only Gnomes and Lesser Goblins was simply insufficient. Back when Su Yu promoted to tier two, he had killed several Greater Goblins and a rare Golden Goblin before promoting.

On the road back, the group's strength was much stronger and their speed was much faster. They could easily take care of small packs of monsters and constantly move forward. When the sky was gradually turning dark, they had finally returned to the 'Jin Hua Supermarket' that was half collapsed.

Li Dong and the others were like arrows as they shot towards the supermarket. They needed to check if the food was still there and everyone was feeling anxious, if the food was gone what would they do?

Even Su Yu began to feel nervous.

It was fortunate that when the group rushed in, they saw ample amounts of goods, bread, sausages, instant noodles, biscuits and other consumables as well as large amounts of water and other carbonated drinks.

“Whew”

The group sighed in relief and Ding Shan slipped off Su Yu’s back as she shouted happily at the floor which was covered with food.

Although she was young, she realised that they had come to a frightening place and it was lucky that she was understanding and did not make a ruckus about wanting to see her parents. Among her peers, she could be considered understanding and mature.

It was precisely this that made Su Yu and Zhou Bi Rong dote on her very much.

The sky was already dark and the group was prepared to stop here for the night. This half collapsed building was still safer than being in the woods. Thereafter, the group began to discuss how to apportion the food on the ground and Li Dong voiced his point of view.

Besides Ding Shan, there were ten adults here and he felt that the food should be evenly spread into ten portions, with each adult getting one. Since Ding Shan had come together with Zhou Bi Rong, she would bear the burden of her food and drink. If anyone wanted to bring their friends from the school, the food and drink of those friends would be borne by the person and he felt that only in this way would it be fair.

It was clear that he did not want to bring anyone from the school and based on his method of dividing the food, he would be getting

much more food than if it were evenly spread among everyone who joined their group.

Qin Jia Gui shook his head: “This doesn’t make sense, everyone should split it evenly.”

Zhou Hua Kang laughed coldly: “Qin Jia Gui, are you forgetting that this supermarket was discovered by this current group of ours? The few of us dividing the food up equally here is very logical. As for those who wish to bring friends from the school, that is their own prerogative however the burden of food and drink will be borne by that person. You can’t possibly be asking us to settle the bill for them right? How could it be fair to those of us who don’t wish to bring anyone from the school?”

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: “If we are splitting the food based on contribution, an even distribution would also be unfair. Who doesn’t know that Su Yu’s contribution is the greatest? What right do you have to receive the same amount as him?” Because of the events that transpired the previous night, he viewed Zhou Hua Kang unfavourably and immediately provoked him.

Chapter 54: Returning To School

Zhou Hua Kang was prepared to rebutt Zhang Zhong Mou's words when Su Yu suddenly nodded: "I agree with your suggestion of evenly splitting the food."

Having said this, Qin Jia Gui, Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang were stunned, they did not expect that Su Yu would agree so easily like this.

Su Yu had also contemplated deeply on this matter and if the food was split evenly into ten portions, each person would likely have enough food to sustain a person for a month. In this way, even if he brought Jade along, the two of them would have food to last them for fifteen days and if they were prudent, they could even have it last for twenty days.

Within twenty days, too many things could happen. Since this was the case, why would he bother to bicker with them over how to divide the food?

Qin Jia Gui saw that Su Yu had agreed and thought for a while before also agreeing. He knew that the food would likely last him and Ni Ping ten odd days and within that time, the dangers were unpredictable and who knew when someone would suddenly die. Who could guarantee that everyone would live? If someone died, then his portion of food would be apportioned again and within the ten odd days who knew whether they would chance upon more food? Or even find the exit? Since this way the case, bickering over the division of food was simply redundant.

It was rare that Su Yu and Qin Jia Gui both agreed and the others did not have any opinions. Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang were suspicious of Su Yu so readily accepting their idea and were afraid that Su Yu actually harboured ill intentions against them. This method of distribution was clearly beneficial for them and detrimental for Su Yu and the others, why would he so readily agree? Who in this world would choose a path that would be detrimental for themselves? They were afraid that Su Yu harboured other intentions.

With this thought in mind, Li Dong felt nervous. Su Yu was a tier two dark iron warrior and if he really wanted to take care of them, it would not take much time and it was unlikely for the others to help them.

Compared to receiving slightly more food, their lives were more important and Li Dong hurriedly shook his head: “No good no good, I’ve thought it through. This may seem fair but really isn’t. Since we’re all comrades, in the future roads ahead we’ll still need to depend on each other. There really isn’t a point dividing it up so clearly. I still feel that the original idea was better, find out our total tally before dividing the food equally.

Su Yu stared blankly at him as he wondered why Li Dong kept changing his mind, what were his motives for doing so?

Unexpectedly, Zhou Hua Kang also agreed with Li Dong’s point of view as he said: “That’s true, we’re all comrades and there’s no need to divide it up so clearly.”

Qin Jia Gui laughed loudly, he could see through the thoughts of

Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang as he said indifferently: “Then that’s what we’ll do. This food is our final hope, if we continue to leave it here it’s really too dangerous. Now that I think about it, back then our decision to leave it here was really too reckless and if someone came and took all the food, the outcome would be disastrous.”

The group nodded as they all agreed that their decision back then was indeed too risky.

The supermarket had large plastic bags and the group busied themselves with taking all the edibles and consumables within. They had filled tens of large bags to the brim and looking at this pile of bags, the group felt satisfied as they sighed in relief.

Following their usual practice, they took turns to stand watch while the others rested.

Although this night was still filled with the roars of several wild beasts, they were not disturbed and everyone managed to have a good night’s rest.

When the sky brightened, the group slowly woke up as they glanced at each other, everyone was still alive and raring to go.

Su Yu leisurely stretched his arms, the strange energy that had formed into qi within his left arm was still circulating however it seemed to have met with a chokepoint at the region of his left shoulder which prevented it from flowing to other areas of the body. Su Yu could feel that if his qi could flow past that barrier, he would likely promote another tier.

Su Yu wondered what it would be like to promote to the next tier, he certainly did not feel that he was at the pinnacle simply being a tier two dark iron warrior.

This day was already the fifth day since they came to this forest and he was worried about Jade and had a strong urge to rush back to the school to check.

Tens of large bags that were brimming with food and each person had to carry several of them. It was fortunate that most of the people in the group had strange energy within their bodies and their strength was several times greater. Even Ning Yan was not an exception as she lifted these large bags. Although it was a hassle, it did not take up too much of their strength.

This supermarket was not that far off from the school and the group were like hard working porters as they each carried several large bags that seemed bigger than their bodies.

Strangely, the group did not encounter any more monsters along the way and this made the group feel startled and happy at the same time as they moved swiftly, finally seeing the school at midday.

The group felt that if they were to bring the big bags of food to the school, it would certainly create a mess and the group decided to leave the food with Li Dong, Zhou Bi Rong and the others who were not going to the school while the rest like Su Yu, Qin Jia Gui and a few others who wished to go back could do so and bring their

friends immediately out, without tarrying within the school.

As for the plight of the others within the school, they could not help and believed that under the circumstances of a lack of food, they would leave the school and venture into the forest to test their luck. They would go through the ordeals that they had experienced however this was no longer within their scope of concern. A person had to look out for himself otherwise heaven and earth would collude to destroy him. Su Yu and the others were not saints and were only ordinary humans, they had to plan for themselves and this was very normal.

One could plan as much as they wanted but when the situation came there would usually be changes, when the group finally reached the school and gazed at it from a distance, the ten odd people were stunned.

In the distance, many of the walls of the school had collapsed and there were a large quantity of corpses on the ground, a wind blew and the smell of blood filled the air.

“Shit!” Su Yu was shocked and he did not think as he flung the bags he carried to the ground as he rushed forward while his heart began to beat rapidly: “Jade, you must be okay!” The thing he was most concerned about had happened.

Qin Jia Gui was also shocked like him as his expression changed, throwing the bags by his side he shouted: “Everyone keep calm, you guys stay here and look after the food.” Thereafter he immediately ran after Su Yu.

Su Yu was concerned about Jade and Qin Jia Gui was naturally concerned for his girlfriend Yuan Ni Ping.

The others exchanged glances as suddenly, Lin Shi also dropped the bags by his side as he rushed forward.

The group were stunned, could Lin Shi have someone he pined for in the school?

Chapter 55: Invasion Of The Gnomes

Zhao Shi Chang said in a heavy voice: “Everyone let’s be careful, the food is of great importance. Let’s not break up the formation.”

He was primarily guarding against other people discovering the food rather than monsters, this area was after all quite near the school.

Zhang Zhong Mou looked towards Su Yu who was flying towards the school like an arrow, he was concerned for him but as he rationalised that Su Yu was several times more powerful than him, he was relatively certain that nothing would go wrong and decided to remain here and guard the food which was equally important.

Su Yu advanced rapidly and his heart was anxious as though it were boiling over, he was most afraid that the school would be attacked while he was not around and the current situation seemed to be what he feared the most.

Rushing into the school courtyard, he saw several corpses of students interspersed with the corpses of Gnomes.

Frowning, he wondered if the school had been assaulted by Gnomes. Su Yu could faintly hear sounds of fighting in some of the blocks as well as the rear of the campus as he rushed towards the direction of the female dormitory.

The place with the highest likelihood of Jade being there would be that place.

Rushing past the field, he saw many corpses as well as heavily injured students moaning. Seeing Su Yu, they could not help but cry out for help but Su Yu simply did not have the time to stop for them as he continued on, running past the teaching block and arriving before buildings that were currently being surrounded by Gnomes.

The female dormitory was also one of those buildings.

Screams of agony and hoarse cries could occasionally be heard, the scene was a complete mess.

“Damned monsters!” Su Yu’s left arm entered into the beast form as he howled and rushed into the pack of gnomes like a gale. The ‘Rending Claw’ activated as the black scales raised and a white mist was emitted, the qi within the left arm immediately circulated and continually disappeared into the black scales, further fueling the rotation of the ‘Rending Claw’.

“Chii Chii”

Su Yu’s ‘Rending Claw’ was simply too frightening and seemed like it could easily devastate anything, a Gnome simply had no chance to react before its head was already split apart, immediately dying.

Another Gnome managed to barely half turn its body before Su Yu rushed to its side, ‘Rending Claw’ shot forth and a hole immediately appeared on its chest, blood splattered before its body

bent and was cleanly severed in two.

In the blink of an eye, multiple Gnomes had already died to Su Yu as he ran single-mindedly towards the female dormitory as he loudly shouted: “Jade! Jade! Where are you!”

The ruckus in the area was too loud and even though Su Yu yelled at the top of his lungs, his voice was drowned by all the noise.

Su Yu was like a tiger amongst sheep as he sped towards the female dormitory, wherever he passed, the ground would be littered with the corpses of Gnomes, his frightening appearance soon gained the attention of the other Gnomes as well as the students who were frantically running in all directions.

“Su Yu? Is that Su Yu?” Someone suddenly exclaimed, Su Yu had become well known since the first day and many people recognised him.

“It’s him, they’re back already?” Someone shouted closely after, his voice filled with excitement but it quickly became a miserably cry as the person ran for his life.

Su Yu constantly looked everywhere but could not find Jade. He continued to yell at the top of his lungs but there was no response. Just as he was about to rush himself into the female dormitories, there was a flash of green as a two metre tall figure heavily landed before him.

This monster had the body of a Gnome while its lower body was that of a grey dog, it was clearly a Gnome Rider.

The previous night, they had seen a Gnome Rider which had been chased by a Savage Bull Demon, it was clear that the Gnome Rider was weaker than the Savage Bull Demon but compared to the Greater Goblin, it was still slightly stronger.

The Gnome Rider was precisely the leader of the Gnomes and had discovered the school, surrounding it and attacking it.

There was not a single strange energy user among the students in the school and normal humans faced with a monster as strong as the Gnome Rider were simply slaughtered, they could not take a single blow and had all haphazardly run away as they were chased and killed by the Gnome army.

It was without question that amongst the students, there were a few who actually managed to kill some Gnomes and become strange energy users.

Su Yu had suddenly rushed out and killed many of the Gnomes, attracting the attention of this Gnome Rider who had just entered the female dormitory and ripped a few girls apart. It had jumped from the second floor and landed in front of Su Yu.

“Out of my way!” Su Yu exclaimed as his legs kicked, the ‘Rending Claw’ on his left hand had an even more vigorous expulsion of white mist, creating an even greater momentum and this blow was extremely fast and deadly.

The Gnome Rider immediately sensed the fearsomeness of this blow and it had relatively high intellect as its four legs kicked the ground to leap seven to eight metres away, when comparing jumping power, even two of Su Yu could not match it.

Seeing it leap away, Su Yu immediately attempted to rush up the flight of stairs within the female dormitory. Jade lived on the fourth storey and Su Yu was ready to go up there to take a look. With the ruckus all around and all his shouting receiving no response, Su Yu had begun to panic.

The Gnome Rider had leapt away but upon seeing Su Yu rush towards the dormitory, it immediately kicked as it flew towards Su Yu, its two hands aimed at Su Yu's back.

Su Yu would then use the 'Rending Claw' to retaliate but it would leap away. Each time Su Yu attempted to go up it would then come and tangle with him.

This occurred twice and Su Yu did not have a way to ditch it as he yelled in anger: "Get out of my way!" His right hand pressed against the ground as he activated the magic spell 'Earth Spikes Assault' within the ring on his finger.

The Gnome Rider was feeling pleased with itself as it toyed with Su Yu and as it saw Su Yu fly into a rage, it felt excited.

It is a pity that extreme joy can turn to sorrow, Su Yu who was anxious to find Jade had no time to care about it and immediately

activated the 'Earth Spikes Assault'.

Although the 'Earth Spikes Assault' could only be used once daily, its power was immense and without question, even the Savage Bull Demon which had been hunting it had been killed in a single strike much less this Gnome Rider.

Without any warning, the area of several metres suddenly erupted with large amounts of sharp earth spikes, this Gnome Rider as well as the Gnomes in the vicinity had no idea what happened as they miserably screamed, the earth spikes pierced through each of them and the spikes were immediately coated with blood.

This single move killed at least a Gnome Rider and five Gnomes.

Su Yu did not bother to look as he turned his body and rushed up the female dormitory, this time, there was no Gnome Rider to block him and the Gnomes that were in the way were all intimidated and did not dare to block him.

Chapter 56: Weak Friendship

Su Yu had just rushed forward a few steps when several black lights shot into his left arm, causing the strange energy within it to grow even stronger and more robust, it was only that the ‘barrier’ at his left shoulder was still tightly shut, it was still too early for it to give way.

It seemed that as one promoted it became harder and harder to promote to the next tier.

Su Yu continued forward without stopping as he killed more Gnomes who were in his way, rushing towards the fourth storey.

“Jade! Jade! Where are you!” Su Yu shouted, Gnomes could be seen on this entire floor and the miserable cries of females could be heard occasionally. He did not have the time to stop but rather shouted while rushing towards Jade’s room.

“Jade!” Su Yu frantically shouted as he lifted his leg and kicked a Gnome who was in his way, causing it to fall from the fourth storey and fall to the ground with a ‘Pa!’, immediately dying.

Running wildly through the corridor, all the Gnomes that were in the way were either kicked down or clawed to death. This only took several seconds before Su Yu finally reached the room of the door where Jade lived. The scene within had a girl whose back had a big gash as she laid dead over a trunk that was used to keep clothing while another girl had her head smashed in like a watermelon as she laid on the bed, blood staining the white sheets

red.

Within the room, there was also a Gnome who was holding a metal spade and two other girls who were still alive.

The Gnome had just used its shield to smash into one of the girls as the girl screamed miserably, spitting blood out of her mouth as she fell away. The other girl screamed as she supported her.

The girl who supported by stretching her hands out was precisely Jade.

The other girl who spat blood was also someone whom Su Yu recognised and it was a roommate of Jade's called Lin Xiao Lu.

Finally seeing Jade, his heart relaxed as his heart which was constantly suspended in the air finally came back to its original position.

Jade had just supported Lin Xiao Lu who she was usually on very good terms with when the Gnome suddenly howled as it wielded its metal spade and heavily smashed downwards, its aim was Lin Xiao Lu who had just spat blood.

This smash, if it really hit, would certainly cause Lin Xiao Lu's head to be lopped off.

Su Yu snorted as he kicked the ground and shot forward.

Almost at the same time, Lin Xiao Lu suddenly forcefully pushed and caused Jade who was supporting her to suddenly move towards the metal spade which was smashing over as she retreated swiftly.

This all happened within the blink of an eye and Jade was completely stunned. She stood there dazedly, her supposed best friend that lived in the same room as her and shared everything together with her had suddenly pushed her towards the metal spade?

This..... how could this be? This can't be possible.....

Looking at the metal spade that was smashing down, Jade's eyes were wide and it seemed like she could visualize her own gory end.

“Damn!” Su Yu was shocked and felt a violent rage, he was very fast and if Lin Xiao Lu had not pushed Jade, he would definitely have easily taken care of the Gnome and saved the two of them. However, Lin Xiao Lu had pushed Jade in fear for her own life and created a situation where Jade was actually moving forward to collide with the metal spade, this created an extremely perilous situation and Su Yu roared as fissures appeared where he kicked, causing his body to shoot forward like an arrow, his hands grabbed and at the instant where the metal spade was about to hit Jade, he managed to hug the Gnome and send it tumbling away.

Falling to the ground, he felt cold sweat cover his body as he activated the ‘Rending Claw’ and pierced.

“Pa!”

The skull of the Gnome was immediately minced into meat pulp.

Jade had felt that she was dead for sure but Su Yu’s sudden appearance like a flying general that hugged the Gnome and sent it sprawling away had saved her in the nick of time.

Jade wondered if she was in a dream and stared blankly before calling out in surprise: “Su Yu?” Thinking back to the scene earlier, her body suddenly became weak as she started to cry.

Su Yu stood up and took a sudden big stride forward, managing to catch the falling Jade into his arms.

“Don’t cry!” Patting Jade’s back, he helped her to stand then raised his hand and grabbed Lin Xiao Lu who was hiding at the back and watching the events play out as her entire body trembled.

Su Yu’s strength was immense and this pull immediately lifted the petite body of Lin Xiao Lu into the air.

“Damn, you almost caused Jade to die?!” Su Yu’s face was ferocious, he was furious and could not stand anyone who wanted to harm Jade.

Lin Xiao Lu was frightened to the point that her face became a

pasty white, suddenly her legs shivered as a foul smell filled the air. This woman had actually been frightened to the point that she had pissed her pants.

Jade thought back to what happened earlier and her face became even paler as she said in a trembling voice: “Lin Xiao Lu, I thought we were best friends. You..... Why..... Why would you.....”

Looking at Lin Xiao Lu who was biting her lower lip, her entire body was hunched and she seemed frightened to the point where her soul had left her, her face was gradually becoming paler and her lips shivered, unable to say a single word. Su Yu was holding her and his left hand had black scales with claws on it, seemingly very ferocious.

Suddenly, Jade felt that she was very pitiful and it was not worth it to bother about her as she said sadly: “Su Yu, forget it. Let her go.” She knew that the friendship between her and Lin Xiao Lu had ended, within this world, one could lose their lives at any time and under these circumstances, who would care whether there was friendship or not?”

Su Yu tossed Lin Xiao Lu aside as she fell to the ground, she groaned as she slowly shrunk her legs back and stood up without looking at Su Yu or Jade. She could only look down as her hands tightly grasped her skirt, filled with fear and endless remorse.

“Let’s go, follow me.” Su Yu’s anger from earlier had dissipated, he thought of the selfish nature of humans and felt that although Lin Xiao Lu doing this was rather despicable, it was still within reason and he pulled Jade by the hand as he walked out.

Jade saw her two good friends who had died within the dormitory room and did not dare to look any more for fear of crying again as she was whisked out into the corridor by Su Yu.

“Why are you here?” Jade recalled the scene earlier and felt that it was simply unimaginable, Su Yu had actually appeared at the most critical timing and this simply felt like a scene straight out from a movie.

“Didn’t I tell you? Wait a few days for me and I’ll definitely come back. Since when have I gone back on a promise?” Jade was safe and Su Yu’s emotions finally relaxed a little. As he saw a Gnome who was chasing another female student, he stretched his hand and shot forth a single ‘Fang Bullet Burst’.

“Bang!”

Fresh blood splattered from the head of that Gnome as its body tumbled away.

Thereafter, Su Yu pulled Jade as he hastily ran down the stairs.

“Where are we going now?” Jade saw that there were Gnomes everywhere down below carrying metal spades and wooden shields and her entire body began to tremble uncontrollably.

“Don’t be afraid, I’m here aren’t I? I’ll bring you out of this place. Don’t ask anymore, just follow me and leave this place first.” Su Yu

did not wish to waste time explaining as his right hand tugged at Jade while speedily heading down the stairs. Two Gnomes appeared before him and his left arm flew out, the 'Rending Claw' instantly killing these two Gnomes.

Chapter 57: Lin Shi Losing An Arm

Gnomes were everywhere and the school was a mess. There were several people who hid and others who ran out of the school, running towards the forest. There were also those who stayed behind and bravely fought, it was only that these Gnomes were slightly stronger than Lesser Goblins and to a normal human, they were even harder to handle. The number of deaths and injured were quickly escalating.

Su Yu wanted to help them deal with the Gnomes but he was even more concerned about Jade, he did not want to meddle in the affairs of others. He was not afraid but he was afraid that he would implicate Jade, he decided that first sending Jade out of the school to Zhao Shi Chang and the group before returning to kill these Gnomes was the better plan.

Although he was not a saint and would not sacrifice himself for others, if it was within his abilities he would certainly do it.

Rushing down the stairs, another group of Gnomes had come forward and Su Yu's right hand drew in Jade, protecting her behind his body while his left hand lifted, fangs appeared on it as he shook it, "swish swish swish swish", 'Fang Bullet Burst' sent several fangs flying out as he also activated the 'Rending Claw'. It was almost one Gnome per slash as the Gnomes could not even handle a single blow, all falling before him.

Jade's mouth was open and her face had shock written on it. Su Yu had become so strong and that left arm that was covered in black scales seemed like the claw of a demonic emperor from hell,

even the Gnomes which were so strong were nothing in the face of it.

With Su Yu protecting her, Jade suddenly felt at ease.

“Ha!” Suddenly there was a familiar shout from another side followed by a “Bang!”. A Gnome was sent tumbling away as a bloody finger-sized hole could be seen in the centre of its chest.

Su Yu looked over and saw Lin Shi, he was currently surrounded by a group of Gnomes and although he had utilized his ‘Air Bullet’ and killed three Gnomes, each time he shot an ‘Air Bullet’ he needed a few seconds before he could fire the next one and each time he shot an ‘Air Bullet’ he was forced to run away and wait several seconds before firing again.

At this moment, he was thoroughly surrounded by Gnomes without any road for escape. The situation was dire and when Su Yu looked over, the metal spade of a Gnome had just heavily slammed onto Lin Shi’s left arm.

“Aaahhh!” Lin Shi let out a terrifying shout, blood splashed from his left arm and with a “Plonk”, the metal spade within the Gnomes hand slammed and its sharpness and strength was frightening. Lin Shi’s left arm was almost instantly severed, the severed arm was dripping with fresh blood as it fell to the ground.

Lin Shi howled in his pain as he lifted his right hand, “Bang!”, the Gnome that had severed his hand had its face smashed in as it spat out blood and fell to the ground.

“Damn! Why is he here!” Su Yu immediately lifted his hand while pulling Jade along towards Lin Shi, activating the ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ at the same time.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Several continuous explosive sounds could be heard as the group of Gnomes surrounding Lin Shi became restless, several of the Gnomes amongst them had been hit by the ‘Fang Bullet Burst’.

Su Yu’s ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ was similar to Lin Shi’s ‘Air Bullet’ and needed time between activations. However, his ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ could fire several fangs at once, unlike Lin Shi’s ‘Air Bullet’ which could only fire a single burst of air each time. It was only in terms of penetrating power that Lin Shi’s ‘Air Bullet’ was far superior to the ‘Fang Bullet Burst’.

These two moves could be said to each have their own strengths.

When Lin Shi’s left arm had been severed at the roots and surrounded by the Gnomes, he knew that he was bound for death and only struggled meekly during his final moments when an explosive noise could be heard and Su Yu was seen rushing over.

Lin Shi’s face that was pale with pain had a faint smile on it, Su Yu had come and he had a chance now.

Over these past few days, their group had gained a blind

confidence in Su Yu as though once he appeared, any problem would definitely be solved.

Su Yu first shot out the ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ to cause a disturbance amongst the Gnomes, causing them to look over before releasing Jade and shooting forward like an arrow, ‘Rending Claw’ in tow.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

Su Yu flashed by three Gnomes as the ‘Rending Claw’ went through them, boring through their waists and sending flesh and blood splattering everywhere.

By the time these Gnomes recovered their senses, they felt an intense pain at their waists as fresh blood splattered, looking down to check their injury, they turned their hip and with a crisp ‘Crack!’, the lumbar vertebrae which was supporting the body snapped, causing half their body to fold over.

Jade who was closely following behind felt dazed, this move that Su Yu used to kill the Gnomes was simply like magic.

Su Yu then whirled his body as his black claws flew in a half arc, wherever the ‘Rending Claw’ went, be it the body of the Gnomes, metal spades or shields in their hands, once it came into contact with the ‘Rending Claw’ it would immediately burst open.

This was the might of a tier two dark iron warrior.

“Why are you still standing dazed over there, hurry and pick up your severed.....” Su Yu had not managed to say the word ‘arm’ when a sudden pain could be felt from his back as a claw managed to hit him.

Things happened so suddenly but Su Yu’s reaction time was godly, he roared as he kicked, his body flew out like an arrow flying several metres away dodging the claw which had just pierced some of his flesh, at the same time, he had used the ‘Rending Claw’ and swung it backwards, preventing the enemy from pouncing.

Falling to the ground, Su Yu did not stop as he turned and stood up. There was a Gnome Rider behind him and its mouth was currently tearing at a bloody severed arm, its face filled with ferocity yet had a somewhat pleased expression as well.

It was precisely this Gnome Rider which had suddenly appeared and taken advantage of Su Yu’s lapse of concentration while talking to Lin Shi and attacked. It had not expected Su Yu’s godly reflexes causing it to only claw a bit of flesh.

The severed arm that the Gnome Rider was eating was precisely Lin Shi’s arm.

Originally even though Lin Shi’s arm had been severed, with Su Yu’s ability he would have been able to attach it back for him. He had just instructed Lin Shi to pick up his severed arm when this Gnome Rider suddenly appeared and thoroughly crushed it in its mouth, even if Su Yu had a heaven-defying ability he would not be able to return Lin Shi his arm.

Lin Shi grit his teeth as he saw half of his severed arm which was still within the Gnome Rider's mouth, he suddenly snorted as he turned and actually ran in another direction.

Su Yu was stunned, he never expected that Lin Shi would actually flee under these circumstances. He did not have much time to think as the Gnome Rider before him was already pouncing.

Jade was standing by the side and several Gnomes were attacking her. Noticing this, Su Yu howled as he activated the 'Rending Claw', ignoring the Gnome Rider as he leapt towards Jade.

He could see that this Gnome Rider was extremely cunning and although its strength was greater than a Greater Goblin, it was still not a threat for him. Its jumping strength was far too excessive and if it wanted to run, he had no way to stop it.

The Gnomes could not bear a single blow and three of the Gnomes which were rushing for Jade were immediately taken care of. The Gnome Rider did not expect that Su Yu would ignore it as it stared blankly. It seemed to have been infuriated as it let out a low growl and hunched its body before rushing towards Su Yu.

Su Yu turned around to stand before Jade, letting his two arms hang loose as he put on a front as though he were not planning to block.

Under the circumstances of not being able to use the 'Earth

Spikes Assault', wanting to kill a cunning Gnome Rider was simply too difficult and Su Yu planned to use its cunning against it.

Chapter 58: Ma Zi Ye's Classmates

Indeed, when Su Yu suddenly seemed to let his guard down and not want to block, the Gnome Rider was very astute and found that something seemed off as it actually stopped before Su Yu, kicking the ground as it attacked Su Yu from another side.

Su Yu continued to keep his guard lowered and the Gnome Rider attempted to attack twice but noticed that Su Yu did not react in the slightest. In its anger, it finally used all its strength in its third attempt as it viciously clawed towards Su Yu's skull.

This time, it made up its mind and if Su Yu did not block, it would crush his skull in. If Su Yu had any traps or other methods, it believed that it could use its powerful legs and easily leap away, it was not afraid of Su Yu and only felt concerned about the left arm that was covered in black scales.

Seeing this claw that was about to crush his head, Su Yu finally lifted his left arm that was covered in black scales to block.

Su Yu's reaction was well within the Gnome Rider's expectations as it retracted its arm then kicked with its four legs, using its powerful jumping ability to escape.

It could clearly feel that Su Yu was stronger than it but it was not fearful of Su Yu, rather, it wanted to tease Su Yu because it had great confidence in its jumping ability and its reaction speed.

It really did have the ability to be this arrogant, just like when Su

Yu had wanted to rush up the female dormitory but was impeded by a Gnome Rider, if he did not utilise the ‘Earth Spikes Assault’ it would have been really difficult to manage.

Under the current circumstances, Su Yu actually smiled and lifted his left hand which already had a few fangs protruding out. “Chi! Chi! Chi!”, as the Gnome Rider wanted to jump away the ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ had already shot forth.

With the robustness of the Gnome Rider, the ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ would not necessarily kill it and it was thus aimed at its feet.

Several sounds like the frying of beans rang out as the Gnome Rider violently howled, its legs became weak and was unable to jump aside as Su Yu pounced like a demon god.

“Chi!”

The black scales on Su Yu’s left hand raised as white mist was expelled, the ‘Rending Claw’ pulled his body as he flew forward like an artillery shell.

“Sss!”

A piercing sound could be heard like the hide of a cow being torn apart or a bowstring breaking apart, this blow from Su Yu landed squarely in the centre of the Gnome Rider’s chest, pulling its upper body as it pierced through, flesh and blood splattered as Su Yu rushed by it, stopping to look as he saw the lifeless expression on

its face as its body folded in two and fell to the ground.

Another Gnome Rider had died to his hands.

The strange energy that was in the form of qi within his body began to surge and swell violently, it seemed to have a goal for the first time as it rushed towards that barrier that was located at his left shoulder, however, it seemed to have overestimated its force as the barrier did not move in the slightest, the qi was forced to recede without any effect.

It was clear that a stronger amount of strange energy was required in order to successfully break through the chokepoint.

After killing this Gnome Rider, Su Yu did not dare to tarry as he pulled Jade and ran towards the exit of the school. The powerful aura that was emitted from his body made the group of Gnomes not dare to go near him.

Su Yu rushed out of the school as he headed for Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and the others. In the distance, he could see that there seemed to be an unfamiliar girl within the group but Su Yu did not mind.

Zhang Zhong Mou saw Su Yu pulling Jade from afar and had rushed forward to receive them.

“Haha! Jade!” Zhang Zhong Mou saw that Jade was fine and let out a sigh of relief as he laughed.

Su Yu let go of Jade as he said to Zhang Zhong Mou: “Look after her.” Before turning and heading back to the school.

Ma Zi Ye saw this from far away and her heart swayed as she shouted: “I’ll go together with you.” as she chased after Su Yu.

Zhao Shi Chang was helpless as he said: “Everyone let’s be more cautious, no one else is allowed to just leave so suddenly.” Their food was all here and it could be said to be their lifeline, if everyone ran away and monsters came to destroy it, that would be troublesome.

“Zhang Zhong Mou..... You guys.....” Jade was shocked.

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed as he said: “Let me slowly fill you in on the details.”

Su Yu ran directly towards the school, earlier when Lin Shi had his arm severed he actually left them and ran away. Based on Su Yu’s understanding of Lin Shi, he was not the kind of person to run away when faced with danger. Under those circumstances, for him to run it was actually even more dangerous and he should have known that Su Yu could deal with the Gnome Rider.

Since he was not running due to the danger, then Lin Shi running off without caring about his severed arm meant that he was like him, frantically looking for someone and this person was clearly very important to him.

Lin Shi had already lost his left arm, coupled with the fact that his ability was more suited for long range attacks, running around with an area filled with Gnomes, if he was surrounded it would be extremely dangerous.

Ma Zi Ye followed closely behind him as she shouted: “Hey! Wait for me!”

Su Yu continued to run based on his memory of the route, he could still recall the direction in which Lin Shi had taken off in which seemed to be the educational administration office. It was fortunate that the school was not that big and looking at the ground that was littered with Gnome corpses made it easier for him to recognise the route back, people with the ability to kill Gnomes within the school were rather scarce.

Su Yu swiftly ran and occasionally used his ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ saving some of the students who were being attacked by Gnomes. Ma Zi Ye who followed behind did not hesitate when she saw a Gnome and would send out flying kicks.

One of the Gnomes saw that the situation was grim and lifted a wooden shield to block, Ma Zi Ye’s kick landed on the wooden shield and smashed it together with the skull beneath, sending the corpse flying away. The wooden shield had burst apart and the skull beneath it had similarly exploded, the strength behind this kick was clearly exceptional.

Su Yu saw this and looked back in astonishment, he noticed that

the black streaks on her feet had even extended to her calf already.

Unknowingly, Ma Zi Ye's strength had also risen to an even stronger level.

'Web of Steel!' Ma Zi Ye stomped the ground as she shouted delicately, the black rope-like snakes flew out and immediately snared two Gnomes who were attacking from the left and right. She did not stop as she rushed forward, her right leg dragging the 'Web of Steel' as it hacked down and smashed into the shoulder of a Gnome, causing it to fly heavily into the ground face first, eating a mouthful of dirt.

The other Gnome was dragged and lifted by her 'Web of Steel' and sent flying away.

Ma Zi Ye had really become strong, she was proficient at using her ability and could flexibly use her 'Web of Steel' causing it to become unimaginably powerful.

"Ma Zi Ye!" Suddenly a male voice could be heard shouting her name.

Ma Zi Ye was stunned as she saw a group of familiar male students huddled together as they defended against the attacks of a Gnome. Their situation was dire and seeing Ma Zi Ye's incredible prowess, they began to yell for help.

These few male students were classmates of Ma Zi Ye.

Chapter 59: Leaders Of The School

Noticing the danger they were in, Ma Zi Ye shot forward like an arrow as her leg whipped forth, “Pa!” an explosive sound rang out as the Gnome was sent sprawling to the ground. Taking another big stride forward, she stepped on the face of the Gnome.

◦

She exerted all her force and a crisp ‘Crack!’ could be heard as the eyeballs of the Gnome were squeezed out, it could only be imagined how fearsome the force behind this leg was.

These few male students were in a stupor, looking at Ma Zi Ye’s skill as she killed a Gnome which had almost killed them in the blink of an eye, filled with astonishment and respect. A male student who was tall and handsome had just shouted “Zi Ye!” and had not finished talking when Ma Zi Ye glanced at him with a smile before turning and chasing after Su Yu, leaving the male student with a slightly dismayed look on his face.

In the past, Ma Zi Ye had secretly been in love with him and back then she had been too shy to confess and had secretly written a letter and placed it in that male students locker. Back then, this male student had been chasing another girl with a decent family background and in order to show his love for the girl, he had humiliated Ma Zi Ye in front of her.

Back then, Ma Zi Ye clearly remembered that this guy had walked before her and said with a stern face: “Ma Zi Ye, don’t write anymore letters to me. I don’t like you, the person I like is her.....” Thereafter, he took out the letter and tore it to shreds in front of all the classmates.

This move was extremely vicious and even Ma Zi Ye who was very strong-willed could not bear it. This male student had made use of that beautiful performance to move that girl who was filled with vanity and finally managed to chase her.

Thereafter, Ma Zi Ye had been filled with hatred for him.

This time when Ma Zi Ye saw him, she did not feel love or hate, but rather felt that he was just dull like a normal student, showing a faint smile before rushing after Su Yu.

This male student looked at Ma Zi Ye's back as she ran away, his heart surged with a feeling of regret. Had he known that such an event would occur and Ma Zi Ye would actually become so powerful, he would have accepted Ma Zi Ye. If that had happened, he would have someone to be his bodyguard and would not need to be afraid. He was filled with these thoughts as monsters rushed at the group forcing them to flee.

The male student had an expression of fear and dread as he followed the other male students, fleeing in a different direction. As for his girlfriend whom he had chased, he did not know if she was alive and he also could not be bothered.

Su Yu ran swiftly and quickly heard angry howls from the forward area, he could tell that the noises were made by Qin Jia Gui.

Not far away, by the door of the building at the educational

administrative region were seven to eight Gnomes, at this moment Qin Jia Gui was wielding his right fist as the explosive might of the metal fist exploded forth, the 'Demolishing Iron Fist' could almost kill a Gnome with every strike.

Behind Qin Jia Gui, Lin Shi's face was pale as he lifted his right hand and continually fired 'Air Bullets' at the Gnomes. The piercing power of the 'Air Bullet' was extremely frightening, exceeding even that of real bullets and each shot that landed would surely leave a gaping hole on the body of the Gnome.

Behind the two people were a large group of males and females, there were some students but mostly teachers and leaders of the school.

Su Yu slowed down as he stared blankly, could it be that Lin Shi had risked his life just to save these leaders of the school?

Towards these leaders, Su Yu did not have that much attachment.

Qin Jia Gui once again sent his 'Demolishing Iron Fist' streaking through the air, sending a Gnome flying through the air. The more he fought the stronger he became as the Gnomes died one after another allowing the strange energy within his right hand to grow stronger and stronger. The metallic skin continued to extend higher and quickly spread to his arms, causing half of his arm to become covered in metal, increasing the destructive power of the 'Demolishing Iron Fist'.

Ma Zi Ye rushed forward and said angrily: “Su Yu, what are you looking for? Wait for me.” Before finally noticing Qin Jia Gui, Lin Shi and the group of people behind them.

Due to Qin Jia Gui’s heroic and brave performance, many Gnomes were attracted to the area and there was even a two metre tall creature which let out a frightening howl, kicking with four feet as it arrived in front of the ten odd Gnomes, landing in front of Qin Jia Gui.

“Gnome Rider!”

Su Yu exclaimed as he called out to Ma Zi Ye: “Go!” and rushed forward together with her.

The Gnome Rider was a tier two beast soldier and although it could not compare to the tier two beast soldiers like the Golden Goblin or the Savage Bull Demon, it was not something a tier one dark iron warrior like Qin Jia Gui could handle.

Indeed, when Qin Jia Gui saw the Gnome Rider, although he was not afraid, his ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ smashed into the air and missed while the claw of the Gnome Rider swiped down, tearing a piece of flesh from his left shoulder. This was fortunate because he had dodged quickly, otherwise, his skull would have already been crushed in half.

Lin Shi noticed that the situation was perilous and shouted as the ‘Air Bullet’ shot forth explosively toward the Gnome Rider.

The Gnome Rider did not move and only swayed its hip as it dodged, stretching its hands forth as it exposed the fangs in its mouth, pouncing towards Qin Jia Gui and Lin Shi.

The group behind noticed how ferocious the Gnome Rider was and let out exclamations of fear. At the same time, Su Yu roared as the ‘Rending Claw’ activated, ‘Swish’ as his body flew forward faster due to the expulsion of white mist allowing his black scale covered arm to lead his body and explode forward.

Qin Jia Gui saw Su Yu shooting forward like a flying general and sighed gloomily within, he knew his limelight was about to be taken by Su Yu but under the current circumstances, if Su Yu did not appear he would have been in serious danger. This Gnome Rider was too difficult for him to handle.

The Gnome Rider had a vicious smile as it pounced towards Qin Jia Gui and Lin Shi when suddenly it felt a cold wind from behind. Its heart trembled and it reacted swiftly, grabbing a Gnome by its side as it smashed it behind him before leaping seven to eight metres away.

The Gnome Rider was extremely cunning and paranoid, extremely cautious.

This blow of the ‘Rending Claw’ from Su Yu landed heavily on the chest of the Gnome that was thrown towards him.

“Pa!”

Pieces of breastbone and large amounts of flesh and blood minced together as they splattered in all directions, like a whirlpool of flesh as Su Yu continued onwards without slowing down, pouncing towards the Gnome Rider which had just leapt seven to eight metres away.

Looking at Su Yu's approaching fist and the minced body of the Gnome, the Gnome Rider had a gasp of cold air as its mouth let out a shrill howl, not daring to block as it attempted to leap away again, however, something seemed to be tangling its legs making it unable to do so.

Looking down, it could see that its legs were currently bound by streaks of black iron rope that formed into a black metal web, thoroughly trapping its four limbs.

This 'Web of Metal' was the final image in its mind as Su Yu reached, the Gnome Rider attempted to block with its two arms but the 'Rending Claw' was simply too fearsome and pierced through both arms together with the skull and immediately killed it.

Chapter 60: Everyone's Ire

Su Yu suddenly appeared like a demonic god and in the blink of an eye killed the Gnome Rider. The remaining Gnomes let out shrieks of fear as they dispersed and ran away.

The Gnome Rider was their leader and with it suddenly dead, the Gnomes were all frightened as they ran away.

“Su Yu!” Someone from within shouted and the voice was filled with astonishment and elation.

Su Yu retracted the black scales from his left arm and turned to look. From the group of students and teachers behind Qin Jia Gui and Lin Shi, a person came running out and this was his class president Lei Rui.

He had never thought that Lei Rui would be here as he laughed in surprise: “Class president, good to see you again.” Thereafter, he saw another familiar face standing amongst the teachers, it was the coach of their class Meng Bo.

“Good, good, I didn’t think that all of you would have made it back at the most critical moment. It seems the heavens haven’t completely forsaken us yet.” From the back of the group a person walked out as he talked, this was the school’s highest authority, the school chairman.

“The school is currently filled with these monsters and we have to evacuate this area. It’s fortunate that they are powerful and

sufficient to ensure our safety.” Another leader of the school seemed very satisfied with the performance of Su Yu and the others as an expression of appreciation appeared on his face.

Su Yu frowned as he looked over at Qin Jia Gui, there was an expression of helplessness on his face as he signalled with his eyes. They had not expected such a situation, actually being regarded as bodyguards by these leaders.

“Let’s gather everyone at a safe place, we’ll have to depend on all of you to take care of the remaining monsters.” The chairman patted Lin Shi on his shoulder with a serious expression on his face.

“Everyone follow me first.” Lin Shi’s face was as pale as paper and only had a single arm left. He grit his teeth to bear with the pain as he headed outside, the big group of students and teachers immediately followed behind him.

Qin Jia Gui felt anxious, this group of people was at least forty to fifty strong and if Lin Shi really brought them, this would far exceed their expectations. What was Lin Shi up to? Could it be that under the current circumstances he still wanted to suck up to the leaders of the school? Still thought of promoting and becoming more wealthy?

Su Yu was also dazed and did not know what to do. They certainly could not just shout at them and say: “You guys wait for death in the school, don’t follow us.”

Ma Zi Ye could see what Su Yu and Qin Jia Gui were thinking and she was straightforward as she yelled: “Lin Shi, stop right there. What are you doing? What about our previous arrangement?”

Lin Shi’s body shuddered as he looked back at the group behind him before gritting his teeth and continuing to run. The direction he was headed in was precisely the school gate and it was clear he wanted to bring this group of people to where Zhao Shi Chang and the others were gathered.

Had he gone insane?

At the back, Qin Jia Gui, Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye exchanged glances as they were stunned for awhile before Su Yu recovered and said: “Qin Jia Gui, did you manage to find your girlfriend?”

Qin Jia Gui nodded and replied: “My luck was quite good, upon dashing into the school I immediately discovered her. I brought her over to Zhao Shi Chang and the group and returned wanting to kill Gnomes to save these people, who knew that this would happen.”

Only now did Su Yu realise that when he sent Jade back and saw the unfamiliar girl standing next to Zhao Shi Chang, that was actually Yuan Ni Ping from Computer System Class number one, it was only that both sides were not close and had only walked by each other a few times in the past. From a distance, it was no wonder he felt she was unfamiliar.

“I wonder what this teacher Lin Shi is thinking, we also want to

save everyone but..... we don't have the ability. He brings forty to fifty people at one go, we can't handle that....." Ma Zi Ye muttered, the three of them were helpless as they followed behind.

What was more frightening was that the students that were haphazardly running or fighting had suddenly seen such a large group of people and immediately surged forward to join, eventually causing Lin Shi's group to grow larger and larger till it exceeded one hundred people.

The school leaders were also loudly shouting, asking for the others to gather and this caused an even greater influx of people.

The three people exchanged glances, if there was enough food they did not mind how many people followed, after all the more people that came the safer it got, however, the problem was that they had found food with so much difficulties but simply could not feed so many mouths.

"This Lin Shi....." Qin Jia Gui clenched his fists, clearly becoming enraged.

"Let's go, I'm afraid a conflict will break out soon." Su Yu began to speed up, he knew that if the few of them were unsatisfied, then Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang would likely have a bigger reaction.

Indeed, when they rushed out of the school, they heard an angry shout from a distance.

Zhao Shi Chang, Zhang Zhong Mou and the others had several tens of large bags of food on the floor as they guarded the area, waiting for Su Yu, Qin Jia Gui and the others to return before they set out. Suddenly seeing such a big group of people surge towards them, the group was shocked.

Li Dong was the first to jump as he exclaimed: “Lin Shi? What in the world is he doing? Why are there so many people following behind him?”

“Let’s go and take a look.” Zhao Shi Chang’s expression had changed and immediately ran forward together with Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang, Zhang Zhong Mou and the others to block their advancement.

“Teacher Lin, what are all of you doing?” Li Dong was the first to shout, the expression on his face was very ugly.

Lin Shi slowed his footsteps, he could roughly guess the thoughts of the group but had a helpless look on his face. Behind him were over two hundred people and they began to discuss, not understanding what the people in front of them were speaking about as they skirted seemed to skirt around the topic.

The school chairman had a smile on his face as he said: “I can’t believe that you people are still alive, that’s great.”

“Hey, you guys look at those big bags over there, is that food?” Some suddenly noticed that there were tens of big bags stacked together and another person shouted excitedly: “We’ve already

starved for one day, our stomachs are really hungry.” Immediately, over ten people began to run in that direction to see if those big bags contained food.

Li Dong and the others were nervous as they angrily shouted: “Stop right there! Nobody move!” As they blocked their advancement, their expressions changing.

“Hey, Li Dong, what are you doing?” Among the group were some of Li Dong’s classmates and one of them had yelled out in dissatisfaction, seeing Li Dong’s appearance, everyone could guess that those big bags likely contained food and it seemed that he was not willing to take it out to share.

“What are the intentions of your group, there’s food but you aren’t willing to take it out to share? We’re all starving already, you people saw that those monsters were killing people within the school but actually hid here to watch the show?”

There were some angry yells from the group as some people began to push forward against Li Dong, they were wordlessly heading towards the tens of big bags.

It was as they mentioned, they had already starved for a day and earlier when they had been chased by the monsters they had forgotten about it. Now that they were safe, they immediately felt their stomachs rumble and could not be bothered as they hoped those big bags contained food to allow them to sate some hunger before talking.

Chapter 61: Killing Someone Is So Easy

Lin Shi stood there in a daze, he did not expect things to become like this and Qin Jia Gui walked forward with an ugly expression as he coldly said: “Teacher Lin, you’re so magnanimous. The few of us aren’t so big-hearted, I think..... you should go with them by yourself, we can’t accompany you any further, Su Yu, let’s go.”

Su Yu nodded, over two hundred people were gathered here and in the distance even more people were still running in this direction. Even if they prepared more food, it would be gone in a single meal. Could it be that they were going to starve with everyone for their next meal? Or were they going to have to eat the meat from those ugly and weird monsters?

Su Yu was not that great a person.

The large group of people surged forward and Li Dong was clearly unable to block them when Zhao Shi Chang suddenly shouted: “Everyone let’s act, don’t be courteous!” His right hand swept and pushed the two people before him away.

Zhou Bi Rong who was guarding the food also stood up as she raised the pistol in her hand.

There was an expression of stupefaction on the school chairman’s face and as he saw that a conflict was about to break out he loudly shouted: “Everyone stop, stop right now!” Before looking at Lin Shi: “Little Lin, what’s going on here?”

Lin Shi's face was pale as Zhao Shi Chang laughed and said: "I think it's better if I explain the situation."

At this moment, Zhang Zhong Mou, Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang, Zhou Bi Rong and the others were standing before the food with serious expressions on their faces.

What they faced were two hundred over angry students and teachers, the large group also had confusion written on their faces as they could not understand what Zhang Zhong Mou and the others were doing.

"The reason is simple, if everyone wishes to live or eat, they should go and find it on their own. We have no reason to put our lives on the line to bring food back for all of you. That is the rationale behind our actions. Whoever dares to steal our food, I, Zhao Shi Chang would not mind killing him." A bone blade extended from his right hand and with a 'Chiii', a tree that was thicker than a bowl was chopped down.

The large tree fell heavily to the ground with a 'Bang!', it shocked the two hundred odd people and they stood there dazed. Even the school chairman had his mouth wide open as he stared at them.

"Don't look at us like that, honestly speaking we've already been in the forest for two days and of the thirty one of us, only the few of us made it here. We have not found an exit nor have we found any rescue team. This place is no longer the world that we are familiar with. If you want to live, you have to depend on yourselves. Can't find any food? There are so many Gnome corpses over there. I think if you're really starving, everyone can eat their

meat and drink their blood. Su Yu, Qin Jia Gui, you've already found the people you were looking for. Let's go." Zhao Shi Chang finally looked towards Su Yu and Qin Jia Gui.

Qin Jia Gui looked towards Lin Shi and said: "Teacher Lin, you went against our previous arrangement and broke the rules. Our group does not require a fellow like you who does not know how to keep his cool."

He was thoroughly infuriated and did not bother with Lin Shi anymore as he walked over to Zhao Shi Chang's side. As for Zhou Bi Rong and the others, they had already began to pack up the big bags as they prepared to leave.

Over two hundred students and teachers were dazed for a moment before exploding as some people angrily shouted out: "What gives you the right to have food while we starve? Since we're all starving, everyone should share the food. Don't forget, the food that you brought with you for your two days were specially prepared for you by all of us, you bunch of ungrateful people!"

Their explosive anger was like a tide as their emotions were lit, like the explosion from a gunpowder barrel, all the angry teachers and students surged like a tide toward the food.

"Damn!" Li Dong was infuriated as he finally acted.

"Bang!"

A fist smashed into the face of a student, the strange energy within his hand made his strength frightening and caused the student's head to immediately burst open.

“Aaahhh! He's killed someone!”

The group's emotions were riled even further as they surged towards Li Dong, Zhao Shi Chang, Zhou Hua Kang and the others, more courageous than when they were faced with the Gnomes or Lesser Goblins.

A messy fight erupted and screams could be heard everywhere, even Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye could not avoid being pulled into the conflict.

The other party had too many people and Zhao Shi Chang and the group could not block all of them. In no time, several people had rushed to where the large bags were and someone even started to tear a bag. A tearing sound could be heard as large amounts of bread, water, biscuits and other food fell to the ground.

Seeing the food, the crowd seemed even more crazed as they rushed forward.

Zhao Shi Chang and the others were anxious and finally howled as they began to kill.

Earlier they had only wanted to block the crowd and had not dealt killing blows, however, the situation was getting out of hand

and his right hand was covered in a layer of hard crust with a bone blade extending forth, his arm swept and fresh blood splattered, he could not be bothered anymore that the other party were students and teachers from his school.

Two people were immediately rent in two and Qin Jia Gui also howled as the ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ was unleashed.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Humans were much easier to kill than Gnomes and several of those who had reached the food pile were mercilessly sent flying.

Among these group of students and teachers, there were some who had killed monsters and promoted to a dark iron warrior, however, they had only just promoted and had no way to contend with Qin Jia Gui and the others. As they came into contact, they could not withstand even a single blow as they were all swept away.

Su Yu was within the group and looked towards the speechless Lin Shi as he sighed: “Teacher Lin, is this the outcome you were hoping for?”

Lin Shi’s face was pale as he lifted his head, the battle had quickly stopped because Zhao Shi Chang, Qin Jia Gui, Li Dong and the others had steeled their hearts as they killed and injured over twenty people. Looking at the people sprawled on the ground either dead or injured, it was extremely gruesome and the other people were frightened as they backed away.

In their eyes, Zhao Shi Chang and the others had suddenly become as fearsome as demons.

“Initially I imagined that killing a person would be very difficult, who knew that it would actually be so easy. It’s even easier than killing those monsters and makes a person feel excited.” Li Dong had an evil grin, he had killed several people and his eyes seemed red as a fierce light seemed to shine from within them.

After killing monsters for several days, the group were already numb to killing and were not too impacted after killing a few humans, nor did they feel any remorse.

“Demons..... Demons.....” Within the students, a girl’s frightened voice could be heard.

Su Yu sighed as he looked over at Lin Shi: “Teacher Lin, what exactly were you planning?” Throughout their journey, Lin Shi was actually a decent person but Su Yu simply could not understand why he had acted like this. His actions had infuriated Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others and no one was willing to interact with him any further.

“I..... I only wanted to..... save her..... I didn’t think..... It would end up like this.....” Lin Shi’s body trembled as he looked towards a person within the crowd.

Su Yu looked over and noticed that the person he was looking at was actually coach Meng Bo.

Dazed, Su Yu finally understood. Lin Shi actually liked Meng Bo and had entered the school looking for her. He did not expect that Meng Bo would be together with everyone and with Lin Shi's honest and considerate character, he could not tell Meng Bo to give up on the others and had finally brought everyone here, causing this uproar and tragedy.

However, Su Yu seemed to recall that Meng Bo already had a fiancée and if this situation did not occur they would have been married at the end of the year. It seemed that Lin Shi was secretly in love with her and because of this and his character, he could not say many things.

Feelings were really a cause for silliness and Su Yu sighed as he shook his head, walking to the other side.

Qin Jia Gui poured out all the food from the big bag which had a tear in it as he coldly glared at Lin Shi: "Don't say we aren't fair, this bag of food we'll treat it as your share. Everyone, let's go." Having said this, he lifted two big bags and placed it on his back."

The others also lifted bags onto their backs and even Qin Jia Gui's girlfriend Yuan Ni Ping also exerted herself to carry one.

Lin Shi stood stunned within the group, his face pale as his eyes seemed glazed.

The group of students and teachers each had different emotions and expressions, anger, shock, helplessness, fear and sadness. The

school chairman seemed to have aged ten years and he now understood that the people before him were not going to listen to his orders and under the pressure of death, each person could only fight for themselves.

“No, Li Dong, we are classmates, bring me along, I wish to go with you.” Suddenly, a male student rushed out from within the group as he shouted wildly. Li Dong and him stayed in the same dormitory and although they could not be said to be best buddies, their relationship could be considered quite solid.

Chapter 62: Gratitude For Food

“Pa!”

Li Dong did not hesitate as he kicked away the classmate who had thrown himself forward, his face was ferocious as he said: “Scram, we don’t need you.”

“Su Yu, Su Yu..... You..... Bring me along..... don’t throw me behind.....” within the group, a girl whose face was filled with fear rushed forward and grabbed onto Su Yu. This female student was from the same class as Su Yu and the two parties were not that familiar with each other, they were only acquaintances familiar with each others appearance.

Su Yu looked her in the eye and sighed, his gaze swept and noticed that within the group, class president Lei Rui, teacher Meng Bo and many people were staring at him and the others, hoping to be brought along. They had food and if they followed them, they would not need to starve.

Noticing all this, Su Yu quickly made a decision. Even if he brought her along, it would not change matters by much. There were too many people who needed help and he steeled his heart as he swiped away her hand and turned: “Sorry, I am also powerless to help.”

When Su Yu turned, he saw Lei Rui’s expression that seemed to be despondent and his heart trembled, Lei Rui was staring at him but her pride made her unable to come forward to plead with him.

Zhao Shi Chang and the group did not wish to tarry any longer as they hefted the big bags off the floor. Besides Lin Shi, they had two additional people and seemed to be running away as they dashed towards the opposite direction.

The current atmosphere was really extremely stifling.

Some people attempted to join their group but was forced by Li Dong to move aside, finally, the group managed to dump the others behind as they escaped.

Su Yu was running within the group but his mind constantly thought back to Lei Rui's gaze, thinking back to her feeding him when he had been injured, he suddenly stopped and tossed the few bags on his body to the ground.

The group were shocked as Zhang Zhong Mou asked: "Su Yu, what's the matter?"

"Wait a moment for me." Su Yu sped off in the direction of the group of students and teachers.

"This fellow, what's happening?" Zhang Zhong Mou was puzzled while Jade had a faint smile on her face as she said: "Hmph, Isn't this simple? He's a person who tries to be on good terms with everyone, Lei Rui had previously fed him when he was injured and based on his character, he could not bear to throw her behind.

When it came to understanding Su Yu, no one was better than Jade at that.

At this moment, the large group from the school had not dissipated and a small bunch of people were busily snatching the food that Qin Jia Gui had strewn on the floor as they saw Su Yu return, shocked expressions appeared on their faces.

Su Yu did not bother about the gazes of the others as he walked straight to Lei Rui and asked: “Are you willing to go with me?”

Lei Rui was dazed before coming to her senses, she could not believe what she was hearing as she pointed to herself and said: “Me?”

“Yup.” Su Yu had a faint smile, she had fed him a meal and this was how he could repay her. Whether she was able to continue living from her on would depend on her ability and luck, Su Yu could only help so much.

“Yes, yes!” Lei Rui suddenly shouted and felt her nose ache as she hurriedly ran to Su Yu’s side.

Su Yu brought Lei Rui along but instead of leaving he walked over to Lin Shi who was still out of sorts and said: “Teacher Lin, we all have hope. I think..... you can create an even greater group, isn’t that right? For the person you like, in order to protect the woman you love, you must live on. Bringing everyone and doing so. I’m not that magnanimous but maybe you can do it.”

He then lightly patted Lin Shi's shoulder and looked deeply into Meng Bo's eyes as he whispered: "Teacher Lin, I'll hand teacher Meng Bo over to you. If it weren't for you, I would definitely bring teacher Meng Bo along. She is a good person but I believe in you and I believe that not long after, we will meet again."

Thereafter, Su Yu brought Lei Rui and left.

Lin Shi stood there in a stupor as he looked at the backs of the two fading figures. Unconsciously, his eyes were already moist.

Su Yu and their group had left but this did not necessarily mean that they would certainly fare well. As for his group, they were also not condemned for death. Su Yu and their group only had more food than them and had a stronger base to begin with, they could be considered a small elite group. As for his group, he had the numbers and everyone had the potential to grow stronger. If harnessed, they could become a frightening force.

Lin Shi suddenly understood the intentions behind Su Yu's words, if he was able to lead this group of students and teachers well and everyone fought tooth and nail, it would not be impossible for them to force out a bloody path. It would be extremely tedious and tiresome and many people would die, however, there was still hope.

"Alright, Su Yu, if we are able to live to meet again, I'll definitely be stronger than you. I will bring everyone and live well." Lin Shi finally made his decision as he tightly clenched his fist and vowed to himself.

The few Gnome Riders within the school had already been killed by Su Yu and only sporadic groups of Gnomes remained. As long as Lin Shi was able to lead properly, they would be able to handle them effectively. There were already quite a few people who had become tier zero dark iron warriors and if they worked together, it would be easy to clear the remaining Gnomes.

Su Yu brought Lei Rui along as he headed back, the group looked towards Jade and thought that this woman really understood Su Yu, she had actually gotten it right on the nail.

It was only when they had dumped the school far behind did the group finally stop to rest and discuss what they would do next.

Including Lei Rui, they had thirteen people within their group, six males and seven females. The number of females exceeded that of the males and without question, this meant that the burden of the group had grown heavier.

Of them, Lei Rui, Jade and Yuan Ni Ping were women who did not have any strange energy within them. They had only rushed a short distance before beginning to pant heavily.

“This won’t do, everyone must become a dark iron warrior at minimum. Only in this way would our chances of living increase.” Qin Jia Gui looked at the panting women and immediately pointed out this problem.

Su Yu nodded as he said: “That’s right, after becoming a dark

iron warrior, not only would one gain strange energy, even their recuperative powers would be much faster than a normal person. Becoming a dark iron warrior is absolutely essential for everyone.”

Lei Rui, Jade and the few of them exchanged glances and felt elation, however, after thinking how difficult it would be to kill the monsters, the expressions on their faces changed.

Li Dong followed up: “Everyone, let’s split the food first. We can discuss the other matters later.” This fellow was most concerned about food and was afraid to be taken advantage of by anyone.

There were thirteen people and based on the number of bags it was equally distributed, the food each person obtained was enough to last at least twenty days and everyone was satisfied.

With these twenty days, if they walked in a single direction within this forest, they did not believe that they would be unable to walk out of this forest. Thinking of this, confidence surged within the group.

The forest was too fearsome and filled with different frightening monsters of varying strengths, at any moment one could die here and the nerves of the group were taut. They all wanted to leave this forest as soon as possible and return to the world they were familiar with.

Qin Jia Gui spoke up: “We’ve been walking in that direction for the past few days, I think we should try to walk in a different direction, what do you guys think? There may be hope in the other

directions.”

When the group thought back to the endless forest that was before them after walking for two days, they immediately agreed with Qin Jia Gui’s suggestion.

Suddenly, Su Yu stood up with a faint smile on his face: “Jade, the chance for you to become a dark iron warrior is here!”

Chapter 63: 666

The group were discussing their plans regarding their future path when Su Yu suddenly stood up and said: “Jade, your chance to become a dark iron warrior is here!”

The group were dazed before hearing sounds nearby as a group of Gnomes carrying wooden shields and metal spades appeared.

Su Yu swept his gaze and estimated the group to be fifteen or sixteen strong before he went forward to attack.

“Do we really have to act?” Lei Rui’s face was pale and she said this while adjusting the spectacles on her face. The Gnomes were frightening and if she were to face them head on, it was a daunting proposition and even if an expert like Su Yu was beside her, she still felt fear.

Su Yu laughed: “You don’t have to act.” His figure flashed like lightning with ‘Chi! Chi! Chi!’ sounds and in the blink of an eye, all the gnomes had been smashed to the ground by him. He did not take the lives of these monsters and retrieved a metal spade from the ground which he tossed to Jade and said: “I’ve already knocked them unconscious, the rest is up to you guys.”

The group stared blankly for a while before recovering as Li Dong shouted: “Will this method work? Isn’t..... isn’t this far too simple?” Thinking back to how he had fought tooth and nail, risking his life to become a dark iron warrior, this method of allowing Jade and the others to become dark iron warriors was

really too simple.

Jade, Lei Rui and Yuan Ni Ping each lifted a metal spade as they slowly made their way forward. Requesting them to kill these fainted Gnomes was actually quite difficult for them.

Su Yu picked up another metal spade and said with a stern face to Ding Shan: “Little girl, big brother knows it’s cruel but within this forest, if you want to live you have to be firm. Go, kill one of the Gnomes with this metal spade.”

Zhou Bi Rong had a helpless expression on her face as she said: “Su Yu, little Shan doesn’t need to do this right?”

Su Yu sighed as he said: “In the future, no one knows what dangers we may face. I think that if she becomes a dark iron warrior, the chances of her living would greatly improve.”

Ding Shan lifted a metal spade as she looked at the Gnomes which were fallen on the ground. Her entire body was trembling, asking a seven to eight year old child to kill a Gnome was really no easy task.

Jade looked at the fallen Gnomes and grit her teeth as she shut her eyes and smashed the metal spade downwards, she muttered to herself as she continued to grit her teeth saying something that no one could hear.

Zhang Zhong Mou was curious and walked to the side to listen as

he immediately heard Jade reciting Su Yu's name.

No way, did Jade imagine these Gnomes to be Su Yu when she hit them? If that was the case she was simply too frightening, the women these days.....

Zhang Zhong Mou felt his goosebumps stand and it was fortunate that Su Yu could not hear what Jade was saying or he would become incredibly depressed.

By the side, Lei Rui and Ni Ping saw the violent Jade and also thought about their experiences this day, gritting their teeth they also smashed down with their metal spades.

In no time, besides Ding Shan, Jade and the other two had each successfully killed a Gnome.

Jade's face was filled with astonishment as she waved her left hand and said: "Strange, it's simply too strange. This feeling is simply too strange."

Su Yu looked gloomily at Jade's left hand, this girl really was too much, even the area where her strange energy appeared was exactly the same as his. If it were not for the fact that they both had different parents, he would have suspected that Jade was his twin sister.

Lei Rui and Ni Ping's strange energies appeared within their right hands.

The three girls had finally managed to each kill a Gnome and were extremely hesitant when they did so. These Gnomes were all unconscious on the ground and killing them made them feel guilty.

Besides the three which had been killed by the three ladies, the ground was still littered with over ten unconscious Gnomes. Seeing that they were not going to kill anymore, Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang immediately went forward. Such an opportunity was hard to come by, killing these Gnomes to become stronger without any risk, only a fool would give up such a good chance.

Zhou Bi Rong looked at Ning Yan who seemed to always be keeping herself distanced from the group as she said: “Ning Yan, this opportunity is hard to come by, aren’t you going to kill a few?”

o

She had noticed Ning Yan long ago and had seen that Ning Yan almost never killed any of the monsters. There were so many defenseless Gnomes lying on the ground and Zhou Bi Rong could not help but remind her in good will.

She did not expect that after she said these words, the expression on Ning Yan’s face seemed to suddenly be agitated as she took three heavy steps back, her cherry lips were slightly open as though she had heard something that was absolutely frightening. She looked over at Zhou Bi Rong before retracting her gaze, looking down as she stared at her feet.

Zhou Bi Rong did not expect that she would have such an agitated reaction and was completely stunned.

Ning Yan had suddenly frantically retreated and unknowingly retreated to Su Yu's side. Her head was down and Su Yu looked at her, able to see her snow white neck right before him.

“Eh?” Su Yu softly exclaimed as he suddenly saw something weird.

Since their schooldays, Su Yu had always been secretly admiring Ning Yan and during class he would often stare at her back in a daze. He was very clear that the back of Ning Yan's neck was snow white like jade, clear without any blemish. He was absolutely certain of this.

At this moment, he unintentionally swept his gaze at the back of her neck and because of the close proximity, he actually saw three small black dots there, on close inspection, they seemed similar to three small black marks.

What was even more strange was that these three black marks actually combined together to form three numbers '666', as though it were a symbol or sign.

“How could it be..... I clearly remember that there were no marks on her back..... also..... They actually look like the numbers '666'.....” Su Yu felt shocked and bewildered as he stared long and hard, he was sure that it was indeed the numbers '666'.

Staring at the back of Ning Yan's neck which suddenly had the '666' black marks on it and thinking of her strange actions thus

far, Su Yu's mind was filled with suspicions and the more he thought about it, the more he suspected that something was wrong with Ning Yan.

However, what was wrong with her? Su Yu was unsure and wanted to ask Ning Yan but looking at her, he felt that even if he asked, there would be no answer. Contemplating deeply, Su Yu suddenly felt cold within his heart, the number '666' constantly floated through his mind like a frightening demonic curse.

Li Dong and Zhou Hua King did not hesitate in the slightest and had quickly killed the remaining Gnomes. They wanted to promote badly and with such a convenient way to kill the Gnomes, they certainly were not going to pass up on the chance.

Jade, Lei Rui and Ni Ping all successfully became tier zero dark iron warriors and now had strange energy within them. Only Ding Shan had not acted and Su Yu felt this was a pity although he did not force her.

The group decided to bypass the school and walk in the other direction of the forest.

Seeing the school from afar, they could faintly hear a clamor and the group carried their food as they remained taciturn, unwilling to think too much.

Along the way, only the sounds of their footsteps accompanied them and in the distance occasional roars could be heard, it was just that the distance was simply too far and the roars were

indistinct.

Chapter 64: Walking Zombies

Jade, Lei Rui and Ni Ping had become dark iron warriors and their physical abilities had risen, as they lifted the big bags to walk, it was clearly much easier and within the entire group only Ding Shan could not hold on after walking for a while.

The food that was allocated to Ding Shan were already carried by other people, she was too small and even if she walked without any burdens, she could only walk for a while.

The group were helpless and Su Yu divided his food to Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhou Bi Rong and Zhao Shi Chang to carry before lifting Ding Shan onto his back.

“Thank you big brother.” Ding Shan climbed onto Su Yu’s back and softly said.

Su Yu shook his head as he thought to himself that if she had killed a single Gnome, she would not be tired so easily.

The sky was beginning to darken and they had reached a slope, on the slope were several huge rocks and from afar it seemed as though there were several huge beasts lying there with an awe-inspiring aura.

Looking at the sky, Qin Jia Gui said: “Let’s go there and check it out. The sky is already turning dark and we should prepare to rest the night on that slope.”

Zhao Shi Chang agreed, everyone was tired as they slowly made their way up the slope, occasionally using the small trees by their sides to stabilise their bodies.

Ma Zi Ye murmured as she bitterly laughed: “Today is already the fifth day, it’s already been five days..... haven’t even taken a shower, these few days have really been unbearable.”

The smell of sweat mixed with that of blood was dense and it was to the point that no living person would go near them. It was fortunate that the smell on everyone was similar and once they got used to it, they did not mind it much. Their bodies however, were extremely uncomfortable and it was difficult to describe.

When the group of people finally reached the top of the slope and looked, they were all dazed.

Infront of the slope, there were a large pile of rocks and in the centre of the rocks there actually seemed to be a stone cave, the cave seemed deep and dark, as though a demon swallowing monster were opening its gaping mouth. The group saw this and felt a chill go down their spines.

“There seems to be a cave there.....” Zhang Zhong Mou had not finished speaking when Qin Jia Gui softly interrupted: “Speak softer, everyone let’s retreat and avoid this place.”

They had initially been prepared to stay the night here but upon discovering this sinister and frightening stone cave, regardless of

what frightening monster was within, Qin Jia Gui was unwilling to take the risk as he prepared to quietly bypass this area.

“Let’s go.” Su Yu agreed with Qin Jia Gui’s decision and the group silently walked past the cave, moving in a big circle as they bypassed it. Suddenly, Zhao Shi Chang and Qin Jia Gui who were leading the pack stopped as weird expressions appeared on their faces.

The group looked over and saw that not far away there were several of the strange rock piles. Between the rock piles were caves after caves, dense and numerous like that of a bee hive.

“Strange, these things.....” Zhang Zhong Mou wanted to go forward to inspect as a rustling sound could be heard from within the caves.

“Careful, could it be that this place is actually the dwelling area of Gnomes?” Qin Jia Gui immediately thought of the possibility that Gnomes lived within these caves and with so many caves before them, the number of Gnomes hidden here would be very numerous. Gnomes were the lowest tier of beast soldier, only slightly stronger than Lesser Goblins and would be much trouble for their group. As a result, Qin Jia Gui did not feel very anxious.

Qin Jia Gui had just spoken his thoughts when the rustling noises from the surrounding caves became more vigorous as black figures jumped out of the caves one by one and landed on the ground. Within the blink of an eye, Su Yu and the others had over ten black monsters before them.

These monsters were not the Gnomes that Qin Jia Gui had predicted, rather, they were a group of zombies that they had seen in the movies.

The entirety of their bodies were greyish-black as though it were covered in a layer of iron crust, their four limbs were not rigid and straight but rather, bent all over, their arms were hanging limply down and their posture was like the standing position of apes.

What was most noticeable about these corpses was that they did not have hands but rather inch long black metal hooks, these metal hooks gleamed with a black light and were clearly extremely sharp. A zombie had jumped out of a cave and the metal hook on its left arm had nonchalantly swung, hooking into a rock by its side causing it to shatter like a piece of tofu.

The might and sharpness of the metal hooks were certainly exceptional.

The 'Eye of Perception' on Su Yu's left hand activated and the a stream of information flashed through his mind.

Name: Walking Zombie

Information: Lowest tier zombie within the Zombie race, tier one elite beast soldier. Relying on its two metal hooks it is easily able to dig caves. Mortal enemies with Gnomes, frequently coming into conflict over the stems of plants. Gnomes were frightened of them and forged wooden shields and leather armour to protect

themselves from the metal hooks of these zombies. They are similar to Gnomes and although they did not eat humans, they loved to attack them and convert these humans into their kind.

Su Yu received this information and his heart shivered, he clearly remembered that Greater Goblins were classified as tier one beast soldiers and these Walking Zombies before them were actually tier one elite beast soldiers, although they were of the same tier, it seemed that they were more frightening than the Greater Goblins, otherwise, the word elite would not be used to describe them.

Thinking speedily, Su Yu raised his left arm and ‘Chi Chi Chi’ sounds could be heard as black scales appeared on his arm. In the blink of an eye, his left arm was already covered in black scales and five claws appeared from his hand as he shouted heavily: “Retreat! Everyone be careful, these zombies are not easy to handle!” as he went forward to face them.

Su Yu did not need to remind them as Jade, Lei Rui, Yuan Ni Ping and the others began to slowly back away. These ten odd Walking Zombies emanated a dense aura of death which made them feel danger, causing them to instinctively retreat.

Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Ma Zi Ye and Zhang Zhong Mou were all tier one dark iron warriors and utilized their abilities. Qin Jia Gui’s left hand clenched as black metal skin extended from his palm all the way to half of his arm.

Zhao Shi Chang’s right hand was covered in a hard crust like that of an insect and as he waved his hand, a bone blade emerged from within the hard crust.

Black rope-like objects appeared on Ma Zi Ye's right leg, half of Zhang Zhong Mou's face became stone and in his hands was a metal spade as he exhibited a poise that was stern and ready to engage.

The ten odd Walking Zombies jumped out from their caves and saw the group of humans before them. Without a sound, they wielded their metal hooks as they rushed forward.

In an instant, both sides had collided, Su Yu's left hand went forth and blocked the metal hook of a Walking Zombie as the 'Rending Claw' activated, the black scales raised as the left arm began to rotate, creating a frightening rotational force. When the metal hook collided, it was immediately sent flying away and Su Yu strode forward as he heavily smashed the 'Rending Claw' into the Walking Zombie's chest.

'Rending Claw' was simply too frightening and if it came into contact with the chest of the Walking Zombie, it would immediately rend through flesh and bone. However, this Walking Zombie was worthy of its title as a tier one elite beast soldier and was far stronger than Gnomes and Lesser Goblins. In this perilous situation, its hooks shot down and used the frightening rotational power from the 'Rending Claw' to rebound backwards, avoiding the danger of it piercing into its chest.

The metal hooks were so sturdy that even the 'Rending Claw' could not pierce through it.

Chapter 65: Bitter Battle With The Zombies

At the same time, Qin Jia Gui, Ma Zi Ye and the others were also colliding with the Zombies and in this instant, the difference in strengths of each individual could be seen.

In this instant, although Su Yu had not managed to kill the Walking Zombie, he had caused the Walking Zombie to suffer damage as it fell away. As for Qin Jia Gui's 'Demolishing Iron Fist', it collided with the metal hook of another Walking Zombie and exploded with a frightening noise, both sides swayed and although the 'Demolishing Iron Fist' managed to send both metal hooks flying, Qin Jia Gui also felt a frightening backfire and could not stand his ground as he backed away.

Ma Zi Ye stomped her foot and activated the 'Web of Metal', however, the Walking Zombie actually leapt vertically and like an agile monkey, its two hooks shot forward aimed at her chest and skull, forcing Ma Zi Ye to leap away.

Zhao Shi Chang's bone blade swept forward and made a sound 'Peng!' as it collided with the metal hook of the Walking Zombie sending sparks flying everywhere as he was sent flying back from the rebound, his entire right arm becoming numb. "Chi!", another metal hook came sweeping towards him, ripping his clothes as fresh blood splattered. If he was only slightly slower, his chest and stomach region would have already been rent open.

Zhang Zhong Mou wielded a metal spade which was hooked by the other party's hook and with a single pull, Zhang Zhong Mou was sent flying away.

At the back, Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang had just lifted their metal spades and rushed forward when they saw that Qin Jia Gui and the others fail to gain any advantage and even seemed to be on the losing end of the exchange. They were stunned as the hurriedly retraced their steps.

They were only tier zero dark iron warriors and far inferior to Qin Jia Gui and the others. If they could not handle the enemy, how could the two of them deal with it?

bullets had hit, there was not even a trickle of blood that flowed out. It seemed that it was ineffective and had not affected its combat ability in the slightest.

Zhou Bi Rong stared blankly as this Walking Zombie leapt vertically and swept its two hooks out, sweeping towards Zhou Bi Rong.

The other Walking Zombies also fanned out as they attempted to surround the group within.

“Retreat! Quick, run!” Su Yu explosively shouted as his legs kicked, no longer caring about the Walking Zombie before him and suddenly rushing towards another Zombie that was pouncing.

This Walking Zombie was wielded its two hooks and clawing towards Jade who was attempting to turn and run away.

In this leap, Su Yu used all his strength and released his most

powerful ‘Rending Claw’, black scales raised and spat out white mist as the ‘Rending Claw’ dragged his body forward, shooting like a cannon towards the Walking Zombie.

“Ssss”

This Walking Zombie had actually managed to barely swing its arms to block the explosively flying ‘Rending Claw’, metal hook collided with the ‘Rending Claw’ creating a frightening noise as sparks could be seen flying.

“Ha!” Su Yu exclaimed as his strange energy surged, using everything to smash down heavily.

“Bang!”

The Walking Zombies metal hooks were sent flying and the ‘Rending Claw’ pierced towards the Walking Zombie’s waist.

Immediately, the frightening sounds of bone and flesh being minced could be heard as the waist of the Walking Zombie was shredded into a lump of meat before it could even make a sound. Su Yu then swept his ‘Rending Claw’ and the Walking Zombie’s upper body bent weirdly as it fell to the ground, the waist had been thoroughly pierced and the Zombie died on the spot.

Jade had not recovered her calm and was just about to call out to Su Yu when he suddenly shouted at the few females: “Run!” before turning back and pouncing towards another Walking Zombie.

Lei Rui, Jade, Yuan Ni Ping and the others could tell that these Zombies were far superior to Gnomes and they had no way to handle them as they hurriedly retreated further back, creating a bigger distance between them and the Walking Zombies.

By the side, Qin Jia Gui roared as the ‘Demolishing Iron Fist’ once again flew forward and collided with one of the metal hooks of a Walking Zombie, sending it flying back as he lifted his leg to kick at the chest of the zombie. His left arm felt a sharp pain as blood splattered, he had been hit by the other metal hook of the zombie and a piece of flesh had been hooked away.

Ma Zi Ye’s whipping leg went forward and kicked at the legs of a Walking Zombie from the side. It was like kicking a metal pillar and the pain from it made her gasp a sharp intake of cold air, on closer inspection the Walking Zombie had actually used its metal hook to block the kick and thus protecting its legs.

“Damn! These cunning things.” Ma Zi Ye put both her hands on the ground as her body lifted off the ground and did a somersault, once her feet landed on the ground, she attempted to activate ‘Web of Metal’ once again.

The Walking Zombie which was before her once again jumped into the air as its two claws flew forward like two black pythons without giving Ma Zi Ye any chance to utilise her ‘Web of Metal’.

These zombies were not only stronger than Greater Goblins, they were as cunning as Gnome Riders and very difficult to deal with.

After a few exchanges, Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others all cut sorry figures as their bodies were drenched in cold sweat.

Su Yu noticed all this and he was feeling anxious, he had already used the 'Earth Spikes Assault' within his ring and twenty four hours had not passed making it unusable, otherwise, it would certainly be quite effective against these Walking Zombies.

Ma Ze Yi was pressured by the Walking Zombie to the extent that she could not utilise her 'Web of Metal' and looked as the Walking Zombie once again leapt towards her. She was angry to the point of turning pale but had no choice but to retreat once again. Suddenly a figure flashed before her as Su Yu's voice rang beside her: "Continue!" as his black scale covered arm went forward and the 'Rending Claw' swept.

The Walking Zombie that had leapt and swept with its two hooks as it landed heavily on Su Yu's arm. Su Yu, on the other hand, continued forward as his arm heavily pushed.

This blow was forceful like lightning.

"Chi! Chi!"

The zombie groaned as it made a miserable hoarse sound that could not be made by a human, its legs had already been shattered by the 'Rending Claw' and only its upper body fell down. Ma Ze Yi took the chance to stride forward and heavily stepped down.

“Pa!”

The Walking Zombie’s head was immediately crushed as a faint black putrid water that had a horrible stench flowed out.

Within the mess, Jade, Lei Rui, Yuan Ni Ping, Ning Yan and Ding Shan had constantly been backing away. As for Zhou Bi Rong, she lifted her pistol to cover them. Only if the situation turned dire would she open fire, she did not have very many bullets remaining on her.

Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang held onto metal spades and had no room to maneuver, they did not dare to go forward and attack the Walking Zombies but also were unwilling to retreat. They wanted to look for chances to gain convenient small advantages. Without question, if they could kill a single Walking Zombie, they would immediately be able to promote to tier one dark iron warrior.

As for Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Ma Zi Ye and Zhang Zhong Mou, they were engaged in a reckless battle with the Walking Zombies but were unable to gain any advantages and had instead gotten injured. Only Su Yu was extremely courageous as he rushed back and forth, quickly dealing with three of the Walking Zombies and even helping Ma Zi Ye to kill one.

Chapter 66: Tier Two Beast Soldier Metal Chain Zombie

There were a total of eleven Walking Zombies and Su Yu had already killed three of them, Ma Zi Ye had also killed one with his assistance and there remained seven of the zombies. Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and Zhang Zhong Mou each blocked one while the remaining four were attracted by Su Yu's frightening performance and actually rushed towards him and Ma Zi Ye.

"They're coming!" Su Yu protected Ma Zi Ye behind him as an excited expression appeared on his face. The 'Rending Claw' on his left arm had reached its strongest form and the strange energy within his left hand surged, flowing continually into his 'Rending Claw'.

Ma Zi Ye understood his intentions. As he blocked the front, she would not need to care about the Walking Zombies attacking her and would be able to utilise the 'Web of Metal'.

Her right leg heavily stomped the ground as she activated the 'Web of Metal', streaks of black rope-like objects extended and immediately encompassed an area of several metres.

The four Walking Zombies attacked from four directions and each one hunched their figures, agile like an ape as their hooks raised and viciously clawed towards Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye.

Su Yu ran frantically around Ma Zi Ye's body, 'Peng! Peng! Peng!.....' eight thunderous sounds resounded and sparks filled

the air, Su Yu had used his left arm to forcefully block all eight of the metal hooks which were swinging down. At the same time, Ma Zi Ye shouted: “Web of Metal!” focusing on transmitting her strange energy within her right leg to activate the full power of the ‘Web of Metal’.

“Ha!” Su Yu who received the cue from Ma Zi Ye jumped into the air as he ignored the metal hooks of the zombies and heavily smashed down from the air.

“Kaboom!”

A Walking Zombie which was in mid attack had its head blown apart like a watermelon, the power of the ‘Rending Claw’ was simply too frightening and had blown the head apart and continued into the chest of the Walking Zombie before stopping. As for Su Yu, he immediately continued to rush towards the second Walking Zombie.

“Bang!”

The second Walking Zombie had its left arm and waist thoroughly pierced through, its upper body flew away and Su Yu felt a sharp pain in his chest as a metal hook tore off a big piece of flesh.

Su Yu kicked the ground and leapt like a fish out of water, the face of the third Walking Zombie was smashed in as its eyeballs exploded out of their sockets. A stinging pain could be felt on his face as the minced flesh from the zombie’s head splattered onto it.

On the other side, Ma Zi Ye dragged her 'Web of Metal' and delicately shouted as she lifted her leg, 'Flying Spade' landing squarely in the centre of the chest of the final zombie.

The final Walking Zombie was in the process of moving forward and had been snared by the 'Web of Metal' causing it to suay from its momentum, it had then been kicked by Ma Zi Ye's 'Flying Spade' and immediately groaned as it was sent tumbling back.

Within this span of time, Su Yu had made use of the power of Ma Zi Ye's 'Web of Metal' to continuously kill three Walking Zombies, the strange energy within his left arm grew thicker and surged and as he landed on the ground, he had barely enough time to catch his breath when a miserable cry could be heard from another side.

The miserable cry of a female.

"No!" Su Yu shouted as his eyes seemed to blaze and all the blood in his body seemed to boil.

At the other side, Jade, Lei Rui, Yuan Ni Ping, Ning Yan, Ding Shan and Zhou Bi Rong had retreated quite a distance away from the Walking Zombies to avoid any accidents. With Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye working together, they had already killed three of the Walking Zombies and the situation had stabilized, it would be easy for Su Yu to help Zhang Zhong Mou and the others to easily clear up the remaining Walking Zombies.

This was when the situation seemed to go awry.

As the few females were backing away to the side, from the slanting rocks came a shuffling noise, a huge black figure flew out and heavily landed on the ground as a black chain flew out.

‘Pa!’

Ding Shan let out a miserable cry as she was hit by the black chain and sent flying away.

The first miserable cry that Su Yu had heard was precisely from Ding Shan and by the time he lifted his head and noticed, this black figure had already sent a second black chain flying out and struck Jade.

Jade had no way to resist and she made a distressed cry as she flew through the air, the force within this metal chain was simply terrifying.

“Jade!” In this instant, Su Yu’s body felt cold and he explosively howled as he kicked with all his might, madly pouncing in the direction of the black figure.

This huge black figure that had suddenly appeared was a zombie but it was much taller and bigger, its entire body was twined with large black metal chains which could help defend it from harm and also be used as a frightening weapon in its hands. When the metal chain was thrown, even rocks would easily be smashed into dust.

This was a Metal Chain Zombie which was more frightening than

a Walking Zombie, the metal chain within its hands could be used for attack and defense and it was a tier two beast soldier.

Su Yu had already met three types of beast soldiers, Golden Goblin, Savage Bull Demon and Gnome Rider. The Metal Chain Zombie before him was the fourth type.

The Metal Chain Zombie had suddenly appeared and immediately attacked with its metal chains, sending Ding Shan and Jade flying away as blood splattered in the air, all the females were stunned and Su Yu howled as he rushed madly forward.

By the side, Qin Jia Gui also noticed this and felt shock as he shouted: “Ni Ping!” ignoring the Walking Zombie by his side as he turned and ran towards where Yuan Ni Ping was.

“Kaboom!”

Su Yu seemed crazed as he leapt into the air and heavily collided with the Metal Chain Zombie, the momentum was too great and sent him and the Metal Chain Zombie tumbling to the ground.

As they fell, the Metal Chain Zombie swept its hand as the metal chain went forth, its might was very frightening and if it struck the head, even Su Yu would be instantly killed.

Su Yu seemed crazy as he wielded the ‘Rending Claw’ and smashed it onto the metal chain causing brilliant sparks and piercing metal grinding noises to sound out. The crazed Su Yu had

exploded with a terrifying force and the ‘Rending Claw’ continued forward with the metal chain in tow, heavily smashing into the chest of the Metal Chain Zombie.

“Creak! Pa! Pa!”

Piercing sounds could be heard as the metal chains that covered the Metal Chain Zombie’s body came into contact with the Rending Claw causing large amounts of sparks to appear due to the strong rotational force from it.

The Metal Chain Zombie opened its mouth and its face had a sinister smile as it lifted its hands and planned to smash Su Yu into a pulp.

‘Roar!’ Su Yu howled as white mist spat out from his black scales, all the strange energy within his body gathered into his fist, the black scales on his arm spat out large amounts of white mist like a steam engine and the metal chains before the chest of the Metal Chain Zombie began to break as the links flew away.

The Metal Chain Zombie howled as the hands which were in the air suddenly paused, looking down with difficulty, it saw the black scale covered arm that was rotating at high speed spitting forth white mist and breaking the chains before piercing its chest, causing flesh, blood and bone to fly and the arm seemed to continue boring into it.

Su Yu had used all his strength and finally managed to get through the defense of the metal chains, the ‘Rending Claw’ then

continued into the chest of the Metal Chain Zombie and began to bore in.

Su Yu's left hand did not stop there as it continued upwards from within the Metal Chain Zombie's chest, piercing sounds of bone and flesh being minced could be heard and by the time Su Yu removed his left arm, the Metal Chain Zombie had already been shredded from its chest to its head as it fell to the ground dead.

Chapter 67: Cruel Forest

The Metal Chain Zombie was a tier two beast soldier and Su Yu felt the strange energy within his hand surge as he absorbed a black crystal. He did not feel any elation as this occurred and by the time he got up, the floor was already littered with the corpses of zombies. The remaining Walking Zombies had been cleared up by Ma Zi Ye and the others working together and the group stared dazedly at Su Yu with expressions of shock.

The crazy performance from Su Yu was shocking and the Metal Chain Zombie which was more frightening than a Walking Zombie had actually been killed by Su Yu in the blink of an eye causing them to feel astonished.

Su Yu had used the strength of his 'Rending Claw' to forcefully break through the metal chains covering the Metal Chain Zombie's body. Although the metal chains which were as thick as child's arm had broken apart, the frightening collision of the black scales that had been rotating at a high speed caused several of them to actually be damaged causing a piercing pain to emanate from his left arm. This was the first time since his left arm absorbed the strange energy that it had gotten injured.

It could be seen how frightening the Metal Chain Zombie really was.

Su Yu did not think much after killing the Metal Chain Zombie and immediately rushed to where Jade had fallen.

The Metal Chain Zombie had suddenly appeared and wielded its metal chain, striking at Ding Shan and Jade. With the strength of the Metal Chain Zombie, the force from the metal chain would have been immense.

“Jade!” Su Yu sprinted over and saw that Jade was struggling to get back up.

Seeing that Jade could still move, Su Yu let out a sigh of relief as he crouched down to inspect her injuries. She was hugging her left arm and pain could be seen on her face, the left arm was bent at an awkward angle and had clearly been broken.

Su Yu remembered that Jade’s strange energy was contained within her left arm and the Metal Chain Zombie was indeed fearsome, a single swing of the metal chain had actually caused Jade’s left arm which contained strange energy to immediately break. The force from this blow was certainly terrifying but part of the reason why the arm broke was also because her strange energy was still too little.

“So pain.....” Jade’s face was contorted in pain.

Su Yu consoled: “It’ll be alright, your strange energy is located in your left arm, it’ll be fine in no time. This injury really isn’t much.....” As he said this, his hand stretched forward to hold onto her bent arm as he softly exclaimed: “Bear with it!” before suddenly pulling.

“Aaaahhhh!” Jade screamed as cold sweat covered her face,

thereafter Su Yu also yelled: “Aaaaahh!” as he was bitten on the shoulder by Jade.

Su Yu had helped to straighten her bent arm and began to circulate his strange energy which was in the form of qi to enter her arm. Jade immediately felt the pain reduce significantly and breathed a sigh of relief, thinking back to her earlier actions, her face was slightly red.

“Shan Shan, Shan Shan!”

Su Yu had just let out a sigh of relief and was about to speak when he suddenly heard the alarmed shouts from Zhou Bi Rong.

His heart trembled as he left Jade and stood up, running over to the other side.

Besides Jade, Ding Shan had also been struck by the metal chain of the Metal Chain Zombie.

Jade’s injuries were no longer serious and her innate strange energy coupled with the qi which Su Yu had used to help nourish her arm made it such that it would likely heal within half a day. As for Ding Shan.....

When Su Yu got close, Zhou Bi Rong was hugging Ding Shan as she called her name, her hands held onto the wound which was continually pumping blood. The blood continued to flow and Ding Shan’s face was pale like paper, her lips were open as though she

wanted to say something.

Ding Shan had also taken a blow from the metal chain and her injuries were much more serious, this blow from the metal chain had broken her right arm and continued to mangle her waist into a bloody mess. Su Yu took this in and his heart shuddered.

The might of the blows that Ding Shan and Jade suffered were similar, one had their right arm struck while the other had their left arm struck. The only difference was that one had strange energy within her while the other did not.

Jade's left arm contained strange energy and even the blow from the metal chain had only broken the left arm, the injury was not that serious. As for Ding Shan, she did not have any strange energy and her right hand immediately became crippled as her waist was also mangled, fresh blood stained half her body as the wound continued to pump blood.

“Shan Shan!” Zhou Bi Rong continued to yell her name and wanted to help her stop the blood but the wound was simply too big and there was no way to stop it.

Su Yu quickly crouched down as he grabbed her right arm and began to transfer his strange energy which was in the form of qi into it, he then noticed that the left of her waist region had a gaping wound and a mangled mess could be seen within, her organs and intestines could also be made out.

His heart felt miserable as his body trembled, he immediately

understood that Ding Shan could not be saved.

If she had the strange energy within her body, with the increase in recuperative abilities caused by the strange energy together with the aid of his qi, there may have been a sliver of hope. However, Ding Shan did not have any strange energy within her.

Su Yu could not help but recall the scene where he had knocked the group of Gnomes unconscious. He had wanted to allow Ding Shan, Jade and the others to each kill a minimum of one Gnome and the result was that Ding Shan had not killed any. Who knew that such a short period of time had passed and what he feared had actually come to pass. If she had strange energy within her body, as long as her head or heart were not injured, other wounds no matter how serious would have a chance of recovery.

“Shan Shan..... Shan Shan!” Su Yu could clearly see from Ding Shan’s wound that she could not be saved and he could only help lessen the pain by transferring his qi to her and continually shouting her name.

Receiving the qi from Su Yu, Ding Shan’s eyes which were closing slowly trembled before widening.

“Shan Shan.” Zhou Bi Rong noticed that she had woken up and hurriedly called out to her. At this moment the rest of the group had crowded over and looking at Ding Shan’s dreadful state, the expressions on their faces were heavy.

“Rong Sis..... sister..... big brother.....” Ding Shan’s lips

trembled and with the help from Su Yu's strange energy, she could feel the pain within her body gradually reducing and her body seemed to become lighter and lighter. She was gradually losing control of her body and she mumbled: "I..... I seem..... I seem like I'm going to fly..... going to fly up....."

"Shan Shan....." Zhou Bi Rong had tears streaking down her face, since entering this forest, Ding Shan and her had relied on each other and had already formed an exceptional relationship. Looking at Ding Shan as she faced death with her heavy wounds but she could not do anything to help, this pain was simply indescribable.

"Big brother..... Brother....." Suddenly, Ding Shan's left hand moved as though she wanted to get up, Su Yu noticed this and hurriedly grabbed hold of her little hand as he said: "Big brother is here, Shan Shan....."

"Big brother..... Brother..... Shan..... Shan Shan wants to thank you..... This entire way..... you've always been carrying..... Shan Shan..... Shan Shan is everybody's..... inconvenience....." Surprisingly, in this moment, there was a serene expression on the little girl's face.

"No, no you aren't an inconvenience, everyone likes Shan Shan." Su Yu hurriedly spoke up.

"Shan Shan..... is tired..... Big brother..... Rong..... Rong sister..... You are all..... all good people..... Shan Shan..... really misses..... Mommy..... misses home....." Having said this, tears streamed out from Ding Shan's large eyes as her eyes gradually

closed.

Su Yu was sad as he gently rubbed her head and mumbled: “You will be able to get home..... Shan Shan, sleep well, once you’ve fallen asleep you will be back home.....”

Ding Shan’s eyes finally closed and her hand fell lifelessly to the ground. Two streaks of tears could be seen from her eyes and Zhou Bi Rong lay on her body as she cried pitifully.

Su Yu stood up in silence as he backed away, his fists were clenched tightly and his body was trembling. Ma Zi Ye, Lei Rui and Yuan Ni Ping were rubbing their already red eyes.

As for Jade, she felt a shiver run down her spine. If she had not listened to Su Yu and killed a Gnome thus gaining the strange energy, she would have been like Ding Shan and died here. In this moment, she finally understood that within this forest, strength was really essential for survival.

Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang did not really like Ding SHan and had always felt that she was a burden. When they really saw her die, they still felt sympathy and remained silent.

Qin Jia Gui walked over and softly said to Su Yu: “Continuing to stay here isn’t a good idea. This place makes one feel on edge, let’s hurry and bury her before leaving.”

Su Yu silently nodded as Qin Jia Gui immediately picked up a

metal spade from the ground and prepared to dig a hole to bury Ding Shan.

He had just sunk the metal spade into the ground when he suddenly became rigid, thereafter, Qin Jia Gui, Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye and the others all rigidly turned their heads.

Even Zhou Bi Rong who had lost her voice from miserably crying also stopped and lifted her head.

A sinister cold air could suddenly be felt on their backs.

Chapter 68: Single Eyed Zombie King

The group turned their heads as their bodies remained rigid, a chilliness could be felt on all their backs.

Following soft rustling noises, one, two, three.....

Three large zombies whose bodies were covered in metal chains had silently appeared at an area slightly over ten metres away.

Metal Chain Zombies, there were actually three of them.

What was more frightening was actually behind these three Metal Chain Zombies. There was a figure that was slowly emerging and it was a huge monster that was over three metres tall.

No one understood how this huge monster had appeared, by the time the group noticed it, they simply saw that it was continually becoming bigger from behind the three Metal Chain Zombies, finally halting its growth at around three metres, becoming a huge zombie.

This zombie was covered in green fur and the five sense organs like the mouth, nose and ear had all rotted away to become a lump of black holes, in the centre of its face there was a single eye.

This eye was as big as a fist and was currently whirling around, its body was also covered in metal chains but in contrast to the Metal Chain Zombie, its metal chains actually seemed to be within

its flesh or had grown out from its flesh to be exposed. From its belly region alone, over ten metal chains were hanging in front of it, frightening, sinister and strange were already insufficient to describe this huge green fur covered zombie.

Su Yu's 'Eye of Perception' activated and immediately the information regarding this zombie floated in his mind.

Name: Single Eyed Zombie King

Information: High tier within the zombie race, tier three beast soldier. Immense strength, frightening offensive abilities, strong defensive abilities, almost no weaknesses on its body. Only weakness is that it is rather slow due to its large figure and each time it appears, there were always be four Metal Chain Zombies travelling with it. The combination of the Single Eyed Zombie King and four Metal Chain Zombies can match the prowess of a tier three elite beast soldier.

Su Yu had a sharp gasp of cold air, he finally understood that the Metal Chain Zombie which he had just killed was actually one of the accompanying Metal Chain Zombies of this Single Eyed Zombie King. What was most frightening was that this Single Eyed Zombie King was actually a tier three beast soldier.

Even the Savage Bull Demon which was so immensely strong was only a tier two elite beast soldier. The Golden Goblin was also only a tier two commander beast soldier. This Single Eyed Zombie King actually exceeded the level of tier two and was actually a tier three beast soldier, there was no question that it would certainly be more powerful and fearsome.

“Run, if we wish to live we have to run towards that direction.” Su Yu’s mind was rapidly processing the information from the ‘Eye of Perception’ and the information stated that the Single Eyed Zombie King only had one weakness which was its speed. Its offensive and defensive capabilities could almost be said to be perfect.

Su Yu suddenly howled which woke the dazed group, thereafter he pointed at a direction past a slope at a forest, that area was covered in lush vegetation and the tall trees there were extremely dense.

After Su Yu’s mad howl, he was the first to run in that direction as he yelled: “Everyone, split up and run!”

A Single Eyed Zombie King which was a tier three beast soldier coupled with three Metal Chain Zombies which were tier two beast soldiers, such a force was immense and if they were to collide head on, there would be no question that their entire group would be wiped out, all dying tragic ends.

Su Yu’s roar caused the group to come to their senses, they had blind faith in Su Yu and this Singled Eyed Zombie King was huge, looking at it they felt shivers run down their spines and even if Su Yu did not yell, they would have come to the conclusion of fleeing as well. This was not a monster that they could match up against.

Zhou Bi Rong stood up as she released Ding Shan’s corpse, retrieving her pistol as she mutiple sounds rang out ‘Bang! Bang!

Bang!.....”. The bullets hit the metal chains on the zombie’s body making explosive noises, she was out of bullets and tossed her pistol aside. Her right hand stretched forth and black metal feathers seemed to cover it as three black claws also emerged. Zhou Bi Rong was not only a dark iron warrior but she had also unknowingly become a tier one dark iron warrior. This entire time she had used her pistol and with the group present, she had never showcased her abilities. She could use the pistol to kill the monsters and thus had not utilised the abilities her strange energy gave her.

Ding Shan’s death gave her a huge mental blow and she finally tossed away her pistol, wanting to use her strange energy to kill these monsters.

Pistols were simply useless against these zombies before them.

Jade, Lei Rui, Yuan Ni Ping, Ning Yan, Qin Jia Gui, Ma Zi Ye and the others heard Su Yu’s yell and were of a mind as they ran in the direction of the thick forest, ignoring the wild grass and branches in the way.

Behind them, the three Metal Chain Zombies had started moving and they opened their mouths to let out a hoarse roar, wielding their metal chains as they chased. The Single Eyed Zombie King, on the other hand, seemed laid-back as he took big strides and strolled towards the group.

“Quick, run! Do you want to die?” Zhou Bi Rong had just exposed the strange energy on her right hand when Su Yu suddenly turned to scold her, pulling her arm as they ran in the direction of the

group.

Zhou Bi Rong seemed to be at a loss and wanted to say something when Su Yu exclaimed: “Shan Shan wouldn’t wish for you to send yourself to death. Remember, live well and don’t pretend you’re capable!”

Earlier when Zhou Bi Rong had stood there without moving, she was prepared to use her strength to clash with the three Metal Chain Zombies which were rushing over. She was blinded by rage and had forgotten that if the zombies were so easy to handle, Su Yu would not have chosen to run.

In the blink of an eye, the three Metal Chain Zombies had already reached the wild grass and their speed was even faster than the people in the group.

“Alright! This is the place!” Su Yu suddenly shouted as he released Zhou Bi Rong before pouncing towards one of the Metal Chain Zombies.

Noticing Su Yu’s actions, the group which was currently running finally understood. Su Yu was not planning to flee but wanted to lure the zombies here and make use of the terrain to attack the zombies.

Ma Zi Ye was the quickest to notice this and her legs kicked the ground, using the thick vegetation and already darkening sky to hide and silently utilised the ‘Web of Metal’.

Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Zhang Zhong Mou and the others also understood Su Yu's intentions, they did not dare to brazenly attack the zombies head on but rather crouched down to hide, waiting for an opportunity to sneak attack. As for Jade and the few girls, they had really run far away, no one wanted to end up dying gruesomely like Ding Shan and with their current strength, even if they did a sneak attack it would be useless.

The group had rushed into the forest and listened to Su Yu as they split up, this caused the three chasing Metal Chain Zombies to split up in their pursuit and created the chance for Su Yu to pounce.

He did not have confidence clashing with three Metal Chain Zombies or that Single Eyed Zombie King, however, when faced with a single Metal Chain Zombie together with the experience and increase in strange energy he gained from recently killing one, he had over a ninety percent confidence to kill it.

Chapter 69: Ferocity Of The Zombie King

Regardless of strength or speed, this Metal Chain Zombie was very frightening and really deserved to be considered a tier two beast soldier. Although they did not have the exceptional nimbleness and leaping ability of the Gnome Riders, their bodies were covered in metal chains causing their defensive capabilities to be very strong.

Su Yu had already anticipated this. Within the group, besides himself, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Ma Zi Ye and the others were only at the tier one level, they did not have sufficient strange energy to break through the metals chains that covered the bodies of the Metal Chain Zombie to injure them.

They could certainly injure the Metal Chain Zombie if they attacked the few areas that were not covered like the eyes, however, wanting to do so was extremely difficult and the speed of the Metal Chain Zombie was not to be taken lightly.

Even if Su Yu did not feel that he was the only one capable to killing the Metal Chain Zombies, he would still follow his previous actions, ignoring the possible damage to his black scales and use the fastest speed to kill off these Metal Chain Zombies while the Zombie King was ambling over.

After killing these Metal Chain Zombies, if they really chose to flee their chances would greatly improve. Otherwise, with the speed of these Metal Chain Zombies, they would easily be caught and possibly suffer casualties.

Su Yu had rushed to the dense forest and saw that the Metal Chain Zombies had acted as he anticipated and split up to chase the group. Immediately, he released Zhou Bi Rong and turned, pouncing like a panther towards one of the Metal Chain Zombies.

This Metal Chain Zombie which was closest to them noticed Su Yu pouncing but was not frantic, its two hands wielded several metal chains to smash towards Su Yu. When faced with Su Yu's attack, it did not explicitly defend itself.

The metal chains covering its body were as tough as iron and usually allowed the Metal Chain Zombie to ignore its defense unless the attack was aimed for its weaknesses. However, Su Yu's blow was actually struck towards its chest which was where its defense was the most firm and the Metal Chain Zombie could not be bothered to block.

This was precisely the reaction that Su Yu was aiming for and the black scale covered arm landed on the chest of the zombie with a 'Deng!' but the Metal Chain Zombie was uninjured. Its mouth curled into a sinister smile as its two arms retracted and the metal chains swiftly flew towards the back of Su Yu's head.

Su Yu roared as he lowered his head, avoiding the metal chains. The black scales on his left arm raised and shot forth large amounts of white mist, like a boiler overflowing with steam, the emission of white mist created a frightening forward momentum and coupled with the high rotational force, this created an immense destructive power.

The Metal Chain Zombie howled as it realised that something

was amiss, Su Yu had actually rammed his body into it caused it to fly and collide with a large tree.

“Pa!”

The large tree immediately snapped and the chains on the chest of the zombie began to break off one by one emitting explosive ‘Pa! Pa! Pa!’ noises like the frying of beans.

This sound was especially crisp and thereafter the sounds of flesh and bone being grinded could be heard, making one’s goosebumps stand on end.

A single fist had struck, the ‘Rending Claw’ broke through the metal chains and pierced the chest, Su Yu roared as he continued past it, the ‘Rending Claw’ continued through the body and this Metal Chain Zombie was severed in two from its chest region, its body falling lifelessly to the ground. As for Su Yu, he was already rushing towards the second Metal Chain Zombie.

Although it was dim and one could only make out black silhouettes, Su Yu’s actions earlier had gotten the attention of the other zombies, especially the Single Eyed Zombie King which was still slowly making its way over. Its single eye suddenly widened as it let out an earth-shattering roar, within the roar it seemed that it was actually excited.

The crazy blow from Su Yu had made it excited, it had become a Single Eyed Zombie King from countless zombies and its thirst for battle had sunk into its bones. Earlier Su Yu and the others did not

seem to be able to take a single blow and the three Metal Chain Zombies would be sufficient to deal with them. As a result, it had been lazily moving along. Suddenly noticing that Su Yu was so ferocious, actually killing a Metal Chain Zombie in a single blow, hearing the sounds of the metal chain snapping and listening to the sound of flesh and bone being grinded down, the Single Eyed Zombie King became excited as it suddenly roared and leapt.

“Kaboom!”

A tree that was as thick as a bowl was immediately snapped in two, it actually landed within the dense forest in a single leap. The leap earlier had sent it forward by over ten metres.

Su Yu saw this from afar and had a sharp intake of air, the damned ‘Eye of Perception’ considered this slow? With that speed it would only need a few jumps to catch up to them. The situation was becoming dire.

Su Yu’s mind was racing and he pounced with all his might towards the Metal Chain Zombie by the side. The current situation was extremely dire and if the Single Eyed Zombie King caught up, it would be over for them.

The Metal Chain Zombie had been frightened by Su Yu’s earlier blow and seeing Su Yu pounce, it actually turned and fled in another direction.

Su Yu was becoming anxious when a shout could suddenly be heard from the wild grass nearby: “Web of Metal!” suddenly, Ma Zi

Ye appeared as her legs swept through the air and kicked the zombie's skull.

Ma Zi Ye had actually been lying in wait within the wild grass by the side and suddenly activated the 'Web of Metal' when the Metal Chain Zombie attempted to run. As it suddenly felt that its legs were bound by something on the ground causing it to be immobile, it wanted to look down but its head was already heavily struck by a blow.

“Bang!”

Although the strange energy within Ma Zi Ye's leg was frightening, when faced with the Metal Chain Zombie which was a tier two beast soldier, it could only cause it to lose focus and become giddy without injuring it in the slightest.

This was already sufficient as Su Yu pounced like a demon god, the 'Rending Claw' activated as white mist spewed forth, like a white rainbow passing through the sky, his blow smashed into the skull of the Metal Chain Zombie immediately after the kick from Ma Zi Ye landed.

“Pa! Pa! Pa! Crack!”

The metal chains had broke and the head had exploded, thereafter the frightening force caused the headless corpse of the zombie to fly and smash into a small tree nearby.

The Metal Chain Zombie fell to the ground and the black crystal within its body was absorbed by Su Yu. The strange energy in the form of qi within his left arm had already swelled and become extremely dense as it continually rushed at the 'door' within his left shoulder. The 'door' actually had signs of loosening up and it seemed that if his strange energy were to become slightly stronger, this 'door' would be flung open allowing him to enter an even stronger level.

Hope rose within Su Yu's heart, as long as he killed the final Metal Chain Zombie, he was sure that this 'door' would be flung open and he could possibly gain even stronger abilities. In that way, he would be able to battle with the Single Eyed Zombie King.

Just when hope seemed to fill his heart, a loud 'Kaboom!' could be heard behind him as the ground trembled. When he looked back, he could only see a three metre tall giant behind him. Its mouth that was a black hole was currently making strange excited howling noises and it stood there three metres from him.

"Roar!" Its two arms moved causing metal chains to wildly extend, in the blink of an eye, there were black chains everywhere flying towards him.

Su Yu explosively roared as his legs kicked to dodge while he activated his 'Rending Claw' to defend.

Chapter 70: Unable To Withstand A Single Blow, Dire Situation

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

Crisp sounds rang out as the metal chains struck the ‘Rending Claw’ one after the other causing sparks to fly everywhere, the rotational force of the ‘Rending Claw’ managed to block these metal chains and sent them flying but at the same time, Su Yu felt a sharp pain at his stomach region, there was a metal chain which had managed to strike him.

Fresh blood splattered as Su Yu miserably cried and tumbled away. This blow had caused a bloody line on his body which was half a centimetre deep.

The metal chain which the Single Eyed Zombie King had sent flying out had seen blood and it let out an excited roar as it jumped once again, seeming like a huge mountain.

Su Yu bore the pain and noticed a black figure descending as he hurriedly rolled to the side.

“Kaboom!”

It seemed like the ground was shaking and the mountains were trembling. Su Yu tumbled away and at the area where he had just been were two huge feet, if he had been slower to roll away those two feet would have landed on his body and the frightening force

behind the drop would surely have caused his organs to burst out.

This figure that descended from high above was clearly the Single Eyed Zombie King.

Su Yu tumbled but his left hand swung forward with the 'Rending Claw', smashing towards the pair of legs by his side.

On the other side, Ma Zi Ye had climbed back up as she silently made her way to another patch of wild grass before stomping the ground and activating the 'Web of Metal'.

She could see the fearsomeness of the Single Eyed Zombie King and even Su Yu could not withstand a single blow. Under these dire circumstances, Ma Zi Ye felt all the blood in her body boil, it seemed that she had the chance to save or help Su Yu and she was filled with excitement, her body filled with an inconceivable strength causing her strange energy to grow even stronger.

The strength of the strange energy seemed to have some connection to a person's emotions and the strength of Ma Zi Ye's strange energy within her right leg had increased to an unprecedentedly strong level.

Su Yu tumbled on the ground while sending forth the 'Rending Claw' smashing towards the legs of the Single Eyed Zombie King. Excitement and bloodthirst could be seen on the Single Eyed Zombie's King's face as it seemed unwilling to kill Su Yu too fast. It had planned to use its leg to step on Su Yu before slowly tearing his limbs off one by one, that would be more entertaining than killing

him instantly.

“Ah?” As the Single Eyed Zombie Kind attempted to lift its legs, it felt that something was amiss, its legs were actually tangled by black ropes which caused it to be unable to lift its leg.

This moment of pause was enough for the ‘Rending Claw’ of Su Yu to smash onto the ankle of the Single Eyed Zombie King.

“Chi! Chi!”

Sparks flew as huge metal chains appeared at the ankles of the Single Eyed Zombie King, blocking the ‘Rending Claw’.

The ‘Rending Claw’ which was rotating at high speed smashed into the metal chains causing sparks to explode out.

“Roar!” Su Yu howled as his left arm began to emit white mist, the ‘Rending Claw’ pressed onwards and he knew this was their only chance.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

The metal chains which were blocking the ‘Rending Claw’ began to break one after the other and it seemed like the ‘Rending Claw’ would actually be able to pierce through both legs of the Single Eyed Zombie King. If it lost both its legs, it would be like a tiger without its teeth.

Ma Zi Ye who hid in the wild grass knew that victory was hanging in the balance and stomped hard, utilising the full power of her 'Web of Metal'. No matter what, she had to hold the Single Eyed Zombie King's legs in place for Su Yu to land his blow.

"Roar!" The Single Eyed Zombie King also roared, this was the first time that it had felt danger and metal chains exploded out, suddenly allowing it to lift its legs.

"Pa! Pa! Pa!"

Like the sound of a tense bowstring snapping, a frightening matter occurred. The 'Web of Metal' which was snaring the Single Eyed Zombie King was actually forcefully pulled till it broke, Ma Zi Ye had exerted too much strength and fell limply to the ground, blood could be seen trickling out of her mouth.

Once its legs regained freedom, the Single Eyed Zombie King's other leg flew up and with a 'Bang!' kicked Su Yu's body.

Su Yu screamed miserably as his body flew out like a broken kite before heavily knocking into the trunk of a large tree and stopping, rebounding off and falling to the ground. This large tree was shaken by the frightening force from the impact and swayed, many leaves fell to the ground.

Su Yu lay on the ground, spitting blood out of his mouth. Over ten bones in his body had been broken and as he fell to the ground, his entire body seemed rigid and numb, the taste of blood was in

his throat as blood continually surged up from his abdomen.

Although his injuries were serious, Su Yu's mind was still clear. The strange energy which was in the form of qi in his left arm surged violently as streaks of it began to spread out into all areas of his body, it was a pity that the qi immediately returned to its original form once it left the left arm, unable to maintain itself as qi.

Although the effectiveness was far from that of qi, Su Yu's body which was under the nourishment of the strange energy was quickly recovering, using all his strength he managed to roll on the ground.

He had just rolled away when the Single Eyed Zombie King landed, its two arms waved as several metal chains wildly struck towards Su Yu who was rolling.

After the close shave earlier, the Single Eyed Zombie King no longer had a playful attitude but rather wildly shot its metal chains out like snakes as they flew towards Su Yu.

Su Yu violently howled, he had no way to dodge the endless number of metal chains coming towards him. Besides his left arm, the other areas of his body were too ordinary and with so many metal chains wildly flying over, in the blink of an eye he would be smashed into meat pulp.

Su Yu who was in mid tumble madly sent his 'Rending Claw' flying forward with the white mist being emitted.

Suddenly, “Kaboom! Kaboom!” the Single Eyed Zombie King was shocked and lifted his head to discover that wherever Su Yu tumbled past, the large trees would be severed and one of the trees was actually falling towards the Single Eyed Zombie King.

As for Su Yu, he kicked with both his legs, like a swimming fish as he stuck to the ground and slid, dodging the endless number of metal chains.

A dejected groan could be heard as the Single Eyed Zombie King was forced to stop and block the big tree which was smashing towards it. This pause was sufficient for Su Yu to get up and run madly in the direction of the shrubs ahead of him.

By the side, Ma Zi Ye hugged her chest as she gingerly stood up, she could see the roaring Single Eyed Zombie King jumping towards the shrubs and although she wanted to help Su Yu, her left leg was continually trembling and even standing was a difficulty.

The ‘Web of Metal’ had been forcefully broken and the rebound from it had caused frightening injuries. This was akin to Su Yu using his ‘Rending Claw’ and its high rotational speed was suddenly forcefully stopped by someone, causing it to come to a complete halt. The frightening rebound from this would be enough to make Su Yu’s left arm explode.

It was fortunate that the ‘Web of Metal’ of Ma Zi Ye did not have the destructive force of the ‘Rending Claw’ and the rebound she suffered was much lighter, even so, her left leg was incapacitated.

The Single Eyed Zombie King roared as it landed heavily within the shrubs, the forceful impact of its landing caused two huge footprints to be left in the dirt. As for Su Yu, he had already escaped from the shrubs and was crazily rushing to an area with a dense copse of trees.

Chapter 71: Life And Death In The Balance, The Final Gambit

The figure of the Single Eyed Zombie King was huge, it was three metres tall and the dense amount of large trees managed to impede its movements. As for Su Yu, he was like a fish in water as he jumped and rolled, suddenly turning as he stepped on the branches of a large tree, using the chance to kick and his body was like a carp jumping past the dragon gate* as he flew up, the 'Rending Claw' activated and white mist was emitted, the strong propulsion carried his body forward making him seem to glide as he sailed past multiple big trees, shooting towards the black figure.

[T/N* Getting a big break, in legend if the carp manages to jump past the dragon gate it becomes a dragon]

This black figure was precisely the third Metal Chain Zombie.

Earlier when Su Yu was wildly fleeing he had noticed this third Metal Chain Zombie and had immediately changed his direction, using all his strength to pounce towards it.

This Metal Chain Zombie was his final hope.

Su Yu's injuries were heavy and there were over ten bones in his body which had broken. The reason why he could still run was due to the strange energy as well as his staunch determination. In this moment, all the potential within him was released to the limit and after this blow he would no longer have any strength left. He even had a vague feeling that he would faint on the spot after this blow.

This third Metal Chain Zombie was currently engaged by Qin Jia Gui and Zhang Zhong Mou.

Qin Jia Gui and Zhang Zhong Mou were crouching by the side and when the Metal Chain Zombie had entered the region, Qin Jia Gui looked for the right opportunity to dash in. He used his 'Demolishing Iron Fist' to its maximum potential and heavily smashed towards the back of the head of the Metal Chain Zombie.

He had seen the effect of Su Yu's 'Rending Claw' on the chains of the Metal Chain Zombie's chest and felt that his 'Demolishing Iron Fist' was not much weaker than Su Yu's 'Rending Claw'. Now that he was attempting a sneak attack, he would surely be able to cause the head that was covered in metal chains to be destroyed.

Qin Jia Gui was very confident and this blow which contained all his strength actually managed to connect, his right fist heavily smashed into the back of the Metal Chain Zombie's head and let out a loud 'Bang!'.

Thereafter, Qin Jia Gui was shocked to see that the head of the Metal Chain Zombie did not explode like he expected, rather, his right arm was shocked to the point where a pain was coursing through and it seemed like it had been broken.

He had forgotten the fact that Su Yu was a tier two dark iron warrior and with his stronger strange energy he still needed to put forth his all to break through the metal chains. As for him, he was merely a tier one dark iron warrior and his strength was several

times weaker than Su Yu.

Self confidence was a good thing but Qin Jia Gui was overconfident and even his blow with everything behind it had no effect, the Metal Chain Zombie howled as its hand stretched forth.

“Chi!”

Qin Jia Gui’s body was pierced from the chest and out his back as blood splattered everywhere.

Qin Jia Gui miserably cried and at the same time, Su Yu howled as he kicked a branch, using all his strength to shoot it towards the Metal Chain Zombie. His appearance was twisted and seemed like a malicious spirit, this was his final blow and if it did not succeed, the Single Eyed Zombie King would catch up and they would all die here.

This blow carried the hopes of the entire group.

The Metal Chain Zombie had just pierced Qin Jia Gui’s body when it felt Su Yu’s incoming blow.

The scene of Su Yu killing the Metal Chain Zombies earlier had been noticed by this Metal Chain Zombie and when it saw Su Yu coming, it immediately lifted Qin Jia Gui’s body to use as a shield, hoping to block Su Yu’s frightening blow.

Su Yu saw this but had no other option, he could only let out a

fearsome roar, finished, everything was finished. His blow would turn Qin Jia Gui into meat pulp and he would then die helplessly to the Metal Chain Zombie, at the back the Single Eyed Zombie King was already in the air and rushing over.

Jade, Ning Yan, Zhang Zhong Mou, parents..... In this instant, these figures all flashed through his mind, it was over, finished.....

Suddenly, Zhang Zhong Mou who had half his face transformed to stone silently attacked, opening his mouth as though he wanted to shout something, both his hands stretched forth to grab the Metal Chain Zombie's arm which was covered in metal chains as he used all the force in his body to activate the 'Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser' and smashed down hard.

“Kaboom!”

The 'Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser' landed on the metal chains and Zhang Zhong Mou's forehead immediately split and began to bleed. Qin Jia Gui howled, in the moment between life and death he actually retracted his legs and kicked, kicking the chest of the Metal Chain Zombie and using the force from the impact, his body which was actually stuck to the arm was peeled off as he tumbled to the ground with blood spurting everywhere.

The pain made him groan as he instantly fainted, at the same time, the eyes of the Metal Chain Zombie widened, the change in circumstance made it unable to react. It had initially planned to use Qin Jia Gui to block Su Yu but did not expect that Qin Jia Gui would actually use his remaining strength to kick and dislodge

himself. Thereafter, The Metal Chain Zombie saw Su Yu's 'Rending Claw' flying over, forming an arm that was creating a long rainbow-like effect through steam and heavily smashing onto its head.

This attack contained all the strength within Su Yu and the strange energy which was in the form of qi had all flowed into the 'Rending Claw', the high rotational speed created a wind pressure that seemed to shock the eardrums.

“Crack! Pa! Pa!”

Explosive sounds rang out as the metal chains fell apart, the Metal Chain Zombie released a final howl, Su Yu stuck to its body as it fell, the 'Rending Claw' brushed past the area above its neck and the Metal Chain Zombie's head was crushed, disappearing in an instant.

The huge Metal Chain Zombie swayed for a while before the headless corpse fell to the ground and actually pressed down onto Zhang Zhong Mou.

Zhang Zhong Mou fell to the ground and panted, in this instant he had no more strength in his body, he had used everything within him to help Su Yu in his final blow.

Qin Jia Gui's body was pierced through and he had also used everything to kick and dislodge himself from the arm of the Metal Chain Zombie before falling heavily to the ground. This painful and frightening collision caused him to instantly faint, the hole in

his chest was bloody and one could actually see the fresh red organs within, it was a gruesome sight and with him fallen to the ground, he had lost all power to move and it was unknown whether he still lived.

Su Yu had used his all the strength within him and finally managed to kill the third Metal Chain Zombie. He fell to the ground and felt that his entire body was devoid of strength, the pain within his body made him feel like fainting.

“Kaboom!”

A loud noise rang out as the immense body of the Single Eyed Zombie King fell from the sky, it was only slightly slower than Su Yu and had finally arrived.

As Su Yu was lying on the ground and on the verge of fainting, a new energy suddenly surged into his left arm, the strange energy in the form of qi suddenly swelled and split, creating a frightening current that once again rushed to the ‘door’ located at his left shoulder.

Su Yu understood that this new energy had come from the black crystal of the Metal Chain Zombie which he had just killed.

Chapter 72: Tier Three Warrior

The strange energy in the form of qi within his left arm had initially been at the critical point and with the addition of this new energy, Su Yu immediately felt a ‘Kaboom!’ within his mind, as though a calm sea suddenly had tsunamis that were thousands of metres high, the ‘door’ which had always held his qi back had finally been broken with a ‘Kaboom!’.

The strange energy in the form of qi was like a surging tsunami which wildly went through the newly opened pathway and rushed towards the other areas of his body. Wherever it went, black scales would form on the surface of his body.

“Chi! Chi! Chi!” sounds continually resounded and almost at the same time, the Single Eyed Zombie King landed as it roared, lifting its leg as it heavily stepped onto Su Yu’s chest.

With the strength of the Single Eyed Zombie King, the frightening might behind this stomp from it could cause Su Yu’s chest to explode.

“Bang!”

Contrary to expectations, the Single Eyed Zombie King seemed to have step on a metal board and let out a dull sound, it looked down in shock to see that a layer of thick black scales was covering Su Yu’s chest, the black scales seemed to be forged from steel and was like an armour which actually protected Su Yu’s chest.

Su Yu who was lying on the ground currently had tons of information flashing through his mind. The strange energy was wildly swelling and surging through the other areas of his body, in the blink of an eye his chest was already filled with the strange energy as four 'doors' once again appeared on his body preventing the strange energy from continuing to his head, right arm, left and right leg. This caused his strange energy to only be able to flow between his chest and left arm.

The Single Eyed Zombie King stomped onto the black scales and was stunned as it roared, its metal chains were sent flying forth hoping to smash Su Yu's head in.

At this moment, Su Yu's left arm and chest were all covered in black scales but the other areas of his body were still flesh and blood and would not be able to withstand a single blow.

A computer program seemed to be within Su Yu's mind as information continued to flash, it reminded him that he had promoted to tier three dark iron warrior and he had to choose whether to raise the level of an original ability or comprehend a completely new one.

The current Su Yu already had four abilities, 'Eye of Perception', 'Rending Claw', 'Lizard's arm' and 'Fang Bullet Burst'. If he chose to comprehend a new ability, he would be able to gain the ability 'Shield Armour'. He also had the option to raise the level of one of his current abilities, for example, he could upgrade the 'Eye of Perception' to the 'Eye of Divinity'.

The 'Eye of Divinity' did not only have the abilities of the 'Eye of Perception' to gather information and data, it could also increase

his night vision and efficacy.

As for the 'Rending Claw', it could become something with an even more frightening destructive power 'Rending Storm', the 'Lizard's Arm' could become 'Lizard's Bestial Change' and the 'Fang Bullet Burst' could become 'Fang Bullet Cannon'.

Personally witnessing the Single Eyed Zombie King stepping on his chest while swinging its metal chains towards his head, Su Yu did not think too much and with a thought, he chose to upgrade the 'Rending Claw' to become 'Rending Storm'.

He had always been using the 'Rending Claw' and under these circumstances, he naturally chose to upgrade the ability which was most familiar to him, enabling him to utilise an even greater power.

At the same time Su Yu chose 'Rending Storm', the mysteries and principles behind the ability immediately filled his mind and he let out a roar as his left arm shot forward, activating the 'Rending Storm' which was upgraded from the 'Rending Claw'.

Black scales began to coalesce together as thick white mist was expelled out, this white mist continued to be spat out and was like a mist dragon, the great pressure from the rotational force actually created a frightening hurricane pillar of air which shrouded his left arm, even he did not understand what was happened as his left arm suddenly shot forward causing the metal chain which the Single Eyed Zombie King had swung down to instantly be swept within.

“What’s..... going on?” Su Yu shouted as his body was pulled by a frightening force as it rushed forward, his left arm heavily smashing into the belly of the Single Eyed Zombie King.

The strange energy in the form of qi within his body immediately gathered to his fist as a loud ‘Peng!’ could be heard, the Single Eyed Zombie King roared as the metal chains covering his belly were shattered and his immense body could not withstand this blow as it heavily flew away.

“Kaboom!”

The body of the Single Eyed Zombie King knocked into a large tree causing it to sway violently, this allowed the Single Eyed Zombie to come to a halt as it stared at Su Yu with its single eye, within its eyes there was actually shock and amazement.

The flesh on its belly region had been peeled off and an indistinct fist print could be seen there, the Single Eyed Zombie King had actually been injured.

Su Yu stood at his original position and stopped the ‘Rending Storm’. Dazedly staring at his left arm, he wondered what had happened earlier and even he was stunned.

The might of the ‘Rending Storm’ was so frightening and the first time Su Yu activated it, he actually lost control and the fist which actually managed to blindly land onto the Single Eyed Zombie King did not have all his force behind it but it had already

caused it to suffer injuries.

Zhang Zhong Mou managed to push the corpse of the Metal Chain Zombie away with some difficulty when he saw Su Yu's astonishing performance and could not hold it in as he shouted: "Good! Hurry and settle that monster!"

Su Yu stood there as he shook his head, trying to make himself come to his senses. Without question, he had become a tier three iron warrior, his left arm and chest were covered in a layer of black scales which were akin to metal and his 'Rending Claw' had improved to become 'Rending Storm', containing a vast amount of strange energy. As he felt the endless amounts of strange energy flowing within his left arm and chest, a frightening might seemed to be within his body and Su Yu felt that he needed to pour out what was on his mind, he really wanted to do battle.

Looking at the wound on its belly, the Single Eyed Zombie King stared blankly for a while before suddenly shaking its two arms and roaring at the sky, the metal chains on its body began to wildly dance and explosive sounds of crashing assailed the ear, its body hunched as it rushed towards Su Yu.

The Single Eyed Zombie King was truly enraged and was now using its true strength as it vowed to kill Su Yu.

Su Yu howled, he knew that he had finally promoted to a tier three dark iron warrior and had the ability to battle with the Single Eyed Zombie King.

“Rending Storm!” When faced with the charge of the Single Eyed Zombie King, Su Yu did not retreat but rather stood at his original position as he activated the ‘Rending Storm’. The black scales gathered together as the sounds of howling whistled, dense white mist was emitted and this white mist formed into a frightening white hurricane as it covered Su Yu’s left arm, from a glance it seemed that he was holding a miniature tornado.

Chapter 73: Slaying The Zombie King

Su Yu lifted his hand as he pounced towards the Singled Eyed Zombie King, the white tornado on his arm seemed to extend like a python which was dancing in the breeze, suddenly, the two arms of the Single Eyed Zombie King collided with the 'Rending Storm'.

As the arms of the Zombie King were covered in iron chains, an explosive force rattled Su Yu's left arm. This collision of force against force produced a dreadful ear-piercing noise. The vicious Rending Storm tore apart the iron chains in the blink of an eye, each and every inch of the chains were shattered when drawn into the white hurricane.

At this moment, Su Yu shouted and swung his left arm, an elongated white tornado that was almost whip-like lashed out.

"Pa Pa Pa" the explosive sounds continuously rang out. Countless metal fragments from the iron chains were sucked into the white hurricane and were shot out in rapid succession at the Single Eyed Zombie King.

After going through the white tornado's high speed vortex, these metal chain fragments that were being shot out were not much different from the rounds of a machine gun as a shower of bullets could be seen everywhere. The Single Eyed Zombie King roared as it was caught off guard, the exposed flesh on it's body showed embedded metal fragments. Immediately, bloody holes appeared after the flesh was lacerated.

The Single Eyed Zombie King was extremely furious from the pain, it had a crazed expression as it lifted both arms. Suddenly brandishing its countless iron chains, these chains were interwoven and formed a metal net which flew towards Su Yu's head. With the force behind these iron chains, as long as an iron chain even brushed Su Yu, the tragic result would be shattered bones and minced meat.

At this time, Su Yu slightly regretted not choosing to comprehend the new ability 'Shield Armor'. The name itself suggested some sort of protective ability and at this moment, Su Yu could only choose to retreat quickly and dodge. Only his left arm and torso were covered in steel-like black scales, the other parts were still of human flesh and he did not dare to take a hit.

Su Yu quickly retreated while the Single Eyed Zombie King gave chase, stamping the floor and producing 'Thump' earthquake-like sounds. Its body was like a heavy tank that was currently in a frenzied collision course.

Su Yu stretched out his left arm to block.

"Bang!"

Su Yu and the Single Eyed Zombie King struck each other, just purely relying on brute force, Su Yu was no match for the Zombie King as he was immediately flung far away.

"Bang!"

Su Yu hurriedly stretched out his left arm to grab onto the branch of a large tree. Only by doing this did he stop himself from flying any further. Eyeing his own left arm, Su Yu was not very satisfied.

According to logic, by upgrading the Rending Claw to Rending Storm, this Rending Storm ought to be much stronger. When Su Yu was tier two, just relying on the Rending Claw's full strength, it could already damage the Single Eyed Zombie King's iron chains on it's body. Now that Su Yu had risen to tier three and the Rending Claw had been upgraded to Rending Storm. Su Yu's Rending Storm unexpectedly only managed to wreck the other party's protective iron chains, in terms of power it was actually not much stronger than the Rending Claw.

How could this be? This should not be happening.

Su Yu muttered to himself irresolutely, seeing that the activation of the Rending Storm produced thick fumes of white mist, just the denseness of the white mist showed that it had way more mist than the Rending Claw. Yet it did not show terrifying strength, perhaps there were other ways of using this technique?

While Su Yu was muttering to himself, the Single Eyed Zombie King stretched out both arms, it's body was wrapped with iron chains from head to toe as it pounced again. Spreading out both arms and attempting to crush Su Yu's body from both sides, wanting to squash him into a heap of minced meat.

"There's no reason for this, there's no reason for this" Su Yu continued to mumbled as he continued to retreat backwards. Upon

becoming a tier three warrior, his movement speed had greatly increased, easily dodging the Single Eyed Zombie King's attacks.

“ROAR!” as Su Yu continued to evade, the Single Eyed Zombie King roared out towards the skies. Claspings both hands together with iron chains coiled around, resulting in an enormous hammer made of iron chains that was smashing down from up above. A weighty onslaught was brought down.

Su Yu lifted his head to see the enormous hammer made of iron chains slamming down as his lips continued to murmur when suddenly he seemed to think of something. He shouted loudly: “There's no reason for this.... RENDING....” lifting up his left arm, he actually blocked the iron chained hammer. This time the black scales on the left arm continued to shift upwards as per normal, except that no white mist was being spewed out. Looking at this, it actually resembled the recently comprehended Rending Claw, seemingly a bit strange.

“Clang!”

The iron chained hammer came down, smashing onto Su Yu's left arm, the terrifying force immediately caused Su Yu's body to produce a brittle “Ka Cha” sound. Both legs went soft as he suddenly knelt on the ground, at the same time the monstrous force was pushing and pressuring downwards, the limit of bearing this was finally reached when all of a sudden an abrupt and explosive force came bursting forth.

Su Yu roared towards the skies: “STORM!” Clutching onto the iron chained hammer, the ‘Rending Claw’ suddenly spewed out

surging and violent white steam that was charging out towards the atmosphere like an explosive “Wu Wu” sounds of a flute could be heard. In a split second, a second formidable force then exploded out, forming an intense white storm vortex that continued up towards the heavens.

The Single Eyed Zombie King gaped as it made a mournful howl, the iron chained hammer together with both arms were sucked into the the white storm vortex in a split second. Each and every inch was thoroughly disintegrated, it was more powerful than any other meat grinder on Earth. The Single Eyed Zombie King quickly retreated backwards but both hands were already grinded into lumps of mushy meat.

Su Yu laughed wildly as he stood up as he took the initiative to attack the frantic and tumbling Single Eyed Zombie King that was retreating. A fist heavily smashed towards its chest area.

“RENDING.... STORM!” Su Yu hollered. Smashing outwards, the white vapors once again exploded out and formed a terrifying storm vortex, bringing about a destructive rending force as a dangerous force erupted out. The Single Eyed Zombie King shouted as it looked on helplessly as bits and pieces of its chest was ripped apart and mixed with the fragmented iron chains which exploded out in all directions. It was as if a time bomb had just detonated from within its chest, suddenly it’s whole body started shattering into small pieces before it finally burst out. Finally, the white storm became a vortex of flesh, beginning from the torso area.

The final outcries of the Single Eyed Zombie King finally sounded

out as the skull flew into the distance. When the flesh vortex finally dispersed, what remained on the ground was the Single Eyed Zombie King's two large legs, broken arms and the head that had flew away. Its upper torso had totally disappeared.

This is the true Rending Storm, a monstrous rending force that erupts out to form a violent vortex that could warp and twist everything, even steel would be no exception.

“I did not expect the Rending Storm technique to have so many variations in its usage.” While Su Yu was holding his own left arm, he was astonished as he stared blankly at the Single Eyed Zombie King's corpse on the ground. Seeing the twinkling and dazzling black crystal hovering in the air which quickly flew into his left arm, he felt a new and powerful energy bubbling forth within his body.

The Single Eyed Zombie King was a tier three beast soldier, the energy of the crystal within it's body was tremendous, it was comparable to four or five Metal Chain Zombies. Su Yu felt the strange energy within his body surging violently as it charged outwards to attack the other chokepoints.

Chapter 74: Mentally And Physically Exhausted

It was a pity that the four points were sealed, preventing the strange energy from flowing into the head, right arm, left and right legs. The right arm's chokepoint actually did not even budge. Although this strange energy was violent and powerful, with regards to the choke point, it was like a dragonfly trying to shake a gigantic pillar.

Su Yu could vaguely understand upon evolving that each and every increase in tier would definitely become harder and harder.

Although the strange energy within his body was surging and experiencing an unprecedented amount of power, Su Yu's mind was actually feeling rather exhausted. He only wanted to collapse and sit down. After everything that had just happened a moment ago, beginning with the appearance of Single Eyed Zombie King and the other monsters till now, although the entire process was less than a minute, the dangerous events that occurred were truly hard to describe.

Su Yu was utterly mentally exhausted, unhurriedly leaning on a large tree by the side, beside the corpse of the Single Eyed Zombie King. He only wanted to slowly sit down.

However in his heart he was concerned about the safety of the others, this allowed him to prop himself up with great difficulty as he swayed while he walked to the side of the collapsed Qin Jia Gui. Although his body had been pierced through, he had not died which meant that the strange energy residing in his body was

currently at work. The two terrible bloody holes from the front and back were already being staunched. It was currently being patched up at a speed that the naked eye could see.

Su Yu's disastrous injuries were simply incomparable. There were at least ten or more bones within his body that had fractured, however, upon evolving into a tier three dark iron warrior, the strange energy started to gather at the wounded areas, there was absolutely no need for worry as it began to heal unconsciously.

"Jade! Lei Rui!" Su Yu saw that Qin Jia Gui was fine, he let out a big breath as he fell and sat by Qin Jia Gui's side, leaning against a tree as he called out these two names. He simply could not muster any more strength. Zhang Zhong Mou also fumbled about as he walked towards Su Yu while calling him out.

Zhang Zhong Mou did not not receive any wounds, at this moment the forest was gloomy and shrouded in darkness. He could only faintly see indistinct shadows and being afraid that everyone had really strayed off, Zhang Zhong Mou could only use his voice to shout out.

"Everything is already fine, everyone quickly come over, we are over here. Hey! Everyone come back!"

Zhang Zhong Mou continuously hollered out and soon sounds of rustling could be heard. Zhang Zhong Mou got a huge fright as he turned his head, it was actually Ma Zi Ye who limped over.

"Whew!" Ma Zi Ye exclaimed after seeing Su Yu, Zhang Zhong

Mou and the corpse remains of the Single Eyed Zombie King. Having a weight off her mind, she let out another long breath as she slowly sat on the floor. All the things that had occurred recently caused her mental state to tighten and it was only now that she finally relaxed as a wave of fatigue hit her.

After Zhang Zhong Mou's calls, all the people who had scattered in different directions started to come out one after another. Originally, Su Yu had everyone rush to this area not to make them scatter and run away but rather, it was for him to use to surrounding terrain to quickly wipe out the zombies. Jade and the others were all rather quick-witted as they relied on the darkness to stealthily find a random underbrush to hide in. They did not dare to escape any further in case they really got lost. Just the thought of being alone and wandering about in this large frightening forest simply gave one the shudders.

Although this large forest was teeming with terrible creatures that were out for blood, fortunately there seemed to be no poisonous insects, snakes, etc. If there were, one could not imagine their prospects.

There was a huge difference between this terrifying forest and the ones from their previous world. There were many things that disregarded their own conventional reasoning and knowledge.

Upon seeing that everyone has returned, Su Yu who was leaning at the side decided to rouse himself as he tousled his own hair before saying: "Old Mou, is there water? Let me have a sip."

"No problem.... Eh?" Zhang Zhong Mou was about to retrieve the

items from the large food bag when he remembered that he left all the large bags of food at an area with dense vegetation at the outskirts of the forest, at the top of a slope.

“Su Yu, are you alright, just now things were really scary.” Jade asked as her face appeared to be trembling.

“Be at ease, everything has been taken care off by Su Yu, with him around, there will be no problems.” Zhang Zhong Mou said with a pleased expression after seeing Su Yu’s prowess, he felt that his own face had some sort of luster.

Jade was surprised as she reevaluated Su Yu, afterwards she muttered while clenching her fists and said: “This won’t do, I, this old woman need to work harder since this little squirt has already become so formidable. In the future I can’t bully him anymore, no way, I must become even more powerful than him. His mother actually entrusted me to take care of him, if I don’t become stronger does that mean he will instead take care of me? No way, no way.”

Su Yu ignored Jade’s ramblings as he had his hand over Zhang Zhong Mou’s shoulder and got him to support Su Yu while he walked away. While passing by Jade. Su Yu waved his hands and lazily said: “ Jade, you are rambling on again, be careful that you won’t be able to marry during this lifetime. By then don’t count on me hah.”

Jade’s face became red with anger as she thought of giving a sarcastic repartee, but realize that everyone was already leaving as she quickly chased up with them.

Upon exiting this area of dense vegetation, everyone carried their large bags filled with food that were lying on the slope. Luckily nothing out of the ordinary happened. Su Yu seemed to have lost all strength as he tumbled while he sat down, Zhang Zhong Mou quickly took out a bottle of mineral water from the bag and tossed it over to Su Yu.

Su Yu finished the whole bottle in one shot, before wiping his mouth and letting out a long breath. His heart was feeling much more comfortable.

Although he had leveled up from the battle just now, he felt mentally and physically exhausted, this sort of awful feeling was similar to dying from thirst, simply peculiar. Only after the water had reached his stomach did he finally managed to catch his breath.

Zhang Zhong Mou took out another bottle of water and had a few mouths before taking out another pack of cigarettes and said: "Have a smoke." As he looked towards Su Yu, Li Dong, Zhang Shi Chang and the others while throwing them each a stick.

He brought with him quite a few packets of cigarettes thus he was rather generous with giving out cigarettes.

Putting a cigarette to his mouth and taking a puff before helping to light up Su Yu's cigarette. Afterwards he sat on the grass by Su Yu's side and looked up to the skies before taking another puff and said: "Damn it, this night is truly not peaceful at all."

Ma Zi Ye was biting her instant noodles while occasionally swallowing her own saliva, her face showed a satisfied expression.

Zhang Zhong Mou saw this and made a long sigh: “What is happiness ah... actually happiness is like a cat eating fish, dog eating meat, little missy Ma Zi Ye eating instant noodles.”

Ma Zi Ye stared at him and said: “Go and die.” Afterwards she did not bother about him and his loquacious antics.

Qin Jia Gui sustained heavy injuries and was carried on the back by Zhao Shi Chang and was now put down on the floor, lying down. He remained unconscious as before and everyone else was silent as they sat or lay down. The experience from before was simply too terrifying, it was like a nightmare and everyone still had lingering fears.

Yuan Ni Ping propped up Qin Jia Gui’s head by using her thighs as she tightly held onto Qin Jia Gui’s hands. Her whole body was still faintly trembling, she was really afraid and could not imagine if anything had happened to Qin Jia Gui.

Seeing the corpse of Ding Shan in the vicinity and seeing the corpses strewn all over the floor, everyone was mentally and physically exhausted.

Li Dong stared blankly at the food bags on the floor and murmured: “If everyone rationed their food properly, these foodstuff will be able to last us about twenty days... however

what's the use of this. We won't be able to even make it past twenty days ah.... You have all seen for yourself, the monsters that appear are getting even more formidable, we.... everyone is going to die soon!"

At this moment, Li Dong gave a kick and kicked one large bag of food flying away. He had a mocking expression and said: "Treating all these foodstuff as treasures, in the end having food had no meaning, we are all still going to die. Even you Su Yu, you are no exception."

Suddenly, Li Dong had a rather frantic expression as he ran up to Su Yu while shouting, at this very moment, Su Yu had a bad feeling.

Chapter 75: Lost Food

Su Yu glanced at him without saying a word, he knew that what Li Dong said was a reality and in the earlier battle, if it was not for luck, he would have died here and the group would have perished as well.

In this forest, one could not always rely on luck, luck would run out sooner or later.

“Then what do you propose? Could it be that you’re asking us to head back to the school? Hiding there and relying on this food which will last for about twenty days? Thereafter we shall all wait for death?” Zhang Zhong Mou shouted at Li Dong.

Li Dong suddenly had a strange smile on his face as he replied: “This idea isn’t too bad, at least we will live for an additional twenty over days. I can find a girl to accompany me and engage in carnal pleasures, we could still live a carefree lifestyle for a short period of time, isn’t that right? Wouldn’t that be much better than constantly travelling in this endless forest where we could lose our lives at any time?”

Li Dong was very forthright, Lei Rui and the other girls were blushing and Ma Zi Ye coldly snapped: “Useless, such a weak man.”

“Weak your a**, this fellow does not wish to die before having enjoyed life, could it be that you don’t feel that way? Why are you pretending? Is my suggestion really that bad? Everyone can go

back to the school and be together with the one they like. I don't wish to die before tasting a lady's charms. Ma Zi Ye, could it be that you don't wish to taste what a man is like?"

"Shut up!" Ma Zi Ye was so angry that her face had turned red, however, she still looked towards Su Yu in her agitation. She suddenly had a thought, compared to continuing to look for the remote possibility of life within this terrifying forest, why not just give up and return to school. If she could really be together with Su Yu.....

Suddenly, her face became red and after she shouted 'Shut up!' she actually kept quiet.

Li Dong, you believe that the monsters we're encountering are getting stronger and stronger and have lost confidence, however, have you thought of this before? Our strengths are also progressively increasing, how could you lose confidence so quickly? Even if we head back to the school, it wouldn't be of much use. Do you feel that there wouldn't be stronger monsters at the school? I believe that you guys should remember that when we left the school, there were only Lesser Goblins nearby. However, when we returned, there were Gnomes and even the more powerful Gnome Riders....."

"Even if we head back now, I feel that monsters that aren't any inferior could be present in the school. We no longer have any way back, no matter where we go within this forest, it will always be dangerous and frightening..... however....."

As Su Yu said this, he slowly got up and looked towards the sky as

he earnestly continued: “I’ve been thinking that since we have appeared here, there must be a reason. As long as we persevere, we will definitely find an exit. No matter what, this world simply cannot be just an endless forest. As long as we persevere, we will definitely walk out of this forest.”

Li Dong hollered back: “The problem is that we could be dead even before we find the exit.”

Su Yu looked to him and responded: “Compared the the myriad of students who died on the first day, we’ve already lived for six more days than them. We’ve already gained so much on them, what are you unsatisfied about? If you want to continue believing that returning to the school is safe, then go ahead and head back. However, you will be going alone. I believe that you would die even before reaching the school.”

This was the first time that Su Yu had spoken such sharp and unkind words, he had been forced to do so. This Li Dong was simply inciting unrest and swaying the confidence of the group, if he did not do this, he was afraid that an even bigger mess would be created.

Having been glared at intently by Su Yu as he said this, Li Dong was rigid and as he thought of being alone in this terrifying forest, his entire body trembled as his legs grew weak causing him to fall to the ground, his face looked dispirited and it was an ashen grey colour.

Although Su Yu had just rebuked Li Dong, Li Dong’s words made him think of the students of the school and Lin Shi, he wondered if

they had chosen to remain at the school or venture into the depths of the forest, looking for an exit and hope.

As long as they steeled their hearts and ate the flesh from the monsters together with the vegetation in the forest, although the process would be frightening, they would not starve to death. If they went deep into the forest they would suffer heavy casualties and if they chose to defend at the school, as long as the monsters attacking the school were not too fearsome they would have a chance to continue living.

The students they had abandoned at the school were a gnawing pain in their hearts, these few days they had not dared to think or face this reality.

Everyone hoped that Lin Shi would be able to help the people from the school persevere, if they did manage to find the exit, they would still have the hope of coming back and bringing them out. Because of this mentality, after walking a certain distance they would always leave an obvious marking, preparing for the situation where they would require to return to the school.

The reason why they had left the school and entered the forest, food was part of the reason but another part was that the group firmly believed that this forest was not endless and if one continued walking in a certain direction, they would surely be able to walk out of this forest. Also, one could not possibly just stay forever at the school to defend it, they wanted to leave this forest and return to their familiar world, they missed their parents, relatives and friends.....

Although the group were suspicious if the forest before them belonged to their original world, until the final moment their hearts would hold on to that last hope and yearning.

Humans, they require hope at times to continue living on.

“Su..... Yu is correct.....” Suddenly, a weak voice could be heard from the other side.

The group looked over in the direction of the voice and Yuan Ni Ping excitedly shouted: “Jia Gui, you’re woken up?”

Qin Jia Gui gently lifted his head, although the injuries he had suffered were quite severe, the strange energy within him was robust and he had finally gotten past the crucial line between life and death, swiftly coming to his senses.

“We..... no longer have any way back..... We can only continue forward..... There may be a sliver of hope..... If we don’t persevere to the end, how would we know..... That there isn’t a chance? These food..... Is sufficient to last us for close to a month..... staying in this forest..... Only death would await us.....”

Qin Jia Gui had just spoken when Lei Rui suddenly cried shrilly as she stood up.

The group was shocked and they looked unhappily at her.

“What’s wrong?” Su Yu questioned.

Lei Rui pointed at the bags filled with food on the ground and shouted: “It’s wrong, the numbers are wrong. I remember secretly counting before, there should be thirty two big bags. Now..... now there are only twenty six remaining, we’ve lost six of them.”

The group were dazed, no one had counted the exact amount of bags and it was only with the reminder from Lei Rui that they noticed that it did seem like there were fewer bags of food.

“Really?” Zhao Shi Chang immediately stood up with an expression of shock as he looked at Lei Rui.

Lei Rui nodded as she said with certainty: “I won’t mess up on the numbers, how could there suddenly be lesser bags? Could they have been taken by other monsters? All the monsters we’ve met along the way don’t seem to be interested in the food we eat.”

Hearing Lei Rui’s analysis, Su Yu suddenly shouted: “Could there be other people?”

“Other people?” The group felt shivers in their heart as they exchanged glances.

“That’s right, it could be possible that when we entered the dense forest, other people walked by this area. Their numbers must be quite small, possibly only one or two of them such that they could only take away six bags of food. It’s already night..... Who would

dare to haphazardly run in the forest?” Hearing Su Yu’s idea, Lei Rui immediately analysed the possibilities.

Chapter 76: New Tier Three Dark Iron Warrior

Su Yu recalled that if his 'Eye of Perception' were promoted to the 'Eye of Divinity', this 'Eye of Divinity' would give him night vision and with such an ability, would it not be easy for him to move about at night?

If they ate sparingly, each bag of food could last them one day. Losing six bags of food meant that they had lost six days worth of food and everyone felt depressed.

Zhao Shi Chang's expression was heavy as he said: "If the bags were really taken by people, who were these people? They actually dare to travel in the night? Would they return? Or could it be that it wasn't people who took the bags but rather monsters who did so?"

Li Dong spoke up: "They have already taken the food, why would they return? I feel that it's a group who are like us and trying to find their way out of this forest. However, their numbers are few or have quite a number but are already carrying a lot of food and happened to walk past this area, seeing the floor which was littered with food, they took what they were able to and left. We have no idea which direction they went and our surroundings are pitch black, there's simply no way to chase. Forget it, everyone let's just treat it as our misfortune. No, we should thank heavens that we still have twenty six bags, if they were all stolen, haha, then we would really be finished."

The group thought of this and felt shudders go down their spines,

their situation was intense back then and they had all run into the dense forest on the other side without time to take their food with them. They did not expect that their food would actually be found by someone and fortunately only six bags were taken by the other party.

Li Dong said this as he reached into his big bag and took out two packets of food which he stuffed into his pockets as he mumbled: “It seems that leaving all the food within the big bags is dangerous, as a precaution we should carry some on our bodies.”

“We’ve lost six bags of food, it seems that we have to apportion out the remaining food once again.” Zhou Hua Kang had a bitter smile, although they had lost six bags of food, they group had been through a night of trouble and fright, they were all fatigued and had not thought much about this. Asking the group to leave this place right now was not realistic, not to mention Qin Jia Gui’s injuries, the group were all very tired and the surroundings were pitch black. They did not dare to take this risk as most of them laid on the ground to rest while a few of them took turns to keep watch.

After an unknown amount of time, Su Yu who was half asleep was suddenly shocked awake by an exclamation.

Su Yu’s reaction speed was godly and he was seated in an instant, his eyes were apprehensive as the others who were half asleep also were shocked awake by the exclamation.

The exclamation was from Zhao Shi Chang, it was his turn to keep watch and he was currently standing with his right fist

transformed, a bone blade was extended from it as he sternly faced forward.

Below the slope not far away, there were the soft sounds of footsteps and Zhou Shi Chang had heard this as he exclaimed: “Who’s there!”, his main aim to wake up the people of the group.

Su Yu stood up as he walked to Zhao Shi Chang’s side before staring blankly.

From the wild grass below the slope two figures could be seen, two people had actually walked out.

The sounds of footsteps were precisely caused by them.

The two people saw the group on the slope and seemed shocked before they began to converse in english, Su Yu frowned and could barely make out that the other party were telling them not to panic and that they were not bad people.

By time time, Ma Zi Ye, Jade, Zhang Zhong Mou and the others had all woken up.

Although Su Yu was a university student, his english was rather poor and had only barely made some sense of what was said. He did not know how to converse properly in english and looked towards Ma Zi Ye as he said: “Ask them to stop there.”

He remembered that Ma Zi Ye was from the foreign language

class and her spoken english should be decent.

Indeed, Ma Zi Ye spoke in fluent english and the two people who had appeared suddenly stopped.

These two people were quite cooperative and had immediately stopped. One of the two actually laughed as he waved two of his hands, seeming to signal that they were surrendering, also signifying that they had no ill intentions.

Su Yu looked back at Jade and the others: "You guys stay here." thereafter went forward with Zhao Shi Chang, Ma Zi Ye, Zhang Zhong Mou and a few others.

Su Yu was most afraid that if these two people harboured ill intentions and suddenly attacked, with Jade, Lei Rui and the others abilities they would easily be compromised. He had thus instructed for them to stop before going forward to meet them. Even if the other party had ill intentions he would not be afraid.

Walking closer, Su Yu was able to quickly recognise that these two people were indeed foreigners.

Their school actually had two foreigners who taught foreign languages but their ages were rather old. Within this forest, this was their first contact with foreigners.

The two people before them were a male and a female, they were tall with the male being about 1.84 metres and the female being

about 1.75 metres. Compared to Su Yu and the group, this male and female pair gave them a feeling of pressure.

This male had a beard on his face, deep eyes and a high nose with disheveled long black hair, his clothes were tattered and cut a sorry figure, there were bloodstains on his clothing and the thick smell of blood filled the air. Standing there, he seemed like a javelin and naturally released a sinister cold aura.

The female had blond hair and jade-coloured eyes, compared to Jade and Ning Yan who were girls from the east, her skin was white and coarse, typical of a white lady from the west. Although her body was dirty and cut quite a sorry figure, she stood there with poise and her face had a look of preparedness as she stared at Su Yu and the few others who were approaching.

This male and female were clearly in their thirties.

Su Yu walked closer as he silently activated the 'Eye of Perception'.

Doing so, his heart began to beat faster as he felt astonished.

Based on the information from the 'Eye of Perception', the tall and well-built male before them was actually a tier three dark iron warrior and the female beside him was a tier two dark iron warrior. It was no wonder that they were so courageous and able to move about at night.

Su Yu's mind churned at a high speed but he did not realise that while he was inspecting the two people, on the back of the male's right hand there was a faint light that was being released that could be barely seen by the naked eye. Thereafter, the information of the few people also entered into the mind of this well-built male before he turned to measure Su Yu.

The current Su Yu was also a tier three dark iron warrior.

As for Ma Zi Ye, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and the few others, they were still tier one dark iron warriors and the male did not really care about them.

“Ask who are they and how did they come to this place.” Zhang Zhong Mou said to Ma Zi Ye, he was like Su Yu and did not really know how to converse in english.

Ma Zi Ye spoke in english to ask the questions and a friendly smile emerged on the male's face as he spoke.

Su Yu's spoken english was bad but he was still able to barely understand some of what was said. The male had introduced himself as York and the female by his side was his wife Jennifer, they were temporarily living in a cave nearby and had heard the ruckus outside, causing them to silently come over to look.

Su Yu heard this and laughed: “Those six bags of food were taken by them and they have returned to continue taking the other bags of food.”

Chapter 77: Sneak Attack

Ma Zi Ye also came to this realization. It was true, back when they were battling with the Single Eyed Zombie King, the clamor they made was quite loud and the two people had probably followed them and saw the chance as they silently stole six bags of food. By their estimates, Su Yu and the others were probably dead and had returned to take the remaining food but did not expect to meet with Su Yu and the others.

After analysing the situation, the information that they were living in a cave not far away was quite believable.

Ma Zi Ye had spoken her piece and the expressions on the faces of the foreigners seemed unnatural as York hurriedly explained: “Sorry, I thought that you guys had perished and these food were ownerless. Since all of you are alright, I can return the food to all of you.”

Who knew that York would actually say such nice things? The group was dazed, Su Yu did not mind losing the six bags of food and if they could use them to gain two strong people to join their group, this would surely be a beneficial exchange. It was only a question of whether these two foreigners were dependable. Why were they living in a cave and not trying to find an exit out of this forest?

These were all uncertainties but if they wanted to find out it would certainly be quite easy, thinking of this, Su Yu informed Ma Zi Ye of his intentions and allowed her to translate.

“Why were you guys living in the cave but not trying to get out of the forest? Are there other people in the cave besides the two of you? Are you willing to follow us to try and find a way out of this forest? We’re currently looking for an exit, hoping to leave this area.”

York heard Ma Zi Ye’s questions and immediately smiled as he answered: “Willing, of course we’re willing. There’s only the two of us and the forest is simply too dangerous. We don’t dare to recklessly run about and could only stay in this area. We’re more familiar with this area and there aren’t too many strong monsters here. We’ve always been waiting for other groups and being able to meet you is simply wonderful.”

Jennifer who was by his side also smiled, as though she approved of joining Su Yu’s group.

Ma Zi Ye heard their words and also smiled. She had a faint feeling that this couple was not that simple, otherwise, they would not dare to run around at night. She was afraid that their strengths could even exceed her own.

After a simple discussion, this couple appeared very amiable, making Ma Zi Ye and the others relax their guard against them as they brought them up the slope and introduced Lei Rui, Jade and the others to them.

This couple seemed very friendly as they smiled and nodded at each person, however, no one noticed that on the back of York’s hand, a faint flashing light could barely be seen, inspecting the information of each person. When he noticed that besides Su Yu,

there were no other people who were strong, to the extent that there were some who had not even reached tier one, York's face which was covered with a beard seemed to become even more happy.

“How long have the two of you been in this forest?” Su Yu suddenly asked.

Ma Zi Ye swiftly translated it into english and repeated the words.

York stared blankly before turning his head to look at Ma Zi Ye and finally showing a bitter smile: “It's almost been a month, every day seems like living in hell and we are people who have been forsaken by god.”

“This place isn't safe, everyone follow us. Let's go to our cave and rest, that area is much better.” Jennifer continued with a face full of warmth.

“Alright, have you guys been staying in that cave for almost a month? Is there an area there to take a bath?” Jade's english was rather good and hurriedly spoke in english to ask a few questions.

Jennifer seemed stunned as her eyes wandered before answering: “There is a stream by the side which allows us to bathe.”

Jade shouted in glee but when Su Yu heard these words, his heart shivered as his eyes moved slightly and glanced at the couple.

Their bodies had the thick smell of blood and sweat, much thicker than the ones on their body. If there was really a stream by their cave which allowed them to bathe, why would the smell be so strong? It was clear that her words were merely lies to Jade, the question was, why would she lie? The only reason would be that she was afraid the group would not follow them to the cave and had thus replied in this manner saying that there was a stream by the cave which would allow them to take a bath. To Jade and the girls, an area that could allow them to bathe was a very tempting proposition.

Su Yu had just thought of this when Lei Rui suddenly whispered from the side: “Su Yu.” before walking beside him and continuing: “Su Yu, this female foreigner must be lying, look at her, it’s clear that she hasn’t taken a bath for days. She claims that there is a stream by the cave that we can bathe in, that must be a lie.”

Su Yu looked at Lei Rui and praised in his heart that she was quick witted. The two foreigners clearly did not understand mandarin, although they could see Lei Rui and Su Yu conversing, they did not know what the two were discussing about.

Su Yu had a smile on his face as he nodded his head in a friendly manner towards them. He did not leak an ounce of suspicion on his face as he softly said: “Let’s be careful, I don’t know why they’re lying but..... it seems that we can’t trust these two people.”

Su Yu looked at the floor which was covered with bags of food and thought that these two people must have plans. If the couple wanted to mount a sneak attack on them, could it be for these

food?

No, they were normal people. They should know that by joining the group, everyone would have a better chance of finding an exit. Otherwise, even if they killed the entire group and obtained all the food, merely eating without doing anything else the food would surely deplete. In that case, what were they thinking? Why would Jennifer lie to Jade, did they have any ill intentions?

Su Yu continued to contemplate on this matter, he was unsure if the couple had any ill intentions but his wariness of them had increased. Jade was elated as she picked up the bags from the floor and shouted: “Everyone let’s go, there’s a place for us to bathe.”

Su Yu noticed a happy expression flash across the couple’s face and his mind churned before saying: “It’s already too dark, let’s wait for morning before heading over.”

Jade was a bit unhappy but when Su Yu glanced at her, she did not say anything and placed the bag of food back onto the floor.

Jennifer noticed that they had placed the bags back to the ground and asked amazedly in english: “What’s wrong? Not going anymore?”

Ma Zi Ye spoke in english to explain: “The sky is already dark, let’s wait for tomorrow morning before heading over. It seems like the sky will become bright soon anyway.”

“Oh.....” Jennifer answered but a disappointed expression could be seen on her face as York laughed: “This is fine, everyone let’s wait for morning.” As he said this, he walked towards Su Yu and continued: “Do the few of you have cigarettes? Since coming to this forest, the thing that’s hardest to beat is that there aren’t cigarettes.”

Ma Zi Ye who was by the side helped translate what he said.

“I have some.” Zhang Zhong Mou took a packet of cigarettes from his bosom and threw it to him: “For you.” His bag of food still had other cigarettes and he was not that distressed over a packet of cigarettes.

York took a stick out and placed it in his mouth, a look of elation appeared on his face as he walked up to Su Yu and asked: “Do you have a lighter?”

Although Su Yu’s english was rather bad, he could understand simple words and had understood what York was asking. He shook his head and was about to reply when York suddenly smashed towards the back of Su Yu’s head.

The distance between the two was rather close and York had suddenly attacked, the people in the surroundings did not understand what was going on and York’s fist had already reached the back of Su Yu’s head.

This fist was simply too fast and as York threw his fist out, thick black fur covered his hand, by the time it reached the back of Su

Yu's head, his right arm had already thoroughly swelled into a big arm, this huge arm was covered in black fur, each strand of hair was like steel thorns, from a glance it seemed like an enormous cactus.

Chapter 78: The Strong Collide

York had suddenly attacked and his huge right arm that had a striking resemblance to a enormous cactus came sweeping down and almost smacked into the back of Su Yu's head while Su Yu suddenly lifted his left arm as black scales appeared and staved off the attack.

York's sneak attack was sudden and no one had expected it besides Su Yu. He was not frantic as he blocked and said a word in english 'Why?'.

Su Yu did not understand why York had attacked, was it really just for food?

He had long been wary of York and the attack from the other party had been within his expectations.

"I only desire to kill all of you!" York's reply was like a roar as the strange arm that was like a cactus suddenly emitted 'Chi Chi Chi' noises, the steel thorns actually shot outwards.

This was unexpected and Su Yu was immediately struck head on, his entire body felt stinging pain and at over ten of the steel thorns had struck him. At the same time, Su Yu had activated his 'Rending Storm'.

The arms of both parties were still tangled together when York suddenly activated his ability, sending forth the steel thorns. Su Yu was unable to avoid them but he managed to activate the 'Rending

Storm' which York also fully received.

Black scales gathered together and a frightening force exploded forth, the qi waves swirled and erupted, forming a vortex of vapors, York wildly yelled as the Rending Storm heavily smashed into his chest.

Although York's chest was already covered in a layer of uneven dark green swollen skin which was covered in steel thorns, it could not defend against the tearing might of the frightening 'Rending Storm'.

Bits and pieces of the dark green swollen skin was torn open as fresh blood spewed forth like a fountain, the huge body of York was sent flying away.

“Bang!”

York groaned as he tumbled to the ground. Su Yu stepped forward and wanted to pounce but suddenly felt that the areas which had been pierced were painful and swollen, to the extent that they even felt numb. It felt as though if he were to move, the piercing pain would act up and the steel thorns within his body would actually move inwards to invade into the other areas of his body.

The two people were tier three dark iron warriors and in a single exchange, both parties had been rendered severely injured. The people all around were dazed and had not recovered from their shock when Jennifer suddenly pounced, her left leg flying as it went towards Su Yu.

Amongst the people in the group, only Su Yu could threaten them. As long as they got rid of Su Yu, the others would not be a problem.

Jennifer was already a tier two dark iron warrior, she saw that her husband and Su Yu had actually severely injured each other and in her shock, she did not think further and pounced towards Su Yu.

Her strange energy was within her left leg and while this kick was in motion, it transformed and was covered in feathers that were like steel thorns. This very leg had evolved to possess one short and three long hooks, simply monster-like claws. Once this claw was sent forth, it could dig out Su Yu's heart and gouge out his lungs.

“NO!” York held his ruptured chest as he struggled to lift his head, suddenly yelling as he tried to stop Jennifer because he knew how frightening Su Yu was.

It was too late, Su Yu saw Jennifer's strange claw striking towards him and in this life and death situation, he bore through the piercing pain as his left arm stretched forth as the ‘Fang Bullet Burst’ shot forth.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

Jennifer who was pouncing over miserably shrieked, she had been struck and several bloody holes appeared on her body. As for

Su Yu, he had already strode forward and his 'Rending Storm' shot forward, from top to bottom, the black scale covered hand had dense white mist being emitted causing this fist to seem like a cannon as it swiped down.

“Bang!”

A fist smashed heavily onto Jennifer's left leg which was flying over, a second propulsion of white mist was emitted as the 'Rending Storm' exploded out, 'Crack! Crack!' sounds of bone breaking and flesh being grinded could be heard as the transformed left leg of Jennifer was turned into mincemeat.

“Aaahhh!” Jennifer hugged the remains of her left leg as she screamed and fell to the ground, tossing and turning as she almost fainted from the pain.

At this moment, the others finally reacted as they ran forward.

York saw that Jennifer's left leg was thoroughly minced and roared, ignored the frightening hole in his chest as he climbed up and pounced towards Su Yu.

“No, York, run!” Jennifer who was lying on the ground in pain managed to see York pouncing towards Su Yu as she suddenly yelled, she finally knew how strong Su Yu was and York's chest was almost totally pierced through, he simply had no way to go against Su Yu.

“No, Jennifer, you run! The kids need you!” York wildly screamed as all the strange energy within his body surged, the

ruptured chest healed at a speed which the naked eye could see, his right arm grew even bigger and suddenly shot forth innumerable amounts of steel thorns.

“Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu!” sounds continually rang out.

Su Yu’s chest was already covered in black scales, he wanted to dodge but did not have the strength to do so, he could only use his left arm to shield his face while his body was once again pierced by the steel thorns. Besides the areas which were protected by the black scales, all the other areas were pierced through and the numb and pain grew more intense, as he stood there it was difficult for him to move a single muscle.

“Die!” York roared as he rushed up, his frightening right arm had steel thorns on it again and was like a hedgehog as it struck towards Su Yu.

Ma Zi Ye who was by the side noticed that Su Yu’s situation was perilous and immediately activated the ‘Web of Metal’. It was too slow and Su Yu still received a damaging blow, the two people flew away as they tumbled on the ground.

Su Yu wanted to attack with the ‘Rending Storm’ to mince York’s body but his entire body had lost all feeling and he could not even lift his arm.

York realised that his steel thorns had finally taken effect and had a ferocious smile as he lifted his right arm, attempting to hammer down on Su Yu’s head.

“Stop! Otherwise I’ll kill her!” Ma Zi Ye suddenly shouted in english before the sound of Jennifer miserably shrieking could be heard.

York trembled as he turned back, Ma Zi Ye was currently stepping on Jennifer’s face with her right foot and if Ma Zi Ye exerted force with this right leg that contained strange energy, a single stomp would cause the head to explode.

“Don’t care about me! The kids!” Jennifer screamed.

York’s expression changed as he wildly yelled, actually lifting his right arm again and smashed towards Su Yu’s head.

This moment of pause was sufficient for Zhang Zhong Mou and Zhao Shi Chang to pounce silently from two sides.

Zhang Zhong Mou’s “Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser” heavily smashed into York’s back.

“Bang!”

York groaned as he fell headfirst past Su Yu.

Zhao Shi Chang’s bone knife swept and also landed on York’s back at almost the same instant, he then dragged it as blood splattered out, an inch deep frightening wound was carved onto

York's back.

Ma Zi Ye saw that York actually ignored Jennifer's safety and shouted in her anger as she stomped, although she did not stomp on Jennifer's head she thoroughly broke her left arm.

Chapter 79: Removing The Needles

Jennifer let out a miserable cry, her strange energy was all within her left leg and now that the entire left leg had been shredded by Su Yu, all the strange energy in her body could be said to be crippled. Her left leg was losing large amounts of blood and her left arm was broken as she screamed before fainting.

York's turned around and he angrily howled, turning back he saw Jennifer's motionless body and also Ma Zi Ye, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang as well as Zhou Bi Rong and the others had all gathered round and he suddenly understood that with his grave injuries there was no way to win.

After a wild shout, contrary to the group's expectations, he actually left Jennifer lying there and frantically ran away.

The group was dumbfounded and wanted to chase but even though York was injured, his speed of running was much faster than them and had swiftly disappeared into the distance.

"Don't chase....." Su Yu who was on the ground struggled to shout, all the strange energy within his body was surging and colliding, the steel thorns that were in his body were slowly being forced out.

"Help me..... Remove the needles....." Su Yu used all his energy to say these few words.

Zhang Zhong Mou and the others came to their senses as they

helped Su Yu remove his clothing. As for Su Yu, the black scales on his body receded and the group could clearly see his skin, black dots were constantly emerging out from all over his body, these were the steel thorns that had been pushed out of his body with his strange energy, it was only that the speed of pushing the thorns out with merely his strange energy was too slow.

Zhang Zhong Mou wanted to help Su Yu but was pushed aside by Ma Zi Ye.

“Move aside, let me help him. You males are so clumsy it simply won’t do.” Ma Zi Ye said this as she crouched beside him, taking a torchlight out as she carefully shone it on Su Yu’s body, whenever she saw a steel needle she would stretch forth her delicate hand as she earnestly helped Su Yu pluck the black steel needles out.

Each time a steel thorn was plucked, Su Yu would sigh in relief as the pain on his face gradually lessened.

After over ten of the steel needles had been plucked out, Su Yu slowly regained his breath and said: “It’s okay, let me do the rest on my own.”

Ma Zi Ye was distracted as she said: “What’s the matter? Isn’t it the same if I help you?”

Su Yu’s face was seemed constipated and Zhang Zhong Mou immediately understood as he shouted: “The remaining steel thorns are all at his lower body, lady Ma would you like to assist?”

“Ah?” Ma Zi Ye was stunned and her face immediately became beet red as she viciously glared at Zhang Zhong Mou before passing the torchlight over to Su Yu as she turned and said: “Zhang Zhong Mou you scoundrel.”

“Lady instant noodles, I’m only saying the facts. Eh, when did I become a scoundrel? The real scoundrel already became a gentleman.” Zhang Zhong Mou felt wronged.

Su Yu turned around as he used the torchlight to slowly pull out the steel thorns, these steel thorns had all pierced into a place where the sun doesn’t shine, making him scold York in his heart again and again.

Jade was looking at Su Yu then at Ma Zi Ye as she suddenly spoke up: “Ma Zi Ye, you like Su Yu, right?” Her words were very direct and Su Yu who was in the midst of plucking a steel thorn from his family jewels suddenly trembled, groaning as he pulled the needle out, causing him to moan in pain. Jade this lass, her words were really shocking.

Ma Zi Ye was also stunned and glanced at Jade before laughing: “What are you talking about, I like everyone. I treat you in the same way too.” Laughing as she awkwardly changed the topic.

Su Yu removed the final needle from his body and took a sigh of relief as he stood up.

“Are you okay?” Zhang Zhong Mou asked with concern.

Su Yu sighed: “Oh yea, did that Jennifer run away as well?”

Ma Zi Ye lightly harrumphed as she pointed: “Isn’t she still lying there? Seems like she has fainted. This couple is simply too abominable.”

Su Yu walked over as he suddenly stretched his hand and placed it under Jennifer’s nose, paused for a while before continuing: “She’s dead.”

Ma Zi Ye made a sound “Ah!” as she hurriedly rushed over to check, indeed she was no longer breathing.

Su Yu looking at Jennifer’s shredded left leg and said: “She lost too much blood and died, it seems that if the area where the strange energy is stored gets destroyed, the strange energy will disappear as well, otherwise, she would not have died so easily.

Towards Jennifer’s death she did not have too much sympathy, after all, the couple had brought this to themselves.

“I don’t understand, why would this couple suddenly attack us? Could it be they wanted to take our food? I really don’t understand, normally people would know that if we form teams, the safety would be much greater than with merely two people. Why would they act like this?”

Su Yu did not understand and Zhao Shi Chang offered: “Maybe those two fellows were crazy, no, killing maniacs and they did not

need a reason to kill people. Su Yu, don't try to understand it, we will never be able to understand maniacs."

Su Yu shook his head, Qin Jia Gui who was lying on the ground held his chest as he slowly got up, after such a long amount of time, the wound at his chest region had continually been healing and at this moment he already had the ability to climb up on his own.

"The most important question is..... that York..... his wife has been killed by us, will he come back to take revenge? A gun in the open is easy to dodge but an arrow in the dark is difficult to guard against, in this current environment, if he wishes to mount a sneak attack on us it would be too easy. There are too many opportunities. Su Yu, if I haven't guessed wrong, that York should be at the same tier as you right."

Su Yu answered: "He is a tier three dark iron warrior, his wife Jennifer is a tier two dark iron warrior. If he really wishes to seek revenge, it would indeed be troublesome."

Li Dong immediately stood up as he said: "If that's the case, what are we waiting for? We should take the chance while he is still heavily injured to get rid of all possible threats."

Zhou Hua Kang hurriedly nodded as he agreed.

Zhang Zhong Mou continued: "That's right, if he lives we perish, damn, we had good intentions to invite them to join our group. If they weren't willing it was fine but they actually tried to kill us.

These two fellows, even if they died they would deserve it. Foreigners are really such stupid swines.”

Ma Zi Ye glared at him as she reprimanded: “You’re too discriminatory, there are good foreigners as well. In our country there are also bad people, like you an old cigarette addict, didn’t you sneak into our group even though you were a bad person.”

Zhang Zhong Mou looked over at Ma Zi Ye in dismay.

Su Yu tousled his hair and spoke up: “The sky will be bright soon, let’s wait till morning before continuing our discussion.” He was already suspecting that York had a stronger form of the ‘Eye of Perception’ like the ‘Eye of Divinity’, otherwise, he would not be able to move around so easily at night and actually choose to attack him first. York must have seen the data on everyone and realised that he was the only tier three dark iron warrior, once he took care of Su Yu the others would not be difficult to deal with.

Chapter 80: Burying Corpses

These two foreigners had not been able to tell that he had long become suspicious of them and when York had slowly made his way closer, Su Yu had prepared himself and was watching York's every movement. This was why the sneak attack had not been successful but who knew that York's ability would actually be sending forth steel thorns to strike, without any way to predict this he had no way to completely dodge. The only weakness of this attack was that its might was rather small and although the steel thorns affected Su Yu, it was insufficient to kill him.

It was currently the period of time just before dawn where it was darkest and if York really had the 'Eye of Divinity' which allowed him to see in the night, thus if the group attempted to chase him now they would likely incur losses.

Qin Jia Gui responded: "That's right, everyone let's sit together and pay attention. The sky is going to be bright soon and we can discuss what our next course of action is. That York is simple too dangerous to us, does everyone remember the incident with the Bloody Ape Dog? That monster with a low intellect had followed us and threatened us, as for this York he is a human who is much smarter than a Bloody Ape Dog, his threat is really too great."

The group piled the food in the centre before sitting around it with their backs facing to the food as they sternly kept watch. They were very wary and afraid that he would suddenly appear and attack them.

Su Yu's prowess were known by the group but he had fallen to

York's attack. As for York, he was still able to escape from the group with his severe injuries and this further accentuated how frightening York was.

With this amount of time, Su Yu, Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and the others dug a big hole in the ground.

Zhou Bi Rong personally lifted Ding Shan's corpse as she slowly placed her within the hole, sadly sighing as she used her hands to lift the dirt beside the hole and slowly covered her corpse.

"Sleep well, maybe when you wake up everything will be back to normal, everything that is happening now is merely a bad dream....." Zhou Bi Rong softly muttered.

Su Yu looked at Jennifer's corpse which was by the side and thought for awhile before going over to lift the corpse and placed it beside Ding Shan's body.

"Whether it be friend or foe, after death..... hopefully the two of you can peacefully get along....." Su Yu silently said this in his heart before lifting the metal spade and began to cover the hole with the dirt by the side.

Zhang Zhong Mou, Zhao Shi Chang and the others also went forward to help, swiftly burying the bodies of Ding Shan and Jennifer.

Once everything was settled, Su Yu had just sat on the ground

when he suddenly had a feeling and leapt up, without a word he suddenly pounced as the black scales appeared on his left arm.

Su Yu pounced towards the wild grass which was emitting rustling sounds and the others noticed a black figure that suddenly turned and ran away frantically.

“It’s York!” Li Dong shouted in alarm.

Ma Zi Ye also stood up and said: “Who would have thought that he would leave and return so quickly?”

Qin Jia Gui held his chest as he shouted with all his strength: “Su Yu..... Don’t chase.....”

Su Yu’s blow missed and the ‘Rending Storm’ smashed into the wild grass, “whoosh” as a large patch of grass was destroyed. Looking at the figure of York which was swiftly running away, Su Yu wanted to chase but suddenly heard Qin Jia Gui’s hoarse shout. This made Su Yu come to his senses as he immediately turned to return.

Within this dark and dense forest, it was not a certainty that he would be able to catch up to York. Even if he did, it was difficult to say if he would win and most importantly, if Su Yu were to get lost, matters would become very disastrous.

Qin Jia Gui had thought of this and immediately called out to Su Yu, Su Yu also thought of this and did not continue chasing.

Su Yu walked back as he recalled the image of York's eyes which were filled with hatred, those eyes were staring at Su Yu and made shivers go down his spine.

"It's too dangerous, this fellow must be gotten rid of." Su Yu suddenly stopped before the group as he tousled his hair, there was no expression on his face and in the darkness his expression even seemed sinister.

"If we don't kill him, we'll die to him sooner or later." Su Yu's voice was heavy and it coldly rang in the ears of all the people. In the darkness, his eyes seemed to glow with a strange light, like those of a hungry wolf.

Whether it be for himself or the group before him, the threat that York posed to them was simply too large and for self preservation, they had to kill York, otherwise, he would kill off all of them.

Zhang Zhong Mou suddenly shouted: "The problem is, this York isn't a fool, he won't just wait patiently for us to kill him. How are we going to find him?"

Qin Jia Gui held his chest as he coughed before continuing: "That's right, earlier Su Yu had already scared him away. I'm afraid he's going to be even more cautious from now on..... this fellow saw the death of his own wife and her burial but was able to watch silently by the side without making a sound, this type of person is simply too frightening."

York was actually a tier three dark iron warrior like Su Yu and Qin Jia Gui felt shivers down his spine, he was merely a tier one dark iron warrior and would not be able to withstand a single blow from York.

Su Yu touched the Earth Spikes Ring on his finger as he mumbled: “It’s a pity..... If I could activate the ‘Earth Spikes Assault’, York would not have been able to get away.”

“If we can’t find him, could it be that we have to wait for him to come find us?” Zhou Shi Chang thought of this problem and his voice became weird.

Su Yu scratched his head while Qin Jia Gui held his chest, the group all sunk into deep thought.

Suddenly, Lei Rui spoke up: “Everyone still remembers that the couple mentioned they were living in a cave not far away right?”

Zhang Zhong Mou scoffed: “Those two fellows were lying to us, class president Lei, you couldn’t have believed them right?”

“Zhang Zhong Mou.” Lei Rui glanced over at him as she continued: “If they were not staying nearby, where did the six bags of food they took go? The second time they actually returned empty handed.”

Zhang Zhong Mou was stunned as he rubbed his face: “This..... maybe.....”

Su Yu immediately understood as he looked at Lei Rui with a smile on his face: “That’s right, Lei Rui’s deduction isn’t wrong, this couple must be living nearby. In that case, we will search the surrounding area when it gets bright. Who knows what we may find.”

Qin Jia Gui acknowledged: “This York is simply too great a threat, if we don’t get rid of this threat, we may all slowly die in his hands.”

As the group discussed, the sky gradually grew bright as a new dawn finally arrived.

Many events occurred this night and as the surroundings gradually became brighter, the group finally let out a sigh of relief. Qin Jia Gui’s girlfriend Yuan Ni Ping wanted to help him stand up but he gently pushed her away as he got up on his own. Gently moving his arms, the heavy injuries he had suffered were mostly healed and as he rubbed his chest, a satisfied expression appeared on Qin Jia Gui’s face. With this rate of recovery, he would be fully recovered in barely a day.

Chapter 81: Looking For York

“Su Yu, which direction should we go to look for York? Ma Zi Ye lifted two bags off the floor as she asked Su Yu.

A contemplative look appeared on Su Yu’s face as his eyes gazed toward the direction where York had run away to the previous night, by the side Zhou Bi Rong suddenly spoke up: “I have a way to follow the rough trail he used to run away.”

Zhao Shi Chang’s eyes lit up as he hurriedly said: “For real?”

Zhou Bi Rong glanced at him: “Do you think that I’m a policewoman for nothing?”

The death of Ding Shan the previous night had been a big blow to Zhou Bi Rong but she did not become depressed, rather, she returned to being a strong and resourceful police woman. Because of the need to look after Ding Shan, Zhou Bi Ring had always stood by her side to protect her and did not speak out much, thus not attracting too much attention.

As a policewoman, Zhou Bi Rong was actually rather strong willed and with the death of Ding Shan, she was extremely angry to the extent that she actually wanted to fight the three Metal chains Zombies. Although she was rash, this still required plenty of courage.

At this moment she had walked forward and scouted the path based on the trail left behind as York fled. To Su Yu and the others

there may not be anything special about the route but to her seasoned police eyes, there was a clear distinction.

“Over here, I’ll lead the way.” Zhou Bi Rong only looked around for a bit before pointing out a direction and she began to lead the group.

Zhang Zhong Mou could not hold his curiosity as he asked: “Big police officer Zhou, can you really tell? I don’t see any difference. Are police officers really so awesome?” simply suspicious.

Zhou Bi Rong heard his words and a look of reminiscing appeared on her face: “My dad has been a criminal investigator for tens of years, since young I’ve learnt many skills and tricks from him and my ambition is actually to become an outstanding criminal investigator. It’s a pity that reality and dreams are far apart, I only became a policewoman.....” A faint smile was on her face as she said with confidence: “Rest easy, I still have some confidence in my tracking skills.”

Su Yu looked at Zhou Bi Rong who was before him and suddenly understood, when Ding Shan was alive, the motherly instincts in Zhou Bi Rong had been ignited, making her seem like a gentle and caring mother. Now that Ding Shan was dead, she had returned to her usual self as a shrewd policewoman, she exuded enthusiasm and her entire person seemed to have changed.

Woman really were the most fickle-minded creatures in the world.

Su Yu thought to himself as he picked up two bags and followed Zhou Bi Rong. The others also set out as Yuan Ni Ping attempted to support Qin Jia Gui but he shook his head and expressed that he could walk alone.

“If we meet with that York, Su Yu you will be in-charge of blocking him while Ma Zi Ye you will take the chance to use the ‘Web of Metal’ to trap him. By then we will all rush forward and even if he has three heads and six arms, he will still be unable to manage.”

Along the way, the group swiftly came up with a plan to deal with York. Only Su Yu could tangle with York and Ma Zi Ye only needed to easily use her ‘Web of Metal’ to trap York, thereafter, Zhao Shi Chang, Zhang Zhong Mou and the others would act together together with Su Yu, even if York was powerful he would still die.

Zhou Bi Rong brought the group along the path which York had fled in and after walking for half a mile, she suddenly stopped as she carefully inspected the ground before turning left.

“This York suddenly made a turn here, I think his dwelling should be close by.” Zhou Bi Rong had a stern face as she whispered.

Hearing Zhou Bi Rong say this, Qin Jia Gui hurriedly added: “Everyone be careful, this York is a tier three dark iron warrior and is as strong as Su Yu.”

Zhao Shi Chang continued: “If we really do meet with that fellow, Qin Jia Gui, you stay behind with the rest of the females. Don’t go forward, leave him to us to handle.”

Qin Jia Gui nodded, the injuries on his body had not fully healed and although he could walk, he did not have enough strength to attack.

The group increased their vigilance as they constantly looked around in all directions, hoping to spot York early on and get rid of this threat.

Suddenly, Zhou Bi Rong who was leading the way stopped as she whispered: “Look.”

Su Yu who was following closely behind her shifted the leaves before him and saw that roughly thirty odd metres away, between the large trees, there was a cave that was about as tall as a man. Before the cave were humongous boulders which almost covered the entirety of the cave.

Even Su Yu who did not have much experience could clearly sense that the wild grass before the cave had been trodden on by man or animal and the markings were evident.

Zhou Bi Rong continued in a low voice: “The ground here is disheveled and the traces of York lead to that area, the cave that is currently covered by boulders should be where they’re temporarily living.”

Zhou Bi Rong shared her deduction while Zhang Zhong Mou refuted: “Police officer Zhou, this may not be the case, who knows? Maybe that cave is the dwelling of some frightening monster.”

Zhou Bi Rong frowned while Jade suddenly said in a curious voice: “Everyone look, that pile of stones seems quite interesting.”

Su Yu turned to look and noticed that ten odd metres away, there was a pile of stones and this pile of stones was clearly not natural but rather man-made.

“Eh? It is indeed quite weird.” Zhang Zhong Mou also felt curiously as he silently headed to the pile of rocks. Jade followed closely behind and the few of them neared the pile of rocks. There was a strange smell in the air as they stretched their heads to see, they noticed that the stone pile was hollow and was piled over one metre high in a circular shape. It was only that the floor within was littered with filthy objects.

“Pooh!” Jade saw it and immediately retreated as she made more spitting noises, revealing a gloomy face.

Su Yu frowned as he softly asked: “What’s the matter?”

Zhang Zhong Mou had a bitter smile as he softly answered: “Damn, so unlucky, this stone pile is a temporary toilet, there’s only feces within.”

“The feces of humans.” Zhang Zhong Mou added.

As Zhang Zhong Mou said this, the group took a deep breath. It was almost confirmed that the couple York and Jennifer had stayed within the cave and this temporary toilet was made by them.

Since it was confirmed, Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye, Zhao Shi Chang, Zhou Bi Rong and the others continued silently through the wild grass as they ventured forth.

Based on the plan, once York was discovered, Su Yu would rush up to tangle with him while Ma Zi Ye would activate the 'Web of Metal' to trap him, thereafter the group would work together to kill him.

The group were worried of startling York, causing him to run and thus softened their footsteps as they silently made their way forward, reaching within twenty metres of the cave in no time.

“Aaahhh!” Suddenly Zhao Shi Chang yelled, things happened too suddenly and the group was shocked, at the same time, Su Yu groaned as he used his left arm to block protect his head.

“Bang!”

A sharp log flew and knocked into Su Yu's chest, the force was immense and immediately sent him sprawling.

It was fortunate that Su Yu had already circulated his strange

energy and black scales were protecting his chest area. Otherwise, the sharp log that had knocked into him, with its speed and power, would have easily pierced through his chest. If he did not die he would also have been severely injured.

“What’s going on?” Qin Jia Gui, Jade, Li Dong and the few others who were hiding in the forest behind stood up in shock.

Chapter 82: Trap Mechanism

“Traps! There are traps laid down, everyone be careful!” At this moment, Zhou Bi Rong could not be bothered about alerting York as she loudly shouting while rolling on the ground, her right hand immediately transforming as steel feathers covered it and three claws like that of an eagle extended forth, grabbing a tree branch by the side as she pulled and used the rebound to fly forward.

“Shooo, Shooo”

Several sharpened wooden spikes shot out from the ground and nearly pierced Zhou Bi Rong.

Su Yu and the others who were concealing themselves and silently approaching the cave did not expect that there would actually be trap mechanisms hidden within the wild grass, although the traps were simple, they were unguarded against it and had suffered. Zhao Shi Chang had suffered the worst, his foot was pierced by a sharpened wooden spike and he was rolling on the ground, howling in pain.

Su Yu had just been sent flying by a wooden log and was dizzy as he hurriedly rolled to the side, he wanted to climb back up but Zhou Bi Rong who was by the side saw this and shouted: “Su Yu, don’t! Danger!”

Her words were barely spoken when Su Yu heard a ‘Kaboom!’, the floor underneath him had suddenly collapsed.

Everything happened too quickly and Su Yu was shocked as he groaned, black scales appeared on his left arm as he heavily punched to the side, his left hand easily entered the dirt allowing him to stabilise his falling body. Looking down, he realised that someone had dug a two to three metre deep hole which was filled with sharpened wooden stakes, if he had fallen down, he would surely have been pierced to the extent of looking like a bee hive.

No one could have imagined that this area would have so many traps. What was most frightening was that as the group were suffering from the traps, not far away at the cave ahead, a boulder was shifted as the well-built York appeared.

As a tier three dark iron warrior, his recuperative abilities were astounding and only a night had passed but the injuries on his body were almost fully recovered. Looking at the group, he did not say a word as he rushed forward.

“Su Yu, York is right there!” At the back, Zhang Zhong Mou shouted, within the group, only Su Yu could deal with York.

Su Yu was relying on a single arm to hang by the dirt wall when he suddenly heard Zhang Zhong Mou yelling, gritting his teeth, his right hand shot forward and grabbed onto the dirt wall. It was fortunate that although his right hand had not transformed, due to the strange energy circulating in his body, his strength was already three to four times stronger than it originally was. Ignoring the pain as his nails bit into the wall, he pulled out his left hand as he activated the ‘Rending Storm’ and heavily smashed in downwards.

“CRASH”

An explosive sound rang out as the dirt wall collapsed, Su Yu used this to propel himself upwards.

York appeared and wordlessly transformed, his right arm and chest swelled as steel thorns covered it, looking like a hedgehog.

He had set up these simple yet functional traps outside the temporary cave dwelling primarily to guard against wild beasts and other monsters. Who knew that it would be useful against Su Yu and the others, looking at their sorry figures, York did not flee but rather rushed forward.

Zhou Bi Rong had been a policewoman for a few years and could be considered to have plenty of experience. Borrowing the force from pulling a branch, she retreated swiftly out of the trap area and her right hand transformed into a giant eagle claw, looking at York as he rushed over, her right hand swiftly returned to normal as she swiftly retrieved the pistol at her waist and aimed at York.

Luckily she did not lose her pistol and it was currently fully loaded with bullets.

Although Zhou Bi Rong did not have many bullets on her, she was hesitant to use them and thus still had quite a few remaining.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

York did not dodge but rather only used his right hand to protect

his head as he continued rushing towards Zhou Bi Rong and the others.

Bullets landed on the arm and chest of York emitting “Buh, Buh” sounds, piercing through his swollen flesh but only small wounds were created which swiftly healed. The bullets from a pistol clearly could not inflict much damage to him.

By the time Zhou Bi Rong realised that her shots were ineffective and wanted to aim towards York’s two legs, as she pulled the trigger, no bullets came out. She realised that all six bullets had been fired and as she attempted to change magazines, York was already before her.

Although she knew she was not his match, under the dire circumstances, Zhou Bi Rong could only grit her teeth as she tossed away her pistol, her right hand transformed as she met York head on.

York was silent as his body trembled, his right fist swung through the air emitting crisp “poof poof poof” sounds, Zhou Bi Rong only felt everything before her go blurry before she screamed, the steel thorns that covered the sky had all landed on her.

York slanted his body as it heavily smashed into Zhou Bi Rong half a second behind the storm of steel thorns.

York’s body was extremely well-built and using the momentum of his leap, the force behind it was simply immense. Zhou Bi Rong

shrieked miserably as her innards trembled, fresh blood spewed forth from her mouth as her body flew away like a broken kite.

“Ha!” On the other side, Ma Zi Ye delicately shouted as she kicked, knocking away a sharpened log that was flying toward her as she used the Flying Spade and kicked towards York’s head, preventing him from finishing Zhou Bi Rong off.

“Damn!” From the back, Zhang Zhong Mou rushed forward. The group had originally made plans and based on their estimates they would have easily taken care of York. Who knew that York would have been so resourceful and actually made so many different traps, causing their plans to fall to ruin.

Zhao Shi Chang’s right foot was pierced by a sharpened wooden stake and he laid on the ground moaning, Zhou Bi Rong had been sent flying away in a single exchange and no one knew if she still lived. Qin Jia Gui was unable to act because of the previous night’s injuries, as for Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang, Ning Yan and the others, they were not even tier one and under the current circumstances they could not contribute.

In the blink of an eye, only Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye and Zhang Zhong Mou were able to continue fighting.

Ma Zi Ye kicked towards York’s head and York continued to be silent as he stared with hatred at the group. His left arm retracted as an inch long sharp cone grew out from his palm, and smashed onto Ma Zi Ye’s right leg.

“Bang!”

The sound of two boulders colliding rang out as metal rope swirled around Ma Zi Ye's right leg, protecting it. Her leg was not pierced by this blow from York but when comparing strange energy, speed or reaction time..... Ma Zi Ye who was a tier lower simply could not compare to York who was tier three.

This blow from York was ineffective and he stepped forward to swing again.

Ma Zi Ye miserably screamed, her chest was pierced by the sharp cone and York pulled out the cone causing fresh blood to spurt out before swinging for the third time, aiming at Ma Zi Ye's skull.

Chapter 83: Crazy York

York was similar to Su Yu and was a tier three dark iron warrior, both sides belonged to a different class of warrior. Su Yu's strong point was his 'Rending Storm' and its destructive prowess and York did not have such a strong ability.

As Su Yu had guessed, York also had the 'Eye of Perception' and when he promoted to tier three, he chose to promote it to become the 'Eye of Divinity', enabling him to have night vision which allowed him to freely travel at night. He also had the 'Swift Steel Needle Assault' which filled the sky with steel thorns that were almost unavoidable and its attacking radius was very wide, however, when comparing attacking power it was far from that of Su Yu.

Otherwise, when the steel thorns struck, Ma Zi Ye would have immediately died without needing him to continue attacking another three times.

Zhang Zhong Mou had already went in from the back and saw that Ma Zi Ye in danger, he howled as he lowered his face, transforming it into stone as he activated the 'Rock Head Cannon Pulveriser'.

York had not managed to strike Ma Zi Ye for the third time and could only stop the sharp cone as his right arm trembled, exploding forth with steel thorns.

“Aaahhh!”

“Aiiiii!”

Zhang Zhong Mou and Ma Zi Ye cried out at the same time as they were immediately pierced by the steel thorns, York then kicked out with his leg, kicking Ma Zi Ye as she heavily tumbled away.

“Bang!”

Ma Zi Ye fell into a patch of wild grass that had a trap mechanism and several “Chi Chi”

sounds could be heard as three sharpened wooden stakes emerged from the ground and instantly pierced her body.

Ma Zi Ye shrieked miserably before falling to the ground and became motionless.

On the other side, Su Yu had finally climbed out of the hole and saw this scene as his entire body violently trembled while he wildly shouted: “Ma Zi Ye!”

Throughout this journey, Ma Zi Ye had given him plenty of help and both parties had formed a deep rapport with each other, to the point where Su Yu had long viewed Ma Zi Ye as his best buddy and partner.

The ‘Web of Metal’ had aided Su Yu many times.

Especially when killing the Golden Goblin, if Ma Zi Ye was not there, Su Yu would have already died under the hands of it.

“Haaaaaaa!” In this instant, the image of Ma Zi Ye flashed in Su Yu’s mind as he howled, explosive ‘Chi Chi Chi’ sounds could be heard from his body as the black scales on his left arm and chest all raised up, white mist was being emitted from within them and in this instant, Su Yu’s entire body was like a giant steam engine which had just been started up.

“Goddamn!” Su Yu roared, the white mist that was emitted gave a frightening rebound which allowed him to shoot forward like a rocket.

At this moment, York had just kicked Ma Zi Ye into that patch of grass and his right arm was swinging towards Zhang Zhong Mou’s chest.

Zhang Zhong Mou was merely a tier one dark iron warrior and his strength was far inferior to York, he simply could not react as the sharp cone pierced three inches deep into his chest and seemed like it would go all the way to the other side.

It was at this moment that Su Yu finally arrived.

Fast, indescribably fast as Su Yu exploded out, in this instant the speed that he reached actually surpassed York, causing him to be unable to react as his strange swollen right arm was smashed by Su Yu’s left arm.

“Crack!”

A crisp sound rang out as the two people's hands clashed, the two were both tier three dark iron warriors and the strange energy contained within their arms was not far apart, this collision was like using an iron club to forcefully smash into another iron club. The outcome was that..... both parties became severely injured.

Following the sound, York yelled in a crazed manner, his entire right arm was bent at a weird angle and the bone inside had already shattered and his swollen right arm was spurting blood. Su Yu had not fared much better as the raised black scales on his left arm were ripped off, the bone inside his left arm also had fractures on them.

After reaching tier three, Su Yu had also killed the powerful Single Eyed Zombie King and absorbed its vast crystal energy, together with his transformation which prioritised on destructive power, he actually gained the upper hand in this collision.

York hugged his bent right arm as he howled and retreated, as for Su Yu he rolled and got back up before viciously attacking again.

“Haha!” York suddenly laughed as bitter resentment filled his eyes which made one shiver, amongst the group he hated Su Yu the most.

Jennifer's leg had been shredded by Su Yu and her strange energy was crippled, causing her to die from blood loss. He had

also been injured by Su Yu and if Su Yu was not present, Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui and the others would not have been able to withstand a single blow causing the situation to reach this stage.

“Damn!” York howled in english, his most hated person was precisely Su Yu.

His crazed hatred made him stop retreating, ignoring the fearsome might of Su Yu’s ‘Rending Storm’ as he voluntarily went forward, thereafter, Su Yu’s ‘Rending Storm’ violently slammed into his chest once again.

York’s swollen chest instantly caved in creating a whirlpool of blood and flesh, steam continued to be released as white mist shrouded the two people.

At the back, Qin Jia Gui, Jade, Lei Rui and the others dazedly watched this scene occur. Qin Jia Gui and his girlfriend Yuan Ni Ping were tightly holding hands as they felt their palms become moist with cold sweat.

Tier three experts, two tier three dark iron warriors engaged in close combat, the savageness and shocking nature of it exceeded one’s imagination.

York’s chest was instantly minced and a ferocious smile appeared on his face as his hands clamped down on Su Yu’s body before heavily swinging, using all the force within his body.

Su Yu realised that things were not looking good but it was too late, under the frightening force the two people tumbled to the ground.

“Chi Chi Chi”

Several hissing sounds could be heard and Qin Jia Gui's reaction was the fastest as he shouted in a hoarse voice: “Careful! Traps!” He finally understood why York who was inferior to Su Yu in close combat would actually give up extending the distance between the two parties, he had already made the decision to fling Su Yu into the trap he had previously made.

Sharp wooden stakes emerged from where the two people rolled over, York howled as Su Yu roared, fresh blood splattered as innumerable stakes pierced their bodies. Su Yu's body was in intense agony and was filled with the will to live, at the back Jade screamed and was filled with anger and hatred towards York.

All these feelings and emotions allowed him to activate the ‘Rending Storm’ in a crazed manner, white mist continued to be emitted from his left arm creating a frightening whirlpool of white mist mixed with flesh and blood, minced through York's chest as it continued upwards.

As for York's right arm which had steel thorns on it, they also pierced into Su Yu's body.....

A bloody battle as the two rolled on the ground, blood was everywhere and the sight was shocking to the eye and astonishing

to the heart.

Qin Jia Gui, Yuan Ni Ping, Lei Rui, Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang and the others were still stunned before they cried out in alarm and advanced, amongst the people Jade seemed to psychotic as she cried Su Yu's name again and again while she rushed forward.

Chapter 84: The Rotten Corpses Of Children

Jade's voice transmitted to Su Yu and he struggled as he shook his head, not allowing himself to faint. York and him had finally come to a stop because their bodies were currently pierced by too many wooden stakes causing them to be firmly nailed to the ground. The two were still stuck to each other and could even hear the breathing of the other party.

The sound of York's breathing was intermittent between stopping and continuing, his chest had been thoroughly minced by the 'Rending Storm' and if he was not a tier three dark iron warrior with a tenacious vitality, he would have already died. Even so, he was in the final moments of his life as his body continually emitted 'Chi Chi' sounds, the strange energy in the form of qi was continually being dispersed through his skin.

Su Yu was slightly better than him, although his mind was feeling faint and very tired, he was conscious of the fact that he could not fall asleep, otherwise, he would never awaken.

It could be the flashbacks that one experiences right before death, York whose breath was gradually becoming lighter suddenly breathed out a mouthful of air, spewing forth blood foam, his eyes that were filled with hatred gradually became clearer.

"Jenni....fer..... I'll..... be able to see Jennifer soon..... Our..... child..... together forever..... Ha..... Haha....."

“Su Yu!” Jade finally reached as she wildly shouted, the others all came rushing forward and seeing Su Yu and York who were on the ground, they were all shocked.

The two people were skewered through by sharpened wooden stakes, blood had dyed their bodies red and blood was flowing from York’s seven orifices. Suddenly, York opened his eyes and his eyes seemed to bulge out as though he thought of something, struggling as he lifted his hand and grabbed onto Su Yu while howling in english: “Exit..... map..... There’s..... an exit..... you people..... live..... to leave.....”

Qin Jia Gui who had just reached felt his heart shiver as he shouted: “Exit map? Where?!”

York’s eyes bulged further as he seemed to try to squeeze out one more syllable, his eyes were staring the group when his body suddenly became rigid before becoming limp.

York had died.

Just before death, he seemed to have awakened from his hatred and wanted to tell the group a secret, it was a pity that he only spoke halfway before dying.

Qin Jia Gui mumbled: “Exit map? Could he actually mean that there is a map that will show us the way out of this forest? Out of this frightening world? If that’s true, why would he remain here.....”

Qin Jia Gui contemplated deeply, as for Jade, she was knelt

beside Su Yu's body and continually pushing him, her face was filled with tears.

“I..... I'm alright..... I've said this before..... you must like me right..... ha..... Haha.....” Su Yu laughed dryly as he struggled to stay awake, focusing his will as he circulated the strange energy that was in the form of qi. The strange energy that was originally not flowing, began to circulate and Su Yu knew that he would live this day.

If his will was slightly weaker, he would have died like York.

At this moment, he really needed to thank Jade for her screams that allowed him to stay awake.

Jade noticed that Su Yu still had the energy to joke and felt more relaxed as she angrily retorted: “What are you talking about? Your injuries..... your injuries are so serious..... yet you are still joking around.....”

“Ha..... haha..... No problem..... Ma Zi Ye..... how are her injuries..... help me..... Pull out these wooden stakes.....” Su Yu could feel the strange energy within his left arm begin to circulate throughout his entire body and thus requested Jade to help him remove the sharpened wooden stakes.

Jade's face was pale, seeing the bloody scene before her, she did not dare to act.

“Let us do it.” Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang walked forward to assist.

Lei Rui saw that although Su Yu was badly hurt, he still lived and finally took a sigh of relief before rushing over to Ma Zi Ye to check her condition.

This time, most of their group were covered with severe injuries and just a single York had almost killed all of them.

Each time a wooden stake was pulled out, Su Yu would shriek like a slaughtered pig, cold sweat mixed with blood continued to trickle down his face.

Zhang Zhong Mou was rigid on the ground, his entire body was filled with steel thorns and was also in unbearable pain. Hearing Su Yu’s miserable shrieks, he could not help but yell: “Yu..... Young master Yu, stop shouting..... Your shouts seem to make my body fill with even more pain.”

On the other side, Zhao Shi Chang had finally bore with the pain and pulled out the wooden stake that had pierced his foot, screaming as he did so.

As for Ma Zi Ye whose body was pierced by three wooden stakes, it was fortunate that they did not pierce any vital areas and under the influence of the strange energy and with Lei Rui assisting to pull out the wooden stakes, she was not at risk of dying.

The ground was in a complete disarray and painted a stifling scene, this battle ended with York dying while Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye and Zhou Bi Rong were heavily injured. Especially Su Yu, he had almost lost his life. Zhang Zhong Mou and Zhao Shi Chang suffered light injuries, Zhang Zhong Mou only needed to pull the steel thorns out of his body and he would be alright. As for the injury on Zhao Shi Chang's foot, if he rested for half a day it would not hinder him much. As for the three heavily injured, they had to rest for at least a day or it would simply be impossible for them to continue moving.

Based on the injuries of the few people, the group decided to temporarily stay at York's cave for a day. Jade, Lei Rui, Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang, Yuan Ni Ping and the others who were uninjured helped to carry Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye and Zhou Bi Rong into the cave as they prepared to bury York.

Qin Jia Gui recalled York mentioning about an 'Exit Map' before his death and searched his body but was unable to find anything.

The boulder before the entrance of the cave had already been shifted aside by York and when everyone came before the entrance, they suddenly stood there stunned.

There was a rotten stench coming from the cave and made the group cover their noses, Ning Yan who was more sensitive even covered her mouth as she dry heaved.

Within the cave, three rotten corpses of children aged three to eight years old laid there, the group could also faintly see maggots crawling on the corpses.

“This fellow..... Bleargh.....” Zhang Zhong Mou could not bear with it as he covered his nose and retreated, the group exchange glances, this couple stayed within the cave yet why were there three rotten corpses within? How could they bear living within an area with such a vile stench?

“This couple..... really must have been insane, simply no way to understand them.” Li Dong suddenly yelled, how could normal people bear placing three rotten corpses of little children where they lived? Why did they not bury the corpses?

“Hurry, bring the three corpses out to be buried. Our situation now is very perilous, Su Yu and the others are injured and if any monster appears during this time, we are finished.” Qin Jia Gui suddenly spoke up in a heavy voice.

The group felt shivers and realised that what Qin Jia Gui said was indeed true.

Chapter 85: Diary

“Quick, quick.” Qin Jia Gui led the way as he covered his nose and entered, the others looked at each other before steeling their hearts and went forward, bearing with the disgust in their minds as they dragged the rotting corpses of the children out.

“Bury them together, quick.” Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang and the others grabbed metal spades as they swiftly dug a hole, placing the corpses of the little children as well as York inside before covering it. The vile stench would not be gone in a short period of time but compared to the danger outside, the group of people decided that enduring the stench was better. Li Dong and Zhou Hua Kang shifted the boulder outside the cave, covering the entrance and only left a small gap.

Once this was accomplished the group felt their hearts relax a bit, instinctively feeling safer. York had also left many traps in the surroundings and choosing to live within this cave was currently their best option.

Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye and Zhou Bi Rong were heavily injured as they laid by the side to rest. Amongst them Su Yu was the most heavily injured but his recuperative speed was astonishing and amongst the three it was likely that he would recover the fastest.

Ma Zi Ye and Zhou Bi Rong had endured several steel thorns and Lei Rui, Jade and the few other girls had helped them to remove their clothes and carefully removed the steel thorns. While this was going on, Qin Jia Gui and the others were forced to wait outside while Su Yu got a good deal since he was heavily injured

and had to stay inside. The other guys were secretly envious however, with the vile stench that made one's head ache as well as the blood and grime covering the girl's bodies, there really wasn't much to see and Su Yu would not be able to gather the interest to do so anyway.

Once all this was completed, Qin Jia Gui who was silent suddenly made a noise, he had unintentionally noticed that at the end of the cave there was a smooth stone, under the stone there seemed to be something pressed below and only a corner of it was visible. When Qin Jia Gui lifted the stone, he saw that it was a thin diary and a ballpoint pen was stuffed within.

“What do you people think this is?” Qin Jia Gui had a look of astonishment as he opened the diary and said in astonishment.

“Eh? Filled with english?” Zhang Zhong Mou walked over to look and his face was curious but could not understand anything.

Qin Jia Gui glanced through and said in shock: “This is Jennifer's diary? This..... This.....” His face had astonishment on it as footsteps rang out beside him. Lei Rui had walked over and her english was quite good as she took a look and nodded: “That's right.”

There were several english words written within this diary and although it was unknown where she had acquired the pen and paper, this was definitely her diary.

Zhang Zhong Mou's eyes widened as he said: “What's written

inside? That Jennifer really still had the mood to do this.”

At this moment, even Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye and Zhou Bi Rong who were heavily injured had been attracted over as they looked over at the diary within Qin Jia Gui’s hand.

Lei Rui took the diary from Qin Jia Gui and began to softly recite.

“Fifth of the month, York drove the car bringing my three kids Johan, Anna, Mike and I. On the way back we were unfortunate and it may have been god playing a joke on us or the devil was beckoning us, or we could be already dead. The car could not stop in time as it fell into a huge hole which suddenly appeared in front of us. Thereafter, we arrived in a frightening forest. I’ve always been thinking, are we still alive? Are we actually dead?”

Lei Rui’s voice was reverberating out and the others kept silent. The group thought of the three rotting corpses and immediately understood that these were the three children of York and Jennifer.

“There were various different frightening monsters within the forest, York and I believe that these were the apostles of the devil and even though it was dangerous, York was very optimistic. He believed that he could keep me and the children safe. The car was smashed into pieces by the monster and could not be driven anymore. We ate the leaves of trees and the flesh of monsters. On the third day, we ran into three people who had food and were willing to allow us to join them, however, they did not wish for us to bring our kids.”

“York became angry and we fought, York was heavily injured but he managed to kill the three of them and steal their food. However, our youngest child Mike died.”

“York could not believe that Mike had died and continued to carry his corpse on his back. I knew that York loved our kids too much and had taken too big a blow. He could not accept the reality of Mike’s death.”

“Tenth of the month, York slowly became more eccentric. The monsters we face are becoming more frightening and York managed to kill a Golden Gnome, acquiring a ‘Treasure Map’, the map indication a way out of this forest and this world.....”

Having read this, Lei Rui stopped and Zhang Zhong Mou and the others rushed forward asking: “Treasure Map? What else did she say?”

Lei Rui paused for a moment, she seemed very anxious as she continued to read.

“Although York managed to kill the Golden Goblin, it was too fearsome and we were both injured. Johan and Anna both died and York seemed to have a breakdown. He kept the corpses of the children and talked to them daily. I can’t help York and can only stay by his side, I love him.”

“We found a cave and lived there. York would travel in the surrounding area each day, regardless of day or night. His heart

filled with the intention to snatch food for the kids. I have no other choice but to stay by York's side, I wish to protect York."

"York, I love the kids and even more so, you."

"I'm very scared, I know that York and I will die, there is no escape nor any hope."

Having read this Lei Rui's voice became low and hoarse, an oppressive atmosphere filled the cave as the group became silent, as though they could fill York's insanity as well as Jennifer's hopelessness and helplessness.

"The treasure chest that was obtained from within the Golden Gnome contained a map and it indicated the path to exiting the forest. York was unwilling to live as he believed that the children were still alive and bringing the three children along would be dangerous. He said that he would wait till the children grew older before leaving. I could not bear to leave York and decided to stay behind. I'm willing to die here together with York."

"After exploring the surroundings over these few days, I have gradually come to understand the rough terrain in the area, I have drawn a map behind and when York and I die one day, if there is anyone who chances upon this cave and reads this diary, I hope that this will be able to help you. Combining the map I have drawn and left behind together with that map in the treasure chest, you will definitely be able to leave this forest and find the exit..... However, this will not be together with York and I....."

Chapter 86: Treasure Map

“York is currently very happy because he believes he is protecting the three kids and I. York is very satisfied with the current life and I am willing to accompany him to die.”

“People in the future, if you have entered this cave, this would mean that York and I have died. I have no other wish, I only hope..... only hope that you can help bury my three pitiful kids. They have died but their souls have not been put to rest. If the map that I left behind is of help to you, on account of the map, please help us..... at least we will be able to be together after dying.....”

When Lei Rui finished reading, her hands were rightly clenching the diary as it trembled, her entire face was covered in cold sweat as though she were suddenly very ill. All the questions had been answered and the information within left them stunned, this couple which they had viewed as insane actually went through such ordeals and the couple had actually died in their hands.

Everyone felt their bodies become ice cold and Qin Jia Gui recalled York’s yell before he died as he muttered: “So York actually came to his senses just before he died, he did not hate us for killing them but even mentioned the map..... he hoped that it would help us..... this couple.....”

“Were they good or evil people.....” Qin Jia Gui lamented.

Su Yu struggled as he lifted his hand and tousled his hair, mumbling: “Pitiful people..... we all are.....”

Li Dong then spoke up: “Where’s the map? The woman seemed to have mentioned a treasure map, where is it?”

Qin Jia Gui also spoke up: “Everyone help to look, besides the map drawn within her diary, there should be another map.” He received the diary within Lei Rui’s hands and carefully analysed the simple map behind it. A star was drawn in the centre and a marking was written: Cave. This star must have indicated the cave they were in. Around the star was an extremely roughshod and simple drawing, indicating a direction with an arrow. Could it be pointing in the direction of the exit? It was difficult to understand and it seemed that finding the treasure map was necessary.

The group swiftly ransacked the entire cave and managed to find the six bags of food which were taken but did not find any treasure case or map.

Lei Rui suddenly spoke up: “Could the map have been on their bodies?”

Qin Jia Gui’s heart shivered: “That’s right, I’ve already searched York’s body but there was nothing there. York was already going mad and this map..... It’s most likely that Jennifer kept it on her person.”

Back then they had buried Jennifer together with Ding Shan but did not search Jennifer’s body. At this moment when they thought about how the map could be on Jennifer’s body, the group exchanged glances as people thought of going back to dig up the

body and search it.

“Now is not the time, let’s wait for tomorrow. When everyone’s injuries are better we will head there to retrieve her corpse. Also..... we can bury their family together, this is the final wish of Jennifer written in her diary.”

Qin Jia Gui was very calm, now that Su Yu and the others were injured, the place where Jennifer was buried was quite a distance away and they might meet with several dangers along the way. Going to dig out Jennifer’s corpse now was clearly not a good time.

The only upside was that Jennifer’s body had already been buried by them and they did not need to worry that other monster’s would desecrate it or move it away.

Jade was unhappy as she spoke up: “That Jennifer really is something, if she really was so kind-hearted, that treasure map should have been left here. Making us happy for nothing.”

Lei Rui then said: “I believe that everyone is selfish, Jennifer must have wanted to be buried with her family. Of course, whether that map is real or not is still questionable, whether it exists or not, we will only know tomorrow.”

Zhou Bi Rong’s injuries were very severe, back then she had been hit by York and her internal organs had all been shaken up. At this moment as she laid on the ground, her breathing was hard as she suddenly spoke up: “Whether the map exists or not, I believe that everyone has not thought of a problem?”

“Officer Zhou? What’s the problem?” Qin Jia Gui was alarmed.

Zhou Bi Rong took a deep breath as though speaking caused pain to course throughout her body: “Haven’t you guys noticed? The monsters that we’ve run into have been gradually becoming stronger and harder to manage. Su Yu is already tier three yet we have some amongst us who aren’t even tier one..... Just like the current circumstances, if there wasn’t a cave to hide..... If we run into a group of Goblins, they could take the lives of all of us. Has everyone not thought of this problem?”

As she said this, the group became silent.

Zhou Bi Rong turned her head as she looked Su Yu in the eye: “Amongst us, Su Yu is the most powerful however..... we cannot only rely on him.”

Hearing her words, Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang, Jade and the others had expressions of embarrassment on their faces. Even Qin Jia Gui was not exempt from this, if it were not for Su Yu risking his life before during the battle, be it against the Metal Chain Zombies, the Single Eyed Zombie King or even the mad York, they would have all died.

Su Yu had actually thought of this issue before but did not really think too much about it. Now that Zhou Bi Rong had brought up this problem, he tousled his hair and said: “So what do we do?”

Zhou Bi Rong then replied: “I’m more straightforward in my

speech, everyone please don't take offense."

Qin Jia Gui shook his head: "What you said makes sense, how could we take offense. Also..... we are all comrades, we all wish to have a higher chance of living on."

"That's right, officer Zhou." Zhang Zhong Mou laughed as he lit a cigarette and the smoke swirled around, muting the stench that was present in the cave: "Beautiful woman Zhou, just speak what's on your mind. I also feel that we cannot only depend on Su Yu. If he's injured, we are all finished." then turning to Su Yu as he laughed: "Hey, don't stare at me. I'm an honest person and speak what comes to mind. I'm not cursing for you to be injured."

Zhang Zhong Mou was always frivolous with his words and Ma Zi Ye scolded: "You big cigarette addict, can't you speak less?"

Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: "Speak less? Can you eat less instant noodles?"

Ma Zi Ye was incensed and decided to ignore him.

Zhou Bi Rong did not seem to mind Zhang Zhong Mou's words and said in a heavy tone: "As the saying goes, strong soldiers and a fierce general. If we liken Su Yu to the general of our group and everyone else as the soldiers..... the problem is that the general is ferocious but the troops....."

Qin Jia Gui laughed, Zhou Bi Rong likened Su Yu to a general while they were soldiers, this made them feel slightly sour in his heart. He had always wanted to overtake Su Yu but the reality was

that the distance between the two was becoming greater and greater. The emotions that Qin Jia Gui had towards Su Yu were very complicated, respect, jealousy and a small amount of unacceptance.

“Well said, Haha.” Qin Jia Gui clapped his hands before continuing: “The problem is that the general is ferocious but us soldiers are weak and riddled with problems without a single redeeming factor.”

Chapter 87: Plans For The Future

Hearing him say this, the group felt awful and Zhang Zhong Mou stared at him: “Hey, this fellow here doesn’t admit to being weak and frail, I, Zhang Zhong Mou, can’t be counted as a ferocious general but I can at least be a strong soldier.”

Li Dong bitterly laughed: “I think Qin Jia Gui is referring to me, I haven’t broken through even now..... totally useless as each day I can only lift metal spades to bury people.”

Once this was said, the group stared at him as Ma Zi Ye reprimanded: “Such a cold joke.”

Su Yu heard them talking and felt awkward as he hurriedly spoke up: “Everyone..... don’t be like this. Each and every one of us is important.....”

He still wanted to continue speaking but Qin Jia Gui shook his hand: “Su Yu, you don’t have to console us. What officer Zhou just said is very reasonable, it’s also the truth. If we were slightly stronger, we would not have fallen to such a desperate situation. A single York could devastate us, almost causing us to all fall here.”

Having been rebuked by Qin Jia Gui, Su Yu did not know what to say.

Zhou Bi Rong sternly continued: “The reason why I highlighted this problem is not to ridicule everyone but rather, I feel that we should prioritise getting everyone stronger. Each time someone

becomes stronger, the chances of us living becomes greater.”

“Yup.” Su Yu nodded, he was also pondering on this problem. As the monsters they encountered grew more and more frightening, if everybody’s strength did not improve, this was simply too dangerous for them.

Within their twelve man group, Su Yu was tier three while Qin Jia Gui, Zhang Zhong Mou, Ma Zi Ye, Zhou Bi Rong and Zhao Shi Chang were tier one. The others were all tier zero and the difference in their strength could be said to be immense. The other eleven added up could not compare to Su Yu and if this carried on, it would indeed be too dangerous, they could not rely only on Su Yu forever.

Finally, the group began to discuss and decided that they would first try to make those who were not tier one yet into tier one dark iron warriors. Su Yu would help Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui and the few others become tier two dark iron warriors, with each promotion it was actually harder to promote and one needed to kill monsters that were stronger than themselves. This was much more dangerous and if Su Yu was aiding them, this would become much simpler.

Only when Ma Zi Ye and the others became stronger would they be able to help out and allow Su Yu to handle the more frightening monsters. Especially Ma Zi Ye’s ‘Web of Metal’, this was something that Su Yu really appreciated and if Ma Zi Ye’s ‘Web of Metal’ could further evolve, it’s uses would be limitless.

After deciding on these initial guidelines, the group continued to

discuss how to best work together. For example, if they met with an extremely strong monster how would they deal with it, or what would they do if they met with a group of monsters. The group were very vigorous in their discussion as they each spoke their viewpoints, hoping to utilise their prowess to its maximum potential.

Amongst the group, Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye were recognised as the best pairing, especially when faced with a frightening monster, the group felt that Ma Zi Ye could give Su Yu the greatest assistance.

Upon finding out that there was a chance that the treasure map existed and they had the hope of getting out of this forest and leaving this world, the group's thirst for life was ignited and they all wanted to get to the end of the road. They wanted to live till they left this world and returned to the world they were familiar with.

Nobody wanted to die in the final leg of the journey in this frightening place.

This day was passed in dullness, only a small group of fifteen to sixteen Lesser Goblins were seen travelling past in the distance but they did not get near their cave, unsure if they really were not aware of their presence or simply knew that the surroundings of the cave had fearsome traps laid down and did not wish to come near.

Qin Jia Gui was constantly staring at the map which Jennifer had left behind on her diary, deeply etching it into his mind as he constantly pondered.

“Based on what this maps depicts, if we head north from this cave, there will be a big ravine and based on Jennifer’s estimates, it is about ten kilometres away..... however all this.....”

Qin Jia Gui finally gave up, he knew that based on only the simple map on the diary, there was simply no way to tell where was the exit, their only hope was to find that ‘treasure map’.

This ‘treasure map’, was similar to how Su Yu had obtained the ‘Earth Spikes Ring’, they were treasures that were hidden within monsters that had the golden heritage.

Su Yu’s ‘Earth Spikes Ring’ was obtained from a Golden Goblin while York had killed a Golden Gnome and attained a treasure chest which contained the map. Based on Jennifer’s guess, the map was indicating a way out of this forest and the method to leave this world.

It could be said that this was a priceless treasure. It was a pity that York had gone insane and firmly believed that this three kids were still alive, wanting to nurture them here. Jennifer was too in love with her husband and had went along with him.

This was a tragic and pitiful family but Qin Jia Gui did not feel much sympathy, they themselves were also pitiful and helpless, not knowing if they would live to see the next day.

At night, the group had eaten and the people were delegated sentry duties before they went to sleep. Sleeping within the cave,

there was a sense of security and this night they had their most peaceful and deep sleep. The cave which was mostly sealed up also muffled any noises which made it even easier to rest.

By daylight, Su Yu was the first to wake up and he silently sat up and noticed that everyone was sleeping, even Zhou Hua Kang who was supposed to be on sentry was sleeping by the side of the cave entrance.

Amongst the group, Zhang Zhong Mou had the worst sleeping habits, drool had formed a puddle beside his mouth and his two hands were firmly holding on to the smelly feet of Zhao Shi Chang and plastered his face on top, his face seemed lascivious and Su Yu wondering if he was having a wet dream.

Ning Yan's sleeping posture was the most sweet and cultured, it was no exaggeration to say that she had the most lovable sleeping posture, compared to the others, her clothes were very clean because she had not killing any monsters and as she slept there, she gave one a feeling of endless beauty.

Su Yu lightly sighed, Ning Yan's looks and poise was extremely good to the point where one would feel tenderness towards her and want to protect her. However, her character was simply eccentric, extremely weird and no one knew how to get closer to her. The back of her neck suddenly had the three strange numbers '666' there, it was like a thorn inside Su Yu's heart and no matter how he contemplated he could not understand it.

Su Yu had previously attempted to use the 'Eye of Perception' to gather Ning Yan's information, hoping to gain some insights

regarding the matter of this '666'. It was a pity that nothing extraordinary showed up and this matter became an aching mystery within his heart.

Su Yu did not alarm anyone as he shook his head to throw away this weird thoughts, gently pushing aside the boulder that was blocking the cave as he walked out. His arms stretched and suddenly his entire body emitted a bizarre crisp noise.

Chapter 88: Profit From Disaster

Su Yu walked out of the cave as he breathed in the fresh morning air of the forest, looking at the dew which was still on the leaves, his heart suddenly became free without any care, without any happiness or sorrow as he shook his arms, his entire body suddenly fiercely emitted a crisp sound of fried beans.

This night, all the injuries in his body had fully recovered without a single scar remaining.

Also, he felt that his body was clearly different.

When he had been engaged in the vicious battle with York the previous day, York wildly grabbed onto him as he forcefully tumbled the both of them into the trap laden wild grass. Sharpened wooden stakes riddled their bodies with holes and York had died miserably on the spot. He was fortunate that Jade's shout had invigorated him and allowed him to keep his clarity and steel his will, finally struggling back from the grips of death.

Although he managed to live, the wounds on his body were extremely frightening and there were over twenty wooden stakes which had pierced through his body leaving tens of bloody holes, extremely shocking to behold.

The recuperative prowess of a tier three dark iron warrior were indeed phenomenal and within a single night, all the transparent bloody holes had fully healed. No scars were left behind but when he raised his arms, the crisp sound of fried beans actually rang out

from within his body.

Su Yu suddenly realised that his body had changed.

“What’s..... going on?” Su Yu was alarmed, he felt that all the areas which had been pierced causing the transparent bloody holes had all been fully healed but subconsciously he felt that there were tens of transparent big holes on his body, as he waved his arms these transparent big holes actually exploded with a crisp noise.

Upon closer inspection, wisps of strange energy seemed to wildly rush into his body from these big holes, transforming into qi which was formed from strange energy, rushing towards his left arm and chest, swiftly forming an energy whirlpool within his body.

“This..... This is.....”

Su Yu was astonished, what was occurring was simply inconceivable, it was as though the acupuncture points on his body had been opened up and could actually use the transparent holes on his body to absorb the strange energy from the outside, changing it into qi within his body.

Su Yu woke up from this state of astonishment but he did not understand why this change had occurred. He could only guess that the severe injuries which would have led to death normally had actually created this mysterious change in him.

Su Yu did not understand what changes had occurred within his

body and also did not think much about it as he earnestly immersed himself in absorbing the energy through these holes, converting it into strange energy within his body. In no time, the strange energy in the form of qi continued to surge and grow stronger as it started to attempt to shake the four 'doors'.

Su Yu understood that if he managed to open a 'door', he would surely be able to evolve further, becoming even stronger.

However, no matter how much the strange energy within his body grew, it was unable to shake the 'door' and the strange energy continued to swell to the extent where it felt as though it might explode.

"Not good!" Su Yu suddenly realised that he had absorbed too much strange energy yet was unable to open a 'door', the amount of area within his body that could contain strange energy was too small and if this went on, the frightening strange energy would explode out from these areas of his body.

"Ha!" Su Yu roared, scales appeared on his left arm and chest as the strange energy within him swelled, he had to find an avenue of release and his body suddenly emitted tens of white rays of steam from the areas that had been pierced by the wooden stakes and all the strange energy surged as he gathered it within his left arm.

"Kaboom!"

An explosive sound rang out as Su Yu suddenly felt that his left arm had formed a whirlpool consisting of white steam, following

the explosive sound, it actually left his fist and flew forward.

“Bang!”

A pile of boulders three metres away were immediately shattered as they rolled away, as though they had been hit by a small artillery shell.

Su Yu was speechless, the strange energy which was swelling and breaking seemed to gradually calm down. He no longer dared to recklessly use the tens of transparent holes to absorb energy, this feeling was too terrifying.

“The Rending Storm can actually be used in such a manner..... it can actually leave the fist and fly out like an artillery shell? This..... this.....”

Su Yu looked at the rock pile which had exploded and his mouth was left agape.

This was a real case of gaining fortune in misfortune, his body now had tens of formless holes, although they could not enable him to promote to the next tier, they were like strange energy gathering machines, allowing him to have unlimited amounts of strange energy, causing all his abilities to become even stronger and their might rising to another level. Although he was still a tier three dark iron warrior, he was definitely more than 50% stronger than when he fought York.

“It’s really true that if one gets through a big ordeal, there will certainly be benefits to be gained.....” Su Yu scratched his head as he looked at the rock pile which was blown up by him. He was thinking if he had this frightening strength the day before, York would not have been able to get close to him and he would have used a fist to send him flying, forcing him to be unable to get close.

“What’s going on?” There were cries of alarm from behind and Su Yu looked back to find Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui and the others rushing out of the cave with looks of alarm on their faces.

The explosive “Kaboom!” earlier had startled them, they had then seen Su Yu’s figure outside the cave and actually thought that some monster had come as they hurriedly rushed out. However, there was nothing to be seen and their faces were stunned as they looked at Su Yu, unsure what he was up to.

Su Yu rubbed his hands and his face was embarrassed as he smiled: “I was only testing my abilities, it seems that my body has mostly recovered.”

Qin Jia Gui let out a sigh of relief while Ma Zi Ye went forward to Su Yu and shook her head with a faint smile: “This person.....” as though she were complaining because she was annoyed but also seemed to be filled with endless happiness that Su Yu was alright.

At the same time, Zhang Zhong Mou’s weird shouts rang out from within the cave: “Pui! Pui! Damn, why did you place your stinky feet on my face? Pui!”

Following this, the sound of Zhao Shi Chang's voice could be heard, it was filled with emotion: "Last night I actually dreamt that we had returned home, the spotted dog in my home always loves to lick my feet, ticklish but quite comfortable, I haven't had that feeling in a while. Ai, I really miss that feeling..... Eh? Why is there a large amount of spittle on my leg..... strange....."

Zhang Zhong Mou shivered all over: "I..... I was just participating in the kissing competition and had kissed a beautiful girl for over two hours, acquiring the first place..... F***, could the thing I kissed actually be your..... Bleargh....." Suddenly Zhang Zhong Mou's voice went silent as retching sounds could be heard from within.

Chapter 89: Confession

Outside the cave when Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui and the others heard this, they looked at each other in dismay as their eyes met and suddenly everyone roared with laughter.

Ma Zi Ye laughed till her back was bent as she rubbed her stomach, clearly her stomach was aching from all the laughing.

“That big cigarette addict, i truly take my hat off to him.”

“Ha ha.” A rare smile appeared on Qin Jia Gui as he shook his head, he did not know whether to laugh or to admire him.

“Ma Zi Ye, how are your injuries?” Su Yu looked at Ma Zi Ye as he asked.

Ma Zi Ye’s injuries were much lighter than his but Ma Zi Ye was merely a tier one dark iron warrior and her recuperative abilities were inferior to him.

Ma Zi Ye seldom heard concern from Su Yu and her heart was filled with sweetness as she smiled: “Yea, I’ve mostly recovered. Although there is still some pain in my chest, it isn’t a big problem.”

Su Yu responded: “That’s good.” before tousling his hair and not speaking any further.

When Zhang Zhong Mou walked out of the cave, the group noticed that his expression was ugly. Behind him, Jade, Lei Rui and the others were unable to restrain the smiling expressions on their faces and Zhao Shi Chang had the face of an innocent victim.

Ma Zi Ye suddenly lamented: “Actually, if there weren’t dangers everywhere within this forest and it was a simple expedition trip, how relaxed and fun that would be.”

Su Yu understood her feelings, as they got closer with the group, they cherished each other more and the worry and fear they faced grew stronger. In this world, regardless of the person, they might suddenly die at any time.

The buddy who was smiling and laughing with you one moment ago could be gruesomely dead in front of you in the next, even Su Yu was no exception.

There was an indescribable sour feeling within Ma Zi Ye’s heart as she softly said: “Su Yu, in this kind of dangerous environment, is growing feelings for someone comical and unnecessary? Within this world, is it better not to have feelings?”

Su Yu earnestly thought before replying: “If a human no longer has feelings, wouldn’t he be no different from animals? Wait no, even animals have feelings between them. Do you know of an insect called the Moth?”

Ma Zi Ye nodded as her eyes seemed to light up while she looked at Su Yu.

Su Yu lifted his head as he looked calmly ahead and muttered: “The moth knows that it will be burnt to death if it throws itself into the fire, but for that moment of radiance, it is willing to disregard everything and throw itself towards the fire, I believe that this is a kind of spirit. We are at least better than the moth, until the last moment nobody would what the outcome would be..... even the moth can be so unafraid when confronted with death, what do we have to be afraid of? If you wish to love, go and love. If you wish to hate, go and hate. At least, you will not leave any regrets within your heart.”

Su Yu mumbled as his eyes were staring at Ning Yan in the distance who was tidying her hair as she walked out of the cave.

These words were actually spoken to give himself courage, he wanted to throw away all considerations and shyness to confess to Ning Yan. However, in Ma Zi Ye’s ears, she misinterpreted it as Su Yu encouraging her to confess her love.

Her heart began to beat faster like a deer that was haphazardly running about, could Su Yu know that she liked him? Was he telling her to persevere? Was he willing to accept her?

Thinking of this, Ma Zi Ye looked down as she felt her cheeks burn up, she finally gathered the courage and prepared to confess to Su Yu, just as she said ‘I’, she found that Su Yu had already walked away and was moving towards Ning Yan who was by the side.

“Ah.....” Ma Zi Ye’s mouth was slightly ajar as she stood there rigidly, astonishment written on her face.

“That’s right, why am I always thinking of this and that? Since I secretly like Ning Yan, since I like her, I should just confess. In this world, who knows when we’ll die, in that case why am I still hesitating for? I don’t wish to leave any regrets.” Su Yu said this in his mind, he had almost died the previous day and this had given him a new understanding, he wanted to face Ning Yan and.....”

Confess.

Su Yu knew that Ning Yan did not have any feelings for himself, the feelings he had for Ning Yan were also not to the extent of being able to claim that he loved her. Although it was merely a simple like, Ning Yan was the first girl he really felt something for, in this forest that was filled with all sorts of danger where one’s life was never assured, he did not wish to have a single regret left behind.

Su Yu had suddenly gathered the courage to confess, his face an expression of gallantry and utter fearlessness as he walked straight towards Ning Yan. Once he made the decision, his body naturally released a kind of imposing manner and the others quickly looked at Su Yu. Even Ning Yan who was tidying up her hair also looked up, Su Yu who was walking towards her with his imposing manner had left her rather startled.

Su Yu’s heart was beating rapidly, this was the first time in his life he would be confessing to a girl and he felt so nervous that his chest seemed like it would explode at any moment.

“Damn, why am I so disappointing, when faced with the Single Eyed Zombie King or York, I wasn’t that nervous. Su Yu, you are too disappointing.”

Su Yu cursed himself in his heart as he grit his teeth and decided to just go for it. From an outsider’s perspective, he seemed to be fiercely taking big strides towards Ning Yan. Ning Yan was stunned as Su Yu said in a heavy voice: “Ning Yan, I like you, I wish to be.....”

His words were not completed when a leg came flying from the side, ‘Bang!’ as it sent him flying. Jade appeared and seemed like she had done something insignificant, patting the dust off her legs, exceptionally confident and at ease as she supported Ning Yan who was absolutely stunned: “He was acting up from his illness earlier, don’t treat it as reality. This fellow has ‘early childhood brain damage and neurosis’ since young, he often speaks nonsense and his words can’t be taken seriously. It’s precisely because of this that his mother wishes for me to look after him.”

The group were all speechless as they saw the scene before them, Ning Yan was also stunned. Earlier when Su Yu was confessing, his imposing manner was too frightening, that expression was simply like staring at an enemy of ten generations, displaying extreme anger.

Ning Yan swept her hair behind her shoulders and quickly recovered from her astonishment. Moving her hands down, she gently pushed away Jade’s hands which were touching hers before unknowingly rubbing her jade-like nape. Her expression was

indifferent as though Su Yu's confession was not said to her, there was no natural reaction of a normal girl and her entire person seemed to exude a feeling that she was out of sorts.

Ma Zi Ye stood rigidly by the side, her fists were clenched and her teeth were gnashing, she had thought the words Su Yu mentioned earlier were a sort of hint for her but reality had shown that she was merely overthinking matters. She felt embarrassed and resentful.

“What's so good about this Ning Yan, isn't she just pretty? Is Su Yu such a superficial person? Only liking pretty girls? Hmph!” She cursed in her heart.

Chapter 90: Schadenfreude

Su Yu was kicked away by Jade and lay on the ground, not willing to get up for a short amount of time. He did not know how to face the group, he had mustered the courage to confess and was in the midst of doing it when Jade had ended it prematurely.

Jade understood Su Yu and knew that it was impossible for him to gather the courage to confess to Ning Yan a second time.

“This Jade really is an evil demon.....” Su Yu was dismayed in his heart, he wanted to cry but there were no tears and he felt embarrassed.

“Haha.” Zhang Zhong Mou laughed as he walked over, tossing Su Yu a cigarette. The three of them had grown up together and knew each other’s temperaments and characters. With a great god like Jade around, Su Yu would have no chance to secretly attempt to chase a girl.

“Brother, don’t think about it anymore.” Zhang Zhong Mou looked at Su Yu with sympathy, his face seemed to be aggrieved but his eyes betrayed him, there was clearly a sense of schadenfreude in them.

Zhang Zhong Mou had been depressed in the morning but seeing that Su Yu was more depressed than him, his heart became much lighter. When a person was down and out and saw someone in worse straits than him, they would naturally feel more comfortable.

Su Yu was extremely vexed, looking over at Jade's proud and delighted expression, he felt like knocking his head to kill himself.

Zhou Bi Rong also walked over, her injuries were mostly healed and after a day of rest, she was mentally and physically recharged. Su Yu, Zhou Bi Rong, Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang and the others who were injured had mostly healed, the strange energy within their bodies gave them strong recuperative prowess and as long as they were not instantly killed, no matter how serious the injury they would be able to recover with time.

The twelve people ate simply before lugging the huge bags of food and leaving the cave. Zhou Bi Rong led the way as they headed towards the area where they first met the couple, Ding Shan and Jennifer's corpse were buried on that slope.

Whether Jennifer's corpse had the treasure map, no one was certain. However, this was their only option, all the areas around the cave had been thoroughly checked but the treasure map could not be found.

Food was the lifeline of the group, since they were leaving the cave, they naturally carried all of it together with them. This was already the eighth day since they came to the forest, they had finally found a clue to leaving this world and no one wanted to give up on this chance.

Zhou Bi Rong led the group, her right hand held her pistol out of habit, she did not have many bullets left on her, merely less than

ten and once they were used, this pistol would become a useless piece of metal.

The handphones of the group had mostly either been destroyed in the vigorous battles or ran out of battery. It was fortunate that Zhao Shi Chang, Lei Rui and a few of them carried watches, allowing them to tell them time. Otherwise, the group would not even be able to keep track of it.

Walking beside Zhou Bi Rong was Qin Jia Gui and Zhao Shi Chang. Yuan Ni Ping, Jade, Lei Rui and the few others walked in the centre while Su Yu naturally walked behind the ground. Usually Ma Zi Ye liked to walk together with him at the back but this time, she actually walked in the centre of the group.

Zhang Zhong Mou smoked his cigarette as he walked in a carefree manner together with Su Yu before suddenly puffing: “Really don’t know how the people over at the school are doing, is Lin Shi still alive? It’s a pity about teacher Meng Bo……. I really liked her.”

Su Yu replied: “I believe in Teacher Lin, he is a tenacious person, not easily beaten down. Sometimes, love can create miracles.” He recalled the eyes filled with love of Lin Shi towards Meng Bo and firmly believed that they were still alive.

Zhang Zhong Mou snorted: “What do you mean love can create miracles, young master Yu, has your love created a miracle? Why does it seem like you’ve knocked your head and are depressed and dejected?”

Su Yu harrumphed as he scratched his head with embarrassment, secretly looking at Ning Yan who was walking in front before sighing. He could never seem to close the distance between them and really did not have any ideas, it was clearly more logical to forget about his feelings for her.

Following the path they had taken the previous day, the group whizzed through and did not meet with any trouble along the way. Finally, they reached the slope and could see from a distance that the top of the slope was a mess.

“Eh?” Zhou Bi Rong seemed to have seen something as she swiftly walked up, the group also noticed the mess atop the slope, the corpses of the Zombie’s seemed to have been nibbled and gnawed on, as though some frightening monster had been through the area.

Zhang Zhong Mou scolded: “Damn, even eating the corpses of zombies? These monsters really don’t pick what they eat.”

Ma Zi Ye glanced at him: “Same as you.”

“Hey hey, beautiful lady Ma, what are you saying? What do you mean similar to me? Since when did I, Zhang Zhong Mou, not pick what I eat”

Ma Zi Ye stared hatefully at him and Zhang Zhong Mou seemed to have understood something: “Hey hey, I understand now. You’re feeling down but you shouldn’t use me to vent your frustrations.”

“You are precisely the person I want to vent on, what are you going to do about it?”

Zhang Zhong Mou’s hands spread out: “Venting on me..... I’ll just treat it like a dog taking a piss.....”

Ma Zi Ye was incensed but did not know how to deal with Zhang Zhong Mou. Taking a packet of instant noodles from her bag, she ripped it open before staring at Zhang Zhong Mou and viciously ate the instant noodles making loud noises. Her expression made Zhang Zhong Mou’s hair stand on end, it felt as though she was not eating instant noodles but rather biting into his flesh, making all his goosebumps swell.

“Hey hey, don’t be like that. Alright alright, I admit defeat. You’re a magnanimous person, don’t stare at me with those eyes alright?” Zhang Zhong Mou was utterly defeated and immediately conceded as he begged for mercy.

Qin Jia Gui and the others were carefully measuring their surroundings. Although there were corpses of the zombies which had been thoroughly destroyed, they did not notice any traces of other monsters and were more concerned about the corpse of Jennifer which was buried. It was fortunate that they had buried Jennifer’s corpse together with Ding Shan’s.

Li Dong, Zhou Hua Kang and the few others were not even tier one dark iron warriors, they held metal spades as weapons and this time the spades actually came in handy. The few of them busied

themselves with digging and a short while later the corpse of Jennifer had been dug out.

“It’s fortunate that those monsters did not damage their bodies.” Qin Jia Gui let out a sigh of relief while Zhou Bi Rong backed away to the side, she did not wish to see Ding Shan’s corpse again for fear of feeling bitter again.

Su Yu, Qin Jia Gui, Zhao Shi Chang, Lei Rui and the few others squatted by Jennifer’s corpse. They recalled what she had written in her diary and thought of how her three kids had died and her husband going insane, the amount of mental pressure she had to bear each day was certainly frightening.

Chapter 91: Forest Exit

“Ai.....” Su Yu sighed as he regretted being so heavy-handed, destroyed Jennifer’s leg causing her strange energy to dissipate resulting in her dying from loss of blood.

Zhang Zhong Mou seemed to be able to know what he was thinking as he patted Su Yu’s shoulder: “We all wish to live on, there was no right or wrong in this matter. Don’t blame yourself.”

Su Yu shook his head: “Don’t worry, let’s see if that treasure map is still on her person.”

“Okay.” Lei Rui stretched her hand as she began to search Jennifer’s body. If it were the past, Lei Rui would not dare to touch a dead body but over these few days, they had seen too many corpses of people and monsters and the corpse of Jennifer before her was not that frightening.

In no time, Lei Rui had patted down Jennifer’s body. The group were nervous as they looked at her hands wondering if she had found the map mentioned in Jennifer’s diary. This was their final hope to find a reliable map showing the exit of this forest.

Suddenly, Lei Rui’s hands stopped at Jennifer’s bosom.

Qin Jia Gui asked nervously: “What’s the matter? What have you found?”

Lei Rui took a deep breath as she slowly pulled her hand out. In her hand was a bundle wrapped in a handkerchief.

At this moment, everyone had gathered beside Lei Rui, looking at her hands with nervousness and hope. Even Ning Yan who was usually aloof also had an interested expression on her face.

Lei Rui stood up as she unfolded the handkerchief, there was a slightly yellowed folded drawing and when Lei Rui opened it, everyone had a sharp intake of air.

Map, it was a real map, filled with dense and numerous items drawn on it. There were even streaks of faint yellow lustre that seemed to be moving about.

“What’s drawn on it?” Qin Jia Gui squeezed himself beside Lei Rui as she opened the map and said: “This is a map but I can’t be certain this is the map of the forest before us.”

As she spoke she was also measuring the map but finally she handed it over to Qin Jia Gui.

Qin Jia Gui held the map as he carefully scrutinised it. Su Yu who was by the side also glimpsed at the map, he was not too familiar with such items and just as Lei Rui had mentioned, this was indeed an intricately drawn map. The legend on the map clearly indicated that this was a map of a forest but whether it was the forest before them, this was difficult to say. Even if it really was, they did not know their exact position on the map. If they could not get an idea of their location, even with this map it would be useless.

“Okay, it’s definitely the map of this forest!” Qin Jia Gui finally shouted in elation after careful examination.

Su Yu was startled: “You’re so confident?”

Qin Jia Gui nodded his head in affirmation: “Jennifer left a simple map within her diary and what was drawn was certain landmarks within an area of ten miles. At an initial glance it doesn’t seem to be useless but I now understand, it has to be used together with this treasure map. Comparing the diary to this map, we can identify our location on the treasure map. Look here, this large valley, it is also indicated on the map within the diary, it is slightly over ten miles away from that cave and this treasure map also has it. Comparing the maps we can have a definitive clue as to where our location is on the map.”

Qin Jia Gui was elated: “Let’s go back to the cave, we can’t make any mistakes. I wish to go back to the cave to compare the two maps, I believe that my speculations aren’t wrong.”

By this time the others had all crowded around to take a look at the map, most of them did not see anything peculiar about it.

“Why do we still have to return to the cave? Haven’t you brought the diary along with you?” Zhang Zhong Mou was reluctant to return.

Qin Jia Gui had a mysterious smile on his face: “A person of the mountains have their reasons, let’s head back.

Su Yu pondered for a while before saying: “Alright, let’s head back. We can also fulfill Jennifer’s wishes and bury her corpse with her family.”

Li Dong spoke up as he frowned: “Still need to carry it?”

Su Yu glanced at him without speaking, handing the bags of food on his person to Zhang Zhong Mou and Jade to carry before personally carrying the corpse of Jennifer on his back. Zhou Hua Kang and the others quickly covered the hole with Ding Shan’s corpse still within it.

“Let’s hurry back.” Qin Jia Gui held the map and was eager to return, he wanted to carefully compare the two maps and inspect the ground at the same time to confirm matters. Jennifer had personally drawn that map in her diary and going to that cave would make it much easier to confirm the different landmarks drawn on the map, allowing them to have a clear idea of where they were on the treasure map.

It was better to be prudent in this matter.

Returning back to the cave, Su Yu, Zhang Zhong Mou, Jade, Zhao Shi Chang and the few others buried Jennifer’s corpse again, looking at the five family members who were buried together, Su Yu lightly sighed. As for Qin Jia Gui, he had already rushed into the cave with the map to begin inspecting, they were rather clueless about maps and did not go over to disturb him.

A while later.....

“Why is this fellow taking so long to inspect the maps?” Zhang Zhong Mou was feeling rather restless as he rubbed his tummy, he was feeling rather hungry and it seemed like it would be midday soon, throwing away the cigarette within his hand, he turned and entered the cave, wanting to see what Qin Jia Gui was up to.

Su Yu also followed and noticed that Qin Jia Gui was holding a pointed piece of rock, the strange energy within his right hand was activated as he drew on the stone wall. Upon closer inspection, his left hand was currently holding the treasure map and it seemed as though he were drawing a map based on the treasure map within his left hand.

“Hey, what are you up to?” Zhang Zhong Mou could not help but shout out.

The people behind also followed and exchanged glances.

“You haven’t gone dumb from inspecting the maps right?” Zhang Zhong Mou was incomparably stunned.

Qin Jia Gui ignored him and only when the map was drawn did he throw away the small stone in his hand before sighing and looking back with a smile on his face: “It’s done.”

“What’s done? You’ve wasted half a day to draw a map? Damn, isn’t there a map within your hand already?” Zhang Zhong Mou was not excited, what was Qin Jia Gui up to?

Qin Jia Gui had a faint smile on his face: “I’ve already carefully compared this map, Jennifer’s speculations aren’t wrong, based on the position of the cave from the valley to calculate, we will take at most ten days..... At most ten days and we will definitely be able to reach this area indicated by the treasure map. Look here, doesn’t there seem to be a door indicated on this map? This marking represents an exit, the exit to this forest. It could even be..... even be the exit of this damned world.

The group were stunned before finally reacting as Zhao Shi Chang yelled: “Qin Jia Gui, what you’re saying it, ten days, we only need ten days to get out of this forest?! No, out of this world?!”

Chapter 92: Ten Days Journey

“That’s right, it may not even require ten days. As long as the markings on the map are accurate, we will definitely be able to reach the exit indicated on the map within ten days.” Qin Jia Gui yelled in elation as he waved his hand.

Yuan Ni Ping walked forward as she tightly hugged his arm, an expression of happiness appearing on her face.

Yuan Ni Ping had a gentle character and seldom spoke, her simple actions spoke a thousand words.

Qin Jia Gui lightly patted her hand while Zhang Zhong Mou asked in puzzlement: “Even if that’s the case, why did you draw on the stone wall?”

Qin Jia Gui looked at the two huge maps he had drawn, one big one small. These two maps were the treasure map and the one drawn within Jennifer’s diary respectively. He smiled as he replied: “I was thinking that since we were given hints by Jennifer thus allowing us to find the exit. I wanted to leave something behind for people in the future, if they come to this cave, they will also be able to compare the two maps on the stone wall and be able to find the exit as well. Haha, that’s why I’ve wasted a bit of time.”

The group stared blankly for a while before Zhang Zhong Mou laughed: “This fellow, really thought it through quite thoroughly huh, should I call you clever or foolish?”

Yuan Ni Ping softly answered: “Qin Jia Gui is compassionate, he often considers other people, that’s what I like about him.”

Qin Jia Gui heard Yuan Ni Ping and a faint smile appeared on his face: “You’re the same, isn’t that so?”

Zhang Zhong Mou shook his head, he could not stand this kind of lovey dovey behaviour.

Ma Zi Ye continued: “Qin Jia Gui, since you know the direction, we should set off as soon as possible.”

Su Yu walked out of the cave as he shook his head: “It’s already afternoon, let’s have a meal first.”

Zhang Zhong Mou spoke up: “Alright, Qin Jia Gui did the map indicate any areas with a river? Damn, I haven’t bathed for so many days it’s already a torture.”

If he did not mention it the group would have been silent but once he did so, the group felt their entire bodies start to itch as Ma Zi Ye glared at him: “Why did you even talk about this sore spot of ours.”

Zhang Zhong Mou shouted: “I was only thinking for the good of everyone, my kindness came to no good.”

Qin Jia Gui shook his head: “This map does not indicate any rivers, this treasure map is truly weird, it is found from within a

monster's body and is currently showing the exit.”

Su Yu then said: “It seems that those monsters of the golden bloodline all contain some precious case and each will contain something different. When I killing the Golden Goblin, the precious case actually contained the ‘Earth Spikes Ring’ while York killed the Golden Gnome and this map was actually within the case.”

Li Dong sighed: “It’s fortunate that York was insane, otherwise they would have already taken this map and left, then we wouldn’t have been able to obtain it.”

Zhang Zhong Mou rebuked: “Damn, you’re too heartless, their entire family is buried here. Be careful, they may hear what you say and become ghosts to haunt you.”

Li Dong harrumphed but did not say anything, he knew Zhang Zhong Mou had a big mouth and did not wish to argue with him.

Zhao Shi Chang muttered: “A journey of close to ten days? Hopefully everything will be smooth.”

The group were previously eating very conservatively but upon hearing Qin Jia Gui mention that they could leave this world in at most ten days and they actually had quite a bit of food, they group began to unconsciously eat more.

After eating their fill, the group swiftly left the cave as each of

them walked with elation written on their faces. Their future was no longer bleak, they had a goal and based on Qin Jia Gui's conjecture, if they did not have any mishaps along the way they would definitely be able to get out of this frightening forest.

The prerequisite was that the journey did not have any mishaps.

Based on the directions indicated by the map, Qin Jia Gui kept the map into his bosom as he pointed in a direction: "North, this is the direction. Let's be careful as we proceed.

We've already identified the direction of the exit, let's hope that we are able to reach the exit alive."

Zhang Zhong Mou smiled: "That's for sure, damn, we were so fortunate to be able to find the exit map, god is finally smiling on us. I feel our luck is getting good."

Based on the direction which Qin Jia Gui indicated, the frontage was covered with dense trees, brambles and underbrush were abundant without any obvious route to follow. Zhao Shi Chang who was walking in front lifted his right hand, his hand soon transformed and became a black curved hard shell. At the end of this hard shell was a slit that was as small as a baby's mouth, a snow white bone blade that was about $\frac{1}{3}$ of a meter long extended out from that slit.

The bone blade swung, "Crack!", immediately multiple branches which were blocking the way were instantly chopped to the ground.

Qin Jia Gui walked beside him and also continually cleared the

frontage, the group of people had a hard time pushing forward and Su Yu continued to follow behind the group. His eyes continually sweeping all around, in this area of lush vegetation, their vision was limited and the risk of being attacked by a monster was high.

“Everyone be more alert.” Qin Jia Gui repeated as each of them raised their perception to the limit, their body was encumbered by the heavy bags and each person toiled to move forward.

“Everyone be careful, I sense some movement.” Suddenly, Su Yu who was walking behind suddenly said in a low voice to alert the group. Everyone noticed that he had purposefully lowered his voice.

“What?” Zhang Zhong Mou hurriedly responded.

Zhou Bi Rong immediately lifted the pistol in her right hand, the group heard a noise not far away to their left, from this sound, it seemed as though there were also a group of people there, pushing aside the wild grass as they advanced.

Because of the dense branches and bramble everywhere, the group could hear noises continually draw closer but wondered who the other party was.

Was it human or beast?

Qin Jia Gui and the others all stopped as they slowly crept forward, the formation changed and they swiftly formed a

triangle, the pointed end of the triangle which was facing the left was Su Yu.

Other these few days, the group had discussed the problems with their cooperation and formulated several methods to handle different situations. For example, if they met a group of tier one beast soldiers, or if they met a single strong monster. As for facing an unknown group, they would form this triangular formation that could both defend and attack.

Forming this triangular formation, they heard a strange sound. Over ten metres away within the thick vegetation, “Bang!” “Bang!” could be heard as heavy objects seemed to fall to the ground. That sound seemed as though people were falling to the ground and eventually no other noise was heard.

“This.....” The group exchanged glances, unsure what had happened.

“I’ll go check it out.” Su Yu contemplated for a short while before coming to a decision, the group could not just rigidly stay here. They could not advance nor retreat and after nodding to the group, Su Yu prepared to silently head forward to scout on his own.

Looking at Su Yu himself removing the branches and twigs that was covering his body, Ma Zi Ye who was constantly avoiding Su Yu lightly bit on her lips and followed behind Su Yu in the end.

It could not be denied that Su Yu who had a strong offensive ability and Ma Zi Ye with her ‘Web of Metal’ made them the most

compatible partners, the situation ahead of them was strange and Ma Zi Ye did not feel safe leaving Su Yu go alone. Ignoring the anger she was feeling towards him, she also went forward.

The others all stayed in their original places and went on high alert for this short period till Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye have checked out the things ahead before deciding on their next move.

Su Yu silently moved forward as black scales silently appeared to cover his left arm and chest, as his tier rose, these black scales were becoming even more black, as though they were forged from dark metal, having an unimaginable toughness and sharpness.

As Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye moved forward for about seven to eight metres, pushing aside the leaves and branches in their way, suddenly, the two people stood there rigidly as they saw a scene in front of them that left them stunned.

This scene was simply too unusual to the point where their goosebumps stood on end.

Chapter 93: Strange Faint Smiles In Death

Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye hid themselves as they silently moved forward for about seven to eight metres, pushing aside the leaves and branches in their way, suddenly, the two people stood there rigidly as they saw a scene in front of them that left them stunned.

Several metres from the wild grass, there were seven Gnomes wearing leather armour lying there. The sounds of falling objects earlier were made by them.

What made Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye feel irked to the extent that their goosebump stood was the fact that there were no noticeable wounds on the bodies of the Gnomes but they were currently lying immobile on the ground. Absolutely lifeless, they were all dead and on their ugly wrinkled faces was a smile, as though they were strangely contented and satisfied.

Looking at the group of Gnomes which seemed unscathed yet rigidly laid there with blissful smiles on their faces, Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye exchanged glances, both feeling that something was definitely strange.

“Everyone come over quickly.” Su Yu said in a barely perceptible voice, Qin Jia Gui and the others who were hidden behind all came rushing forward from the wild grass.

Ma Zi Ye walked beside the corpses of these Gnomes as she prepared to kick but Su Yu hurriedly spoke up: “Don’t touch them, the way these Gnomes died is too strange, let’s not touch them in

case of any weird situation.”

Ma Zi Ye looked at Su Yu as she retracted her leg.

Qin Jia Gui and the others reached and saw the corpses of the Gnomes, their feelings were mutual with Su Yu and felt that something strange was going on.

The corpses of the Gnomes on the ground were nothing special but strangely enough they had smiles on their faces. Also, they were clearly alive just moment before until roughly ten odd metres from the group before suddenly dying one after another, this was certainly too peculiar.

“What’s the meaning of this? They all died with smiles on their faces?” Zhang Zhong Mou had a bewildered expression on his face.

Qin Jia Gui was more cautious as he said in a serious voice: “Everyone, don’t touch these corpses under any circumstances. My guess is they have been poisoned, I’m sure you’ve all heard before that some poisons can cause people to have weird smiling expressions on their face as they die.”

Hearing his words, the group suddenly understood as they suddenly felt nervous, if all these Gnomes had really been killed by poison, then this poison was definitely more scary than the monsters, there was no way to guard against it.

Zhao Shi Chang then spoke up: “If they were really poisoned to

death, what was this poison? Where did it come from? Is there any poisonous substance nearby? Is it a poisonous bug, snake or even gas?

Su Yu was decisive: “Let’s ignore how they died, we should immediately leave this area and loop around, the further we leave this area the better.”

The group nodded and did not dare to ponder further as they immediately retreated back into the wild grass, swiftly moving in the opposite direction hoping to leave these corpses as far away as possible.

The more one could not understand something the more frightening it was, the death of this group of Gnomes was too strange and an unknown feeling of terror welled in the hearts of the group.

They increased their speed as the bone blade on Zhao Shi Chang’s right arm continually swung, chopping aside any branches or objects in the way. Amongst the group, Zhao Shi Chang’s bone blade was the most suited for clearing the frontage.

Branches were swiftly chopped away by Zhao Shi Chang as they group moved swiftly through the dense forest for over a hundred metres, leaving the corpses of the Gnomes far behind.

“Aaaahhh!” Suddenly, Zhao Shi Chang shouted as he stopped.

Lei Rui who was following closely behind him was stunned and knocked into his back, gasping, she stretched her head to look past Zhao Shi Chang and saw two large green coloured monsters lying not far away.

“Greater Goblins.....” Zhao Shi Chang sucked in cold air.

Su Yu swiftly went forward as he gazed, two large corpses of the Greater Goblins were lying there without any wounds on their bodies, their faces also had a strange satisfied smile on it, their face was rigidly set as their eyes were wide open, as though they had seen something beautiful before they died. This expression, however, was extremely frightening and strange to Su Yu and the group.

“Let’s walk another way.” Su Yu immediately retreated as he pointed in another direction.

“Let’s go.” Qin Jia Gui also did not want to tarry, they had met a group of Gnomes and two Greater Goblins who had died in the same way, their hearts were gripped with fear as they changed a direction and swiftly fled.

“Quick, we must quickly leave this area.” Qin Jia Gui’s heart was beating fast as he continually willed the group to move faster.

Su Yu did not say a word as his face held a stern expression. The strange energy within his left arm was continually circulating as all the muscles in his body tensed, if there was even the slightest feeling that something was wrong he would immediately rush

forward with the 'Rending Storm' to get through any dangers.

"Ah, this is....."

In no time, Zhao Shi Chang, Li Dong and the others once again felt shock, there were several smiling corpses before them, five Gnomes, one Greater Goblin and one human.

This time, the group stopped as they carefully looked the corpse of the human. This was a male in his twenties, his clothes were in tatters, his face yellow and body emaciated as though he had starved for many days. At this moment he was lying on the ground without any indication of wounds on his body but his face also had the strange blissful smile.

Be it human or monster, they had all died in the same manner.

"Go." Qin Jia Gui inspected for a moment before growling, everyone had a bad feeling yet no one spoke. They did not have the time to ponder on who this male was or how he came to be here because their most pressing concern was to leave this area, this place was simply too strange.

Everything that followed made the group feel even more fear and terror.

No matter which direction they chose to run in, no matter how they ran, the road would always have corpses that carried that particular strange smile on their face. These corpses consisted of

Gnomes, Gnome Riders, Greater Goblins and even humans. There were all kinds of humans, male or female, old or young, ugly or handsome, each had a similar thing in death and that was they had a rigid smile on their face.

Suddenly, Su Yu stopped moving.

“What’s wrong?” Qin Jia Gui panted as he asked.

“Since we can’t run away, there’s no need to continue fleeing. Every direction is the same, Qin Jia Gui, I think we should continue moving north. Whether it be fortune or calamity, we can’t dodge it.” Su Yu answered before taking big strides towards the north, his left hand was covered in black scales which seemed to occasionally become hidden, extremely mysterious.

Zhang Zhong Mou trusted in Su Yu and followed him without a word.

Qin Jia Gui only hesitated for a second before hurriedly waving his hand: “Everyone, follow him. There are corpses everywhere, since that’s the case, let’s stick to our original plan and head north.”

Chapter 94: Strange Flower

This time, it was Su Yu who led the way as the strange energy within his left arm shot throughout his body, although the strange energy in the form of qi could only travel within his left arm and change, the strength provided by the strange energy could be transmitted to every portion of his body.

In no time, the group saw another pile of corpses before them.

This was a pile of Lesser Goblin corpses and they also had smiles on their faces.

“Continue.” Su Yu did not bother to look further at the corpses as he carried his bag of food and continued heading in the same direction.

Immediately behind him were Zhang Zhong Mou and Ma Zi Ye followed by Jade, Li Dong, Lei Rui and the others. This time, Zhao Shi Chang, Zhou Bi Rong and Qin Jia Gui had fallen to the back of the group.

They moved swiftly through and the corpses could be seen occasionally as they passed, most of the corpses were those of Lesser Goblins and Gnomes while occasionally they could see Gnome Riders and Greater Goblins. There were so many corpses and seeing them made their hearts fill with alarm, all of them had smiles on their faces in death as the group swiftly moved by the corpses, their hearts were filled with perplexity and fear.

Moving so swiftly for such a long period of time, Su Yu and a few others were alright but Jade, Lei Rui, Li Dong and the others who were not even tier one dark iron warriors did not have sufficient strange energy within their bodies, the bags of food they carried were heavy and they gradually felt more tired, coupled with the rough terrain, their speed slowed down considerably.

Qin Jia Gui noticed this and considered stopping to rest for a while when Su Yu who was in front suddenly stopped. Thereafter Ma Zi Ye could be heard speaking in a low voice: “Everyone stop, don’t make a sound.” As she said this she also began to prone down.

The group understood her hint as they silently proned down before slowly groping their way forward, they wanted to see what was going on. At this moment wild grass that was as tall as them grew all around them, blocking their vision. Su Yu pushed aside the wild grass as he used the gap to look toward the side.

“Kaboom!”

A loud sound like that of muffled thunder suddenly emitted from the left side, the group who were prone on the ground felt it gently tremble.

In front of this patch of wild grass, tall trees had fallen to the ground and the wild grass was also flattened, the scene was in complete disorder and made a wide open space appear before them. In the centre of this wide open space was a strange dirty yellow flower, the shape of this strange flower was really similar to that of a large jellyfish or a large translucent lantern.

Under the envelopment of this 'lantern', one could clearly see that within the strange flower were fiery red raging flames, the raging flames were in the form of petals as they blazed, within the centre of the raging flames, a golden sap was endlessly churning within the raging flame, extremely strange and mysterious, making Su Yu, Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui and the others speechless as they could not believe their eyes.

The strange flower which was like a lantern but also like a large jellyfish burned with a fiery red raging flame, the lantern that was on the exterior gently wiggled, shrinking and opening, although it was extremely slow, each time it expanded, its body would swell to the size of a normal room, its height reached over three metres and the group which were secretly looking over could hear a strange dragging noise when the huge flower contracted.

Could this strange flower be a living creature? Just looking at the bottom part of it, one could see many tentacle like stolons deeply taking root in the soil amongst the other tall trees. It seemed to be devouring the boundless energies.

For those great trees that had their trunks penetrated by the stolons, their tree leaves could be seen wilting at a speed which the naked eye could see. Slowly becoming yellowish after being drained and finally falling leaf by leaf to the ground resulting in it being thoroughly exhausted of all life. The tree's qi essence was completely absorbed and exhausted and in this period, the strange flower's stolon from within the dead tree would then give a great tug. This would then cause the great tree to collapse with a loud bang and the strange flower's stolon would then continue to creep outwards and penetrate a new tree

Su Yu and Ma Zi Ye who were concealing themselves within the weeds both did not dared to even exhale. This sort of frightening strange flower was simply outrageous, while still within this nightmare, what was more astonishing was that all around the flower were groups of monsters.

These bunch of monsters could be divided into three groups.

One of the groups contained large numbers of Lesser Goblins and Greater Goblins, they were gathered by the side and had greedy and fearful expressions as they stared at the strange flower not far away.

What made Su Yu alarmed was that within the group of Goblins, there was actually a goblin with golden speckles on it, standing in the centre.

Golden Goblin, the natural leader of the Goblin race, having a sliver of heritage from the Golden Race.

That day in front of the police station, Su Yu had previously killed a Golden Goblin and he had almost died doing so. It was killing that Golden Goblin which enabled Su Yu to promote to a tier two dark iron warrior and also where he acquired the Earth Spikes Ring. Monsters who contained the blood of the Golden Race contained precious treasures within their bodies.

A Golden Goblin which was in its growth stage would equal a tier two beast leader, Su Yu was already a tier three dark iron warrior

and although he was not afraid of the Golden Goblin, suddenly seeing a Golden Goblin leading a large group of Lesser and Greater Goblins was an alarming scene.

As for Qin Jia Gui, Zhang Zhong Mou, Ma Zi Ye and the others, when they saw the Golden Goblin they were even more nervous and agitated than Su Yu.

They were nervous over the strange atmosphere and presence before them and the prowess of the Golden Goblin, they were agitated because whichever of them was able to kill the Golden Goblin, there was no question that they would be able to become a tier two dark iron warrior and attain a greater power.

The second group of monsters were about seven to eight large monsters and these monsters had the head of a cow and a dog's body, there were two human hands on their backs, these monsters were actually Savage Bull Demons.

The group had previously encountered a Savage Bull Demon before and Su Yu had relied on the magic within the Earth Spikes Ring to activate the Earth Spikes Assault, allowing him to kill the Savage Bull Demon. At this moment, there were actually seven to eight of them and this was a shocking number.

Although this group of Savage Bull Demons was the smallest in number, they were all tier two beast soldiers and their strength would likely be the most frightening amongst the three groups. At this moment, they were all located in a certain direction as their bull eyes widened and glared at the huge strange flower in the centre without moving, as though they were afraid of missing out

on something.

The final group of monsters was the greatest in number and consisted of Gnomes wearing leather armour and holding metal spades and wooden shields together with five to six Gnome Riders. Leading them was also a Gnome.

But this Gnome was completely different from those short Gnomes carrying metal spades and wooden shields, it was also totally different from the Gnome Riders.

Chapter 95: Golden Gnome King

Gnomes were monsters that were naturally born short and although the Gnome Riders were tall, this was due to the fact that they were mounted on wolves which made them become taller.

However this Gnome before them was definitely not a dwarf.

This Gnome's body was thick and strong, approximately 1.8 metres in height, its arms were in akimbo as it stood straight like a javelin as it coldly gazed at the monsters in the area. Its body also had palm-sized golden specks and on its back were four bony spikes that protruded out.

These four spikes were dirty yellow in colour and they protruded from its back, at an initial glance it seemed as though four bayonets were stabbed into its back, extremely weird.

Su Yu willed it as he silently raised his left arm, wanting to use the 'Eye of Perception' to gather the information on the strange Gnome.

The group of Gnomes was the closest to where they were hiding and barely within the range of the 'Eye of Perception', Su Yu's mind was immediately filled with all the information regarding this strange Gnome.

Name: Golden Gnome King

Information: When a Golden Gnome fuses with the power from the precious treasure of the Golden Race within its body, four dirty yellow bone spikes will emerge from its back, the Golden Gnome would then be promoted to the stronger Golden Gnome King. During its growth, the Golden Gnome King would be a tier three beast soldier, the four bone spikes on its back can transform into unique weapons which can be compared to the might of hidden precious weapons.

Su Yu let out a faint breath of cold, he clearly remembered that Jennifer had written about how York had killed a Golden Gnome and attained the precious treasure map. This sturdy Gnome before them was actually promoted from a Golden Gnome and became a Golden Gnome King, the bone spikes on its back were actually its unique weapons? What were hidden precious weapons? Were they items that could be acquired like his Earth Spikes Ring?

It was a pity that these queries would not be answered by the 'Eye of Perception', Su Yu wanted to gather the information on the strange flower in the centre but their distance was too far away and the 'Eye of Perception' could not capture the information.

A unique and strange flower surrounded by packs of monsters, this scene was simply too weird.

What is that strange flower? Why would so many packs of monsters appear with greed in their eyes as they stared at it? Yet they seem to be waiting for something?

Various strange thoughts flitted through Su Yu's mind, by his side, Ma Zi Ye, Qin Jia Gui and the others were filled with anxiety

as random thoughts filled their heads. Although the situation they were in was extremely dangerous, their curiosity was like a poison and they all hid within the wild grass, nobody wished to leave.

“This strange flower must have something exceptional about it causing all these monsters to covet it, it’s only..... We don’t know what effect the flower has.....” Qin Jia Gui muttered as his hands clenched, he found that his palms were already covered in sweat.

“Kaboom!”

Suddenly, the sound of muffled thunder could be heard from the strange flower in the centre giving Su Yu and the others a shock, thereafter, they saw the strange flower fiercely retract before expanding, a dense mist released from its top. Within the mist were similar smaller strange flowers that were floating, they seemed like little jellyfishes which were swimming in the water.

This scene was simply too strange and the monsters which were gathered in the surrounds suddenly pounced, thereafter, Su Yu and the others could smell a stench like that of rotting corpses.

Su Yu inhaled the fumes and immediately felt his mind go dizzy as he began to hallucinate.

“Don’t breathe it in!” Su Yu exclaimed as the strange energy within his body circulated upon noticing the danger and the hallucination swiftly disappeared. Su Yu then noticed that not far away, the small strange flowers which were floating in the mist were actually floating towards their group.

At this moment, Su Yu could not be bothered to continue hiding, he was able to instinctively feel the danger of those translucent small flowers which were like small jellyfishes and got the group to prone on the ground while he activated the 'Rending Storm'. Large amounts of steam seemed to shoot from within the black scales as he smashed the ground, causing a hurricane to rise, he wanted to make use of this hurricane to send the small flowers which were floating over away.

The scene at the open ground was already a complete mess, the Golden Goblin and Golden Gnome King were continually making hoarse growling noises as they attempted to restrain the monsters under them but several monsters still rushed forward to meet the floating strange flowers, their arms were spread as greed covered their expressions, as though they were looking at the most precious treasure in the world.

The small floating 'jellyfishes' landed on the bodies of these monsters and roots seemed to form as it burrow into the bodies of the monsters before slowly following the root into the body of the monster.

Seeing a small 'jellyfish' enter its body, elation was written on the faces of these monsters but their bodies swayed before suddenly falling to the ground as they lost their lives.

The monsters which had lesser small 'jellyfishes' land on them began to turn around and started running but the monsters slowly fell to the ground as they lost their lives, the amount of distance they could run was proportionate to the number of small

‘jellyfishes’ on their body.

The more ‘jellyfishes’ they had on their bodies, the faster they died. The monster’s which had lesser ‘jellyfishes’ on their bodies would be able to run for a longer distance before slowly dying.

All these dead monsters had a strange smile on their face, as though they were extremely satisfied without any regrets in their death.

The group saw this scene before them and finally understood why there were so many corpses with smiles in the surrounding area.

Zhang Zhong Mou who was prone in the wild grass was alarmed as he spoke in a low voice: “Damn, that’s too weird, these monsters..... have they gone mad?”

“No, these strange flowers in the form a jellyfishes may have an irresistible attraction to these monsters, just like a poison. Didn’t you notice that Golden Goblin, it’s been growling and seems to be trying to stop the other monsters from pouncing.....” Qin Jia Gui replied in a low voice as he looked at the small ‘jellyfishes’ which were floating above their heads, their hair stood on end for fear of coming into contact with these small ‘jellyfishes’.

In front of the patch of wild grass, the Golden Goblin, Golden Gnome King and Savage Bull Demons had a stronger willpower and growled as they dodged the small ‘jellyfishes’, not allowing them to land on their bodies. Even so, they still stared at the

strange flower in the centre that was filled with danger without any thought of fleeing.

Chapter 96: Golden Sap

The strange flower had just spat out a mist which contained the small floating ‘jellyfishes’ which were like seeds that floated into the surrounding area, the danger had passed and the area became deathly silent, only the strange flower continued to emit noises from its expanding and contracting.

Su Yu stopped the ‘Rending Storm’ as he returned to hiding within the wild grass, they had made a huge clamor and based on that, the Golden Goblin or Golden Gnome King should have already discovered them, however, no monster bothered with them as they all stared nervously at the strange flower in the centre.

Su Yu also looked over at the strange flower and noticed that the blazing fire within seemed to have become weaker, as though after spitting out the large amount of seeds, the fire was actually gradually becoming weaker and weaker to the extent that it would totally be extinguished.

“Roar!” Almost at the same instant, the Golden Goblin, Golden Gnome King, Savage Bull Demons and remaining monsters all acted as they rushed towards the strange flower in the centre.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!” Explosive sounds resounded as stolons sprang out of the ground and pounced towards the rushing group of monsters.

The Savage Bull Demons plucked their horns and tossed them as they activated their ability ‘Beheading Cyclone’.

The Golden Goblin held a golden sword within its hands as it swung, immediately chopping the stolons which actually leaked red fluid like that of human blood, the strange flower in the centre began to continually tremble as though the stolons being chopped actually caused it immense pain.

This strange flower was rooted in the centre and could not move, it could only rely on its stolons to act as whips as it sent them flying, this was clearly insufficient to block the attack of so many monsters and in no time most of the stolons were already chopped, blood coloured fluid stained the entire ground.

As though it could feel the impending threat of death, the strange flower suddenly emitted a loud bellowing noise, thereafter a raging sound could be heard as the fire which was almost extinguished within the lantern began to spit flames and burn brightly again. As for the golden sap within the centre of the blazing flame, it seemed to come alive as it moved around, extremely peculiar and exceptional.

Once the blazing fire was reignited, all the monsters seemed to have had a previous arrangement as they strangely backed off in unison and returned to their original positions, the greed on their faces shining as they stared at the strange flower.

Su Yu and the others who were watching from the wild grass were speechless, they were completely bewildered as Qin Jia Gui suddenly said in a low voice: “Look, the body of that monster seems to be becoming more translucent.”

He was more observant and immediately noticed that after the strange flower reignited the flames, its body was becoming more translucent and the stolons which had been chopped off were regrowing at a speed which the naked eye could see. Its body was becoming more and more translucent and seemed that it could disappear into thin air at any moment, leaving behind that blazing fire and the golden sap which was continually moving within.

“I understand.....” Ma Zi Ye suddenly said in a low voice: “Don’t you feel that those monsters are avoiding that strange flower on purpose? As though they need the strange flower to help them accomplish something? That is why they immediately pounced once the fire was about to be extinguished, forcing it to reignite it.....”

Ma Zi Ye’s analysis sounded strange at first when the group heard it, but soon they felt that it was actually quite reasonable. Su Yu’s gaze had already been fully captured by that golden sap within that blazing fire.

Su Yu could instinctively feel that the monsters who were lusting for this golden sap but for some reason they could not attain it yet, possibly it was not fully ripened. That was why these monsters were staring at it in the surroundings and the presence of this flower was clearly linked to that of the golden sap but Su Yu could not understand how at the moment.

A muffled sound of thunder once again roared as the strange flower seemed to explode from within as white mist and small ‘jellyfish’ seeds filled the sky, thereafter, the scene that had occurred previously re-enacted itself, once the fire within the

strange flower began to recede, the monsters pounced again as they struggled forward forcing the strange flower to reignite the flame again before they retreated.

This occurred for several times and the group could clearly see the strange flower becoming more and more translucent, they could faintly feel that this strange flower was miserably crying in pain.

What was this strange flower? What did these groups of monsters want from it?

All these thoughts swirled in the minds of Su Yu and the others and their burning curiosity prevented them from leaving, they each wanted to see the final outcome.

As the strange flower became more and more translucent, its body finally disappeared into thin air, leaving behind that blazing fire within contained the golden sap.

The sky was gradually becoming dark and an entire afternoon had passed without them noticing, the group could feel a hunger in their bellies but they ignored it like the monsters before them as they stared at the fire and that golden sap.

Finally, after a period of time had passed the golden sap under the continual burning of the flame began to boil.

It was boiling over as water snakes seemed to form on the golden

sap as it finally reached its boiling point.

Almost at the same time, the Golden Gnome King, Golden Goblin, Savage Bull Demons and all the other monsters roared as they rushed forward, this time they seemed to be putting their lives on the line, single-mindedly pouncing as they all stretched forth their limbs, seeming to want to gain the golden sap for themselves.

Su Yu also stood up as he dropped the bags of food he was carrying, his guess had been correct, these monsters wanted that golden sap and it needed to be flaring up before obtaining it.

Although Su Yu did not know the use of the golden sap, seeing the crazed behaviour of the monsters with the three strong tier three beast soldiers included, there was only one possibility, the golden sap was a priceless treasure.

Having thought of this, Qin Jia Gui and the others were naturally also able to make this deduction but their strengths were too weak and looking at the Golden Goblin as well as the group of Savage Bull Demons, although they wanted to snatch it they did not dare to move recklessly.

Su Yu's mind was conflicted as his hands clenched, should he go forward to snatch it?

This thought had barely entered his mind before his body instinctively rushed forward.

Chapter 97: Golden Mother Earth

Qin Jia Gui, Ma Zi Ye and the others did not dare to rush forward like Su Yu but they placed the bags of food they were carrying on the ground before climbing up as they looked at the frantic scene before them, they were filled with nervousness and excitement but the group remained very cautious and did not dare to go too close.

A thought filled the minds of Qin Jia Gui, Ma Zi Ye and the others, to take advantage of the situation for personal gain.

All the monsters seemed to have become crazed as they rushed towards the strange flower, all the monsters ignored them and this presented a huge opportunity for them.

At this moment, the strange flower within the centre could feel the threat of death and its reaction was very violent as each stolon in the ground stabbed out of the ground as they wildly attacked the surrounding monsters.

“Bang! Bang!”

Explosive sounds rang out as a Savage Bull Demon which was too hasty was suddenly pierced by the stolons, the originally greedy expression on the face of the Savage Bull Demon immediately became that of happiness and laughter, giving up on the strange flower as it swayed while walking away from it, looking at its poise it seemed that it would fall down at any moment.

The Savage Bull Demon was a tier two beast soldier, killing one

would definitely allow one to promote from a tier one to a tier two dark iron warrior. This thought immediately flashed through the heads of all the people who were currently at the tier one stage within the group.

As the saying goes, wealth and honour come with risk and this world was also similar, just that one did not get wealth and honour but rather strength.

Almost at the same time, Ma Zi Ye and the three others who were at the tier one stage rushed towards this Savage Bull Demon which had left the pack of monsters, swaying as it clutched its chest.

Zhou Bi Rong was even faster than them as she took out her pistol and aimed at the Savage Bull Demon from a distance, wanting to immediately kill it with a shot to the head. However, the body of this Savage Bull Demon was constantly swaying and Zhou Bi Rong felt that it would be difficult to get a good shot, Zhou Bi Rong felt anxious but she had no choice but to keep her pistol as her right arm transformed into a black claw as she also pounced, at this point she was slower than Ma Zi Ye and the three others.

The chest of this Savage Bull Demon was pierced by the strange flower and from its wound were boils, coming out from these boils were small white translucent 'jellyfishes'. The Savage Bull Demon's satisfied and happy expression as it touched the 'jellyfishes' was like a pregnant woman caressing her pregnant belly, filled with contentment.

Ma Zi Ye and the others had just reached and each of them used their strongest abilities, wanting to kill the Savage Bull in a single

blow to advance to the next tier. Suddenly, the Savage Bull Demon actually smiled as it took a single step towards them before falling to the ground, from its wound appeared many boils which had large amounts of 'jellyfishes' that immediately rushed surged towards the group.

“Quick, run!” Qin Jia Gui explosively yelled, the few there were staring at the 'jellyfishes' in fright, afraid of being infected. They immediately began to retreat at a speed even greater than when they rushed forward, their hearts beating wildly within their chest.

Ma Zi Ye who had charged forward the fastest, actually end up with a single jellyfish on her trouser, on her left leg

“Aaahhhh!” Ma Zi Ye screamed as she reacted swiftly, using strength as she forcefully tore, ‘Chi!’ tearing off a portion of her trousers as she quickly ran away.

When the torn off piece of clothing landed on the ground, it had already been pierced by the thin thorns which the little jellyfish transformed into.

Dangerous, it was way too dangerous, if one wanted to live, they needed to become stronger but the way to become stronger was simply too dangerous, life and death hung in the balance.

Ma Zi Ye ran far away and felt her entire body become weak as she almost fell to the ground, the moment earlier had been too dangerous and her face was currently pale white like a piece of

paper.

The others were all silent and speechless, Qin Jia Gui and the few who had run like her felt their hearts palpitating.

Su Yu swiftly moved forward as black scales covered his left arm and chest, immediately entering into his transformed state.

“Kaboom!”

A loud sound rang out as a thick stolon viciously smashed downwards, Su Yu kicked with his two legs as he leapt and landed beside a Savage Bull Demon. The ‘Rending Storm’ activated as the sound of a steam whistle rang out, his left arm pierced into the body of the Savage Bull Demon and moved, this Savage Bull Demon was instantly separated in half at the waist.

After killing the Savage Bull Demon, Su Yu noticed that killed a tier two beast soldier no longer had that much of an effect in raising the amount of his strange energy.

Killing a Savage Bull Demon in the time to flip a hand, Su Yu then rushed into the big group of Gnomes. This group of Gnomes was constantly howling as stolons continually pierced into their bodies as seeds were planted within. The monsters which had these seeds planted in them had smiles on their faces as they swayed and walked away from the strange flower, the strange flower depended on this method to spread its seeds, causing them to be spread throughout all areas of the forest.

The 'Eye of Perception' within Su Yu's left arm activated as he rushed before the strange flower, he wanted to snatch the golden sap which all the monsters were scrambling to get but he wanted to find out more about the strange flower and what exactly was the golden sap. How could it be used?

Their distance was much closer and the 'Eye of Perception' was able to capture the information regarding the strange flower.

Name: Golden Mother Earth

Information: A third type of being between that of a plant and an animal, its numbers are extremely scarce and only after maturing for a thousand years under the soil will a Golden Mother Earth mature. The mature Golden Mother Earth will emerge from the soil and propagate seeds, the mature Golden Mother Earth will also produce Golden Blood, ordinary beast races which acquire this Golden Blood will be able to gain the blood heritage of the Golden Race, beasts which already have the blood heritage of the Golden Race will increase the amount of blood heritage within their bodies, possibly becoming completely of the Golden Race. An extremely valuable treasure within this world.

Su Yu's heart was wildly beating, that drop of golden sap was actually Golden Blood? Ordinary monsters that acquired it would become Golden monsters? If an ordinary goblin or gnome acquired it, they would actually be able to become a Golden Goblin or a Golden Gnome, the Golden Goblin and Golden Gnome King before him that were still in maturing would possibly be able to completely become a Golden beast upon acquiring it, in that case, what about himself?

Su Yu did not know what would possibly happen after a human took the Golden Blood but he instinctively rushed forward.

The strange energy within his body surged violently as though there were an ancient primordial beast within him, at this moment the ancient primordial beast which had always been sleeping seemed to have noticed the smell of the Golden Blood as it woke up, roaring within Su Yu's body causing him to be filled with an impossible to resist attraction. At this moment, he understood why the strange flower could cause the group of monsters to become so crazed.

Golden Blood, was it the blood of the Golden Race?

Su Yu roared as he rushed forward.

Chapter 98: Chaotic Battle, Struggle For The Golden Blood

Amongst all the monsters, the Golden Gnome King was the strongest and it had already reached the third tier beast soldier stage, following it was the Golden Goblin and these two monsters that had a sliver of Golden Blood within them were the fastest.

Two blades protruded from the arms of the Golden Goblin as it pounced, the stolons that came near it were all sliced apart, failing to hinder it even in the slightest.

The Golden Gnome King was even stronger than the Golden Goblin, using its two hands it could tear apart all the stolons which were rushing towards it, it was even faster than the Golden Goblin as its claw slashed onto the skin of the lantern that was located on the outside of the Golden Mother Earth.

‘Chi!’ The skin was sliced apart as its claw continued towards the drop of effervescent Golden Blood.

The Golden Goblin was only slightly slower than the Golden Gnome King, seeing that it was about to acquire it, a pair of steel blades appeared from within the arm of the Golden Goblin as they were sent flying.

“Huok Huok”

Two crisp sounds rang out as the steel blades pierced into the

outstretched arm of the Golden Gnome King.

There was a miserable cry as the arm of the Golden Gnome King which was harder than metal was actually pierced by the frightening steel blades. The Golden Gnome King had actually reacted swiftly as it hurriedly retracted its arm, otherwise, its entire arm would have been chopped into three portions by the steel blades.

The Golden Gnome King had retracted its hand and failed to acquire the Golden Blood, at the same time, the Golden Mother Earth which had been seriously injured exploded forth with a frightening clamor like that of a tsunami, its entire body lifted from the ground as it suddenly rushed into the air.

This impetus was extremely frightening, the Golden Gnome King, Golden Goblin as well as two Savage Bull Demons which had just reached the strange flower were all sent flying away by the strong force.

At the back, Su Yu howled and arrived like a demonic god, the scales on his body raised as steam shot out from under them, using the force generated from this, Su Yu was like an artillery shell as he flew towards the Golden Mother Earth which was rising into the air.

The 'Rending Storm' activated as churning sounds of meat being ground could be heard, large amounts of steam shot out and formed a hurricane causing the large body of the Golden Mother Earth to tremble, it had barely lifted off the ground before heavily falling to the ground, Su Yu stretched his right hand forward and

grabbed the Golden Blood which was still boiling within.

“Roar!” Suddenly, a shrill sound pierced the air as the Golden Gnome King turned and plucked the four golden bone spikes protruding from its back, these four golden bone spikes were entwined together and went through a strange transformation, instantly becoming a bone spike wheel.

Roaring, the bone spikes which had formed into the wheel was sent flying, hissing in the air as it sliced towards the right arm of Su Yu which had just stretched out.

Even before the wheel reached, Su Yu’s right hand could feel a piercing pain, if he did not retract his hand, this wheel would definitely slice through his hand and the wound would certainly not be light, even possibly slicing into his body.

Su Yu could not help but give up on the Golden Blood that was before him as he turned, falling to the ground from the body of this Golden Mother Earth, the wheel missed as it flew back from where it came from.

The Golden Gnome King was already like a golden artillery shell as it rushed forward, its right hand grabbing the wheel as it carried it and pounced towards the Golden Mother Earth

The Golden Goblin on the other side was still silent, its blades lifted as it rushed towards the Golden Gnome King from the back, the four remaining Savage Bull Demons were also utilising the Beheading Cyclone.

The surviving Gnome Rider was also attacking the Savage Bull Demons from the back.

The scene was an absolute mess, Ma Zi Ye and the others who wanted to make use of the chaos to kill some monsters to advance, they realised that this was a golden opportunity but they did not dare to move recklessly, even a single Gnome Rider was already a tier two beast soldier, much stronger than them and if they were careless, they would simply die a pitiful death.

Night had already come, within this empty area most of the big trees had already withered and fallen, borrowing the moonlight, one could faintly see the drop of Golden Blood within the Golden Mother Earth, it was still boiling as it flashed with a golden light, causing everyone's eyes to go wide, anyone could see that this Golden Blood was definitely a priceless treasure.

The area was filled with frightening monsters surround the Golden Mother Earth and Golden Blood, killing wantonly, nobody dared to move recklessly for fear of being sent to their deaths.

The Golden Gnome King once again pounced at the Golden Mother Earth but immediately suffered from the frightening attack of the Golden Goblin, Su Yu utilised the Fang Bullet Burst, 'Pu! Pu! Pu!', striking the Golden Gnome King but failing to deliver any fatal blows, merely causing its body to become slightly more rigid and decreasing its speed.

With the Golden Gnome King delayed, the Golden Goblin and Su

Yu both pounced from the left and right.

The Beheading Cyclone which the Savage Bull Demons sent flying were in the air and Su Yu smashed backwards with his left arm.

“Bang!”

A piercing sound rang out as the Beheading Cyclone was actually blocked by the black scales covering Su Yu’s left arm, failing to injure it and was even sent flying away, creating a dilemma for the Savage Bull Demon, unsure if it should run to pick up the horn or continue rushing towards the Golden Mother Earth and Golden Blood.

The Golden Goblin had also suffered from the attack of the Beheading Cyclone, it could not handle this attack as easily as Su Yu and had to stop, using the blades on its two arms to block the Beheading Cyclone.

The Savage Bull Demon which shot the Beheading Cyclone reached its hand out to grab the returning horn while its other hand took its other horn and violently smashed it towards the Golden Gnome King which was blocking it.

Su Yu sent the Beheading Cyclone which was slicing towards him flying away before continuing towards the Golden Mother Earth, reaching at almost the same time as the Golden Gnome King.

The Golden Gnome King let out a frightening roar from its mouth as its right hand lifted the wheel-like weapon as it began to attack Su Yu. Its other hand stretched out as it attempted to grab the Golden Blood from the already scattered and smashed lantern.

Who knew that a Savage Bull Demon would rush at it with its horn at this point, the Golden Gnome King did not wish to give up on this perfect chance and used the wheel in its right hand to forcefully block the rushing Savage Bull Demon while it continued to grab towards the Golden Blood with its left hand.

Su Yu had already rushed forward from the other side, looking at the left hand of the Golden Gnome King which was about to grab the Golden Blood, all the strange energy within his body suddenly began to violently surge, the ten odd unique holes within his body began to wildly gather all the energy within the heavens and earth, converting it into strange energy.

Chapter 99: Sent Violently Away

“Chi!”

A frightening whistling sound could be heard as Su Yu suddenly felt his left arm uncontrollably flying forward, dragging his body together with it.

“Kaboom!”

An explosive sound rang out as the Golden Gnome King let out a miserable shrill cry, with the might of the ‘Rending Storm’ after absorbing all the energy within heaven and earth, its arm which was squarely hit was immediately minced up.

This blow from Su Yu had previously blown up a large pile of boulders, although the Golden Gnome King’s body was very tough, it was not tougher than stone and this outstretched left arm was immediately shredded, its body was sent flying away as it smashed into the Savage Bull Demon that was rushing forward, sending the two huge bodies tumbling away.

A single blow had shredded the left arm of the Golden Gnome King and sent it flying away together with the Savage Bull Demon, Su Yu continued forward and suddenly found himself alone by the side of the Golden Mother Earth.

The Golden Mother Earth was currently in a very bad state, its body had mostly been destroyed and the blazing red flame within it was continually becoming dimmer, it was clearly not far away

from death.

Further away, various monsters were still rushing forward, Qin Jia Gui, Ma Zi Ye and the others could only stare at this scene from a distance, although the area filled with monsters was a great chance for them to promote, it was clearly not the best option to rush in now.

With their current strength, if they were drawn into the mess, they would all die miserably on the spot.

After knocking aside the Golden Gnome King, Su Yu stood dazed for a moment before coming to his senses, he realised that even the Golden Goblin which was the closest was over three metres away, he stretched his right hand and easily grabbed hold of the bubbling Golden Blood.

“Roar!” The Golden Goblin’s face contorted, its heart was clearly filled with anxiousness and anger as it frantically rushed forward, however, it was still too late. It could only stare as Su Yu grabbed the Golden Blood, as for the Golden Gnome King, it was currently shaking its head as it roared and struggled to its feet.

All the monsters were too late and could only stare at Su Yu as he stretched his right hand and grabbed the Golden Blood.

The Golden Blood which seemed like a small golden dragon as it boiled, upon contact with Su Yu’s palm it instantly became thin golden streaks which twined around the fingers of his hand, seeming like agile little snakes.

Su Yu stared at his right hand in shock as he saw the Golden Blood enter through the skin of his right hand, swiftly disappearing. Thereafter, his right hand began to contort and swell.

“Aaahhh!” Su Yu let out a miserable cry, in an instant, his right hand seemed to have been put into a blazing fire as every inch of skin and flesh on his arm began to twist and contort, the amount of pain he suffered was immense.

The Golden Mother Earth which was already on its last breath suddenly sent out a large amount of white mist after the Golden Blood was taken away, within the white mist, tens of thousands of little ‘jellyfishes’ wildly shot forth in all directions.

“Roar!” The surrounding monsters that had all been dazed suddenly came awake as they saw the sky filled with the ‘jellyfish’ seeds, in the blink of an eye it had all of them surrounded.

Qin Jia Gui and the others were slightly further away but at this point they all panicked as they swiftly fled.

The seeds of the Golden Mother Earth contained a weird energy that could instantly kill anyone it landed on.

“Su Yu!” Jade shouted shrilly as she suddenly rushed forward.

“Shit!” Zhang Zhong Mou shouted as he attempted to pull Jade

back, he was too slow and could only watch as the small ‘jellyfishes’ landed on Jade’s body.

Within the white mist, the roars of the Golden Gnome King could be heard but the most frightening sound within the mist were Su Yu’s miserable cries, thereafter a loud “Kaboom!” “Kaboom!” could be heard as a Savage Bull Demon cried out.

The others like Qin Jia Gui, Ma Zi Ye, Zhao Shi Chang and the remainder felt their hair stand on end, their expressions were ugly as they saw Jade’s body covered in little ‘jellyfishes’, she did not immediately fall but rather continued to shrilly cry out Su Yu’s name.

Based on the strength of the little ‘jellyfishes’, the amount on Jade’s body should have been sufficient to immediately kill her, Qin Jia Gui’s mind was churning swiftly and he noticed that after the little ‘jellyfishes’ landed, they actually immediately withered. He suddenly had an understanding that these little ‘jellyfishes’ had lost their previous frightening ability.

At this moment, Zhang Zhong Mou had already rushed forward and pulled Jade as he shouted fiercely: “What are you doing?! Su Yu will be fine!” As he struggled to pull Jade back.

The group looked at Jade as the little ‘jellyfishes’ on her body slowly withered and fell off, they did not have the power to pierce through her clothing and enter her body.

The white mist that filled the sky swiftly dissipated but the scene

was still a mess, the floor was littered with corpses as though a large tank had been through the area.

The floor was covered in corpses and only Su Yu remained in the centre of them as he continued to howl madly.

“Su Yu.....” In the distance, Jade, Ma Zi Ye and the others finally saw Su Yu and they were all speechless with shock written on their faces.

Su Yu’s entire body was covered in fresh blood, it was impossible to tell if the blood was his own or that of monsters, he was bent and kneeling on the ground, his right arm had become extremely big as it smashed on the ground while his left arm was like a melted pile of meat, the flesh on it continued to wriggle and the scene was stunning.

“Roar!” Suddenly, within the floor littered with corpses a Savage Bull Demon climbed up, its two hands grabbed its horns as it shot out the Beheading Cyclone.

“Huok, Huok” sounds rang out as the two horns were like two streaks of black light that instantly chopped towards Su Yu who was still knelt on the ground, howling.

“Pa! Pa!”

Suddenly, before the Beheading Cyclone even got near to Su Yu, his right arm that was currently like a lump of contorted flesh shot out something that seemed like a tentacle, causing explosive sounds that immediately sent the Beheading Cyclone away, Su Yu

continued to yell as his body bent over.

Tentacles exploded from his right arm which instantly wrapped around the Savage Bull Demon, crushing and mincing it, by the time Su Yu had gone past it, the powerful Savage Bull Demon no longer had a single intact piece of its body.

Su Yu seemed crazed as his left arm continually pressed on his right arm as though he wanted to control this right arm that had gone out of control. However, his right arm continued to uncontrollably flail about, the tentacles continued to destroy as flesh and blood splattered, the entire scene was extremely gory and frightening.

“Retreat, let’s back away first.....” Qin Jia Gui saw this from a distance and his facial expression had changed, the others could see that Su Yu had obtained a certain frightening ability but seemed unable to control it, thus entering into this berserk state. Under these circumstances, the group chose to retreat far away to avoid being caught in the mess.

Chapter 100: Deep Sleep

Jade, Ma Zi Ye and the others were extremely anxious but they could only look from a distance at the crazed Su Yu, the Golden Goblin was being crushed by him, flesh and blood splattered everywhere as the corpse was rent in two, the Golden Gnome King attempted to attack Su Yu with its solitary arm while wielding the wheel but Su Yu's left arm swept forward to block while his right arm went forward.

“Pa!”

Innumerable amounts of tentacles exploded out as they wrapped the Golden Gnome King within forming a flesh cocoon as they slowly squeezed, finally, large amount of blood and meat pulp squirted out from the gaps of the meat cocoon and when they tentacles finally released, the originally stout form of the Golden Gnome King was already reduced into a bloody meatball, without any way to differentiate between its head, hands and feet.

Such a gruesome killing method was simply inconceivable and the strength within this right arm was unbelievable.

Su Yu's madness continued for a full hour and all the corpses on the ground had been desecrated by him, finally, he managed to lift his right arm as he continued to smash the ground.

One punch after another and this continued for a longer period of time, a large hole was already visible on the ground and Su Yu lay within the hole as he continued to howl, his howling was gradually

becoming softer until finally there were no more sounds.

Qin Jia Gui and the others who were hiding far away felt their entire bodies covered in cold sweat, each person could feel that their mouths were dry and looking at Su Yu as he lay there in the hole without any sound or movement, Ma Zi Ye, Jade and Zhang Zhong Mou finally gathered the courage to rush over.

Qin Jia Gui and the others hesitated for a moment before following slowly behind.

“Su Yu, Su Yu, how are you?” Jade ran to the side of the hole as she hurriedly supported Su Yu, his entire body was covered in blood as though she had just pulled him out from a bloody sea and he was currently dripping wet.

Ma Zi Ye hurriedly assisted to turn over Su Yu who was lying flat within the hole, the sleeves on his right arm were torn but it had already returned to normal, no longer in the frightening state earlier. His breathing was regular as though he were merely asleep from being too fatigued.

“Hey, Su Yu, wake up.” Jade saw that Su Yu was alright, there were no wounds on his body and although she shook him violently, Su Yu continued to be in a deep sleep without any signs of waking.

“What should we do?” Jade was feeling anxious and Ma Zi Ye muttered: “Don’t be anxious, he may have used up too much strength earlier and thus fell into a deep sleep. It’s fine as long as

he's alright." Stretching her hand to touch Su Yu's forehead, his temperature was normal and really seemed to be only in a deep sleep.

At this moment, Qin Jia Gui and the others had reached, looking at Su Yu who was in a deep sleep and the mess around him, the group exchanged glances.

A Golden Gnome King, Golden Goblin, four to five Savage Bull Demons and large amounts of other monsters had all been killed in a single breath by Su Yu. As for the Golden Mother Earth, the Golden Blood within its body had been taken away and after its final release it had thoroughly withered and become an ashen white thing that lay limply on the ground, without any signs of life.

"This fellow....." A moment later Qin Jia Gui shook his head as he sighed, this area that was littered with the corpses of monsters, if they were able to kill a few, they would each have a chance to obtain the crystal energy within the monsters and become stronger, possibly even becoming a tier two dark iron warrior, it was really such a pity.....

The blame was certainly not on Su Yu.

Although Su Yu could not be woken up, it was fortunate that he was alright and the group finally relaxed as they slowly inspected the floor that was covered in corpses. They also remembered that the golden monsters had precious treasures within their bodies.

After faintly discerning the body of a Golden Goblin that was currently mashed up with other corpses, Zhang Zhong Mou and Qin Jia Gui searched through the pile of meat and finally found a flashing golden ball of light.

This was the precious treasure hidden within the Golden Goblin's body.

Zhang Zhong Mou attempted to emulate Su Yu's actions back then as he attempted to crush the ball of light but could not crush it no matter how he tried, after a short while some information flashed through his mind.

“Damn, only the person who killed the Golden Goblin will be able to open the precious treasure?”

Zhang Zhong Mou seemed depressed as he looked at Su Yu who was snoring.

As for the Golden Gnome King, although it had the blood of the golden race, the precious treasure within it had already melded with the four bone spikes, Zhao Shi Chang lifted the four bone spikes and found them to be very heavy, they certainly were not ordinary objects.

Qin Jia Gui said in a heavy voice: “Everyone, let's hurry and leave this place. This area is filled with corpses and it will easily lure trouble over.”

Zhang Zhong Mou kept the precious treasure ball of light that he was unable to open as he carried Su Yu who was currently still in a deep sleep: “Qin Jia Gui is right, let’s hurry and leave this place. Damn, now that Su Yu is sleeping like a pig and can’t be woken up, if we meet with any monsters that would be troublesome.”

Hearing this, the group felt their hearts shiver as they swiftly moved. Zhang Zhong Mou carried the sleeping Su Yu while the others helped to carry the large bags of food including Zhang Zhong Mou and Su Yu’s portion. Thereafter, they hurriedly retreated back in the direction they came from, the forest was already pitch black but Qin Jia Gui held a torchlight and the group was able to rush out of this wretched place.

Rushing in the night together with Su Yu who was unconscious, the group’s hearts were in a flurry and each of them felt cold sweat cover their backs.

Everyone walked briskly and Zhang Zhong Mou who was carrying Su Yu muttered: “Damn, normally when Su Yu is around I don’t feel it, but when he’s down..... this terrifying feeling is really awful, hey, young master Yu, when are you going to sleep till?”

Su Yu who was on his back continued to stay silent without any reaction.

The night in the forest was exceptionally frightening, it was pitch black all around and frightening roars could be heard in the distance.

“Chi!”

The group which were rushing nervously hear a strange sound from a large tree to their right and a red figure could be seen rustling branches as it seemed to fly through the sky, its two claws flashing forward as it struck towards Qin Jia Gui who was holding the torchlight.

The torchlight in Qin Jia Gui’s hands seemed to have gained the attention of this monster and its sudden attack was like lightning, in an instant the claw seemed to be clawing into the back of Qin Jia Gui’s head.

Its entire body was blood red, an ape-like body with a dog or wolf head, this was clearly the Bloody Ape Dog.

The Bloody Ape Dog was a solitary beast, it liked to travel alone and its numbers were extremely small. Its speed was very fast and it liked to hide before mounting sneak attacks on humans and others of the beast race, its favourite parts were the heart and brain.

Back in the day the group had once met a Bloody Ape Dog, that single Bloody Ape Dog had caused the entire group to be in a state of panic and treated every bush and tree as an enemy.

That was the past, currently the strength of the group was much higher and although its attack was sudden, Qin Jia Gui was still able to react as he howled, his body pounced forward as he dodged,

Zhao Shi Chang who was by his side said nothing as his right hand swung, an inch long bone knife that was on his arm swept forward.